

This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

**Usage guidelines**

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

**About Google Book Search**

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

UC-NRLF
B 3 785 576

Digitized by Google

2704

No. 2704

LIBRARY OF

PILGRIM SUNDAY SCHOOL,

First Unitarian Church,

SAN FRANCISCO.

1. None but scholars whose names have been registered; who are regular attendants, and members of the School, and have been present at least the two preceeding Sundays, shall be entitled to a book.
2. The books must be kept with neatness, and returned at the end of *one* week, and not to be *Loaned* by any scholar. If desired they can be renewed for another week by application to the Librarian.
3. No scholar shall be entitled to a book until the one previously taken has been returned. The Teachers will be held responsible for the books charged to their classes
4. Scholars misusing their books and not conforming to the above rules will be refused the use of the Library.

WM. J. YOUNGER,
*Librarian.*

THE LIBRARY OF THE

UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA

DAVIS

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

A

# LADY'S SECOND JOURNEY

ROUND

# THE WORLD:

FROM LONDON TO THE CAPE OF GOOD HOPE, BORNEO, JAVA, SUMATRA, CELEBES, CERAM, THE MOLUCCAS, ETC., CALIFORNIA, PANAMA, PERU, ECUADOR, AND THE UNITED STATES.

BY IDA PFEIFFER,

AUTHORESS OF "THE LADY'S JOURNEY ROUND THE WORLD," ETC.

NEW YORK:

HARPER & BROTHERS, PUBLISHERS,

PEARL STREET, FRANKLIN SQUARE.

1856.

LIBRARY
UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA
DAVIS

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Dedicated,

WITH THE MOST PROFOUND ACKNOWLEDGMENTS,

TO

THE DUTCH AND THE DUTCH GOVERNMENTAL AUTHORITIES OF INDIA,

BY

THE AUTHORESS.

92123

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

# PREFACE.

I KNOW it is the common fate of dedications and prefaces not to be read; but I can not possibly make public this journal of my wanderings without addressing a few words to those through whose help it has been called into existence, namely, the Dutch residents, and especially the governmental authorities of Dutch India.

When I first left my native country nothing was farther from my thoughts than making a Second Journey round the World. The sum that my small property enabled me to devote to traveling expenses was very small, and, even when increased by a grant of £150 from the Austrian government, was still inadequate to such an extensive journey.

I went to London with the intention of embarking for Australia; but I was obliged to renounce this intention, for just before my journey to England the discovery of the great gold-fields of that country had occurred, emigrants were rushing thither from every part of the world, and the cost of living there rising to a height beyond all calculation.

I scarcely knew then which way to direct my steps; but, fortunately for myself, I decided for Dutch India, where I was so kindly received and so effectually supported by the officers of government, from the highest to the lowest,

Digitized by Google

that I was enabled to carry my plans into execution better than in any other country in the world; and I must regard them as virtually the authors of my Second Journey.

But my obligations are not merely to the official persons; many private individuals also, and, among others, my German countrymen, contributed valuable assistance, in presenting me with a ticket for the voyage by steamer from Batavia to Sumatra and back; and the directors of the two steamboat companies, Messrs. Frees and Van der Vrese, subsequently offered me free passages by any of their boats. I have no other way of expressing my gratitude to these gentlemen than begging them to accept the dedication of this work, and the assurance that I am, and shall ever be, profoundly sensible of their kindness.

To the Americans, also, I am deeply indebted for many kind attentions, and for free passages in their ships and magnificent steamers. In no country, Dutch India alone excepted, did I receive from the inhabitants more marks of distinction than from the citizens of the United States; and from the bottom of my heart I thank them.

THE AUTHORESS.

Digitized by Google

# CONTENTS.


CHAPTER I.

Arrival in London.—What is Comfort?—Sabbath Observance.—Peculiarities in English Life.—Going to Church.—Sights of London.—The Environs.—The great Exhibition of 1851 ..... Page 13

CHAPTER II.

Cape Town.—Dangerous Meeting with two Negresses.—Malay.—Singapore.—Sarawak.—Rajah Brooke.—Malay and Chinese Dwellings.—Excursion to the Dyaks and the Antimony Mines ..... 31

CHAPTER III.

Departure from Sarawak.—Compelled Return.—Journey to Scaran.—The Independent Dyaks.—Human Heads.—Journey along the Luppa.—Night of Horror.—Encounter with a Tribe at War.—Crossing the Schämel Mountain.—Ceremonious Reception by the Sultan of Sintang ..... 56

CHAPTER IV.

Pontianah.—Excursion to Landah.—A Chinese Kapthay.—Another Pedestrian Journey.—A Mud Bath in the Morass.—Bamboo Bridges.—The Language of Signs.—Supper with the Panam-bakan.—The Diamond Mines.—Return to Pontianah ..... 88

CHAPTER V.

Pontianah.—Mortgages.—Opium Farming.—Opium Smokers.—Amok.—Journey to Sambas.—The Pangero-rato.—Courtesy of the Dutch Officers.—Return to Pontianah.—The Boa.—Some Remarks on the Races of Borneo ..... 97


Digitized by Google

## CHAPTER VI.

Batavia.—Things remarkable.—Chinese Play.—Buitenzorg.—Performance at the Governor General's.—Typanas.—Ascent of the Pangerang.—Pandong.—The Tea Plantations.—Coffee-mills.—Sulphur.—Return to Batavia.—Excursion to Tangerang.—Popular Recreations..... Page 111

## CHAPTER VII.

Sumatra.—Arrival in Padang.—Journey into the Interior.—Fort Koch.—Kotto-Godong.—Strange Laws.—Muara Sipongie.—Dissuasion from the Journey.—The Battakers.—Their Customs and Laws.—Farewell to the last Europeans..... 134

## CHAPTER VIII.

Continuation of the Travels in Sumatra.—Journey on Foot.—Night Bivouac in the primeval Forest.—First Meeting with the Cannibals.—Holy-Bonar.—Sacrifice of a Buffalo Calf.—The Valley of Silindong.—Hostile Reception.—Forced Return.—Repeated Wild Scenes.—Return to the Dutch Territory.—Paya Kombo.—Ascent of the Merapi.—Return to Padang..... 158

## CHAPTER IX.

Java.—Samarang.—The Mud Springs of Grobogan.—Visit to the free Principalities of Djogokarta and Surakarta.—The Temple of Boro-Budoo.—The sacred Turtles.—An Audience of the Sultan of Solo.—Princely Funeral.—An Audience of the Susuhunan.—Return to Samarang.—Journey to Surabaya..... 191

## CHAPTER X.

Macassar.—Banda.—Earthquake.—Nutmeg Plantations.—Amboyna.—Excursion to the Negeri-Emma.—Saparua.—Ceram.—Traveling on foot through the Interior of Ceram.—Arrival at Wahai.—The Alfores.—Return to Amboyna.—Ternate.—Visit to the Sultan..... 211

## CHAPTER XI.

Celebes.—Manado.—Journey to the Highlands.—The Dutch Missionaries.—Macassar.—Journey into the Interior of Celebes.—Maros.—The Choice of a Regent.—Tanette Barru.—Festival of Teeth Filing.—Paré-Paré.—The learned Malay King..... 239

Digitized by Google

## CHAPTER XII.

Sidenring.—The Lakes of Tempe and Lagusi.—A Royal Banquet.—Return to Sidenring.—The Deer Hunt.—Visit to the Sultan of Goa.—Departure from Celebes.—Surabaya.—A Malay Wedding.—A Ghost Story.—Return to Batavia..... Page 265

## CHAPTER XIII.

Voyage from Batavia to California.—The City of Wonders.—High Prices.—Gambling-houses.—American Judicial Proceedings.—American Traveling Companions.—The Plaza Sacramento.—Visit to General Sutter.—Marysville.—Brown's Valley.—The Gold Washings of the Yuba River.—The Indians..... 287

## CHAPTER XIV.

Crescent City.—Excursion to the Rogue River.—Indians.—A Night Bivouac in the Wigwam.—Dangerous Situation of my Traveling Companion.—Revengeful Disposition of the Indians.—San José.—Acapulco.——Panama..... 310

## CHAPTER XV.

Journey to Lima.—The English Steamer.—Guayaquil.—Callao.—German Emigrants.—Lima.—Churches and Public Buildings.—Peruvian Ladies.—Earthquake.—Insecurity.—The Watering-place.—Chorillos.—The Ruin of the Temple of the Sun.—Pochacamac.—The Hacienda of St. Pedro..... 335

## CHAPTER XVI.

Ecuador.—Journey to Quito.—Trip on the Guaya.—Savanetta.—The Tambos.—The Camino Real.—Guaranda.—Passage of the Chimborazo.—The elevated Plains of Ambato and Latacunga.—Eruption of the Cotopaxi.—The Haciendas and their Owners..... 357

## CHAPTER XVII.

Quito.—Residences of the People.—Things to be Seen.—Church Festivals.—The Clergy and the Government.—The Indians.—The Theatre.—Return to Guayaquil.—The Chimborazo.—A Bull-fight.—Deadly Peril.—Panama.—Journey across the Isthmus.—Aspinwall..... 379

Digitized by Google

## CHAPTER XVIII.

New Orleans.—Public Buildings.—Hotels.—The French Market-place.—Public Slave Auction.—Slave-dealers.—Visit to a Plantation.—Slavery.—Instances of cruel Treatment of Slaves.—Free Negroes and colored People.—Indulgence toward white Criminals..... Page 398

## CHAPTER XIX.

Departure from New Orleans.—Napoleon.—Voyage on the Arkansas.—Little Rock.—Company in the Steamer.—American ill Manners.—Emancipated Children.—Fort Smith.—The Cherokee Indians.—St. Louis.—The Highlands.—The Farmers.—Lakes Pepin and St. Croix..... 414

## CHAPTER XX.

St. Paul.—St. Anthony's Falls.—The Fur Hunters.—A Drive in a Stage-coach.—Stillwater.—St. Croix.—Return to Galena.—American Patience.—Chicago.—Lake Michigan.—Milwaukee.—The Subterranean Railway.—The Mormons.—Lake Superior.—The Indians.—Lakes Huron and Erie.—Cleveland.—The Falls of Niagara.—The Village..... 434

## CHAPTER XXI.

The Falls of Niagara.—Lake Ontario.—The Thousand Islands.—Montreal.—Quebec.—The American Railroads.—New York.—Things Noticeable.—The Hotels.—Black Minstrels.—Emancipation.—Proceedings in Courts of Justice ..... 452

## CHAPTER XXII.

The Environs of New York.—Public Institutions.—Blackwell's and Randall's Islands.—The Five Points.—Journey to Boston.—The Letter of Introduction.—Public Dinner at Massachusetts.—Society of Mechanicians.—Orphan House.—Prisons, etc.—Cambridge.—Lowell.—Return to New York.—The Election.—Departure from the United States..... 472

## CHAPTER XXIII.

Arrival in Liverpool.—Voyage to St. Michael's.—Punta del Gada.—Singular antique Custom.—Villa Franca.—The Ilheo.—The Bathing-place Furnas.—The Hot Springs.—Departure from St. Michael's.—Entrance into the Tagus.—Lisbon.—Return to England.—Conclusion..... 489

Digitized by Google

# A LADY'S SECOND VOYAGE

ROUND

# THE WORLD.

## CHAPTER I.

Arrival in London.—What is Comfort?—Sabbath Observance.—Peculiarities in English Life.—Going to Church.—Sights of London.—The Environs.—The great Exhibition of 1851.

A JOURNEY from Vienna to London is now a mere little excursion of three or four days, but I took nearly a month to it myself, as I had some visits to pay to friends in Prague and Hamburg, so that, having left my native city on the 18th of March (1851), I only landed in London on the 10th of April.

It was early in the morning when our steamer entered the harbor of the metropolis of the world. The forest of masts, which from a distance appeared quite impenetrable, gradually unfolded itself to our view as we advanced; and the countless vessels of all sizes, from the largest East Indiaman to the tiniest yacht—some lying at anchor, some unfurling their sails, and setting off on their voyages in various directions, or being taken in tow by little smoking bustling steamers—all this afforded certainly a grand and stirring sight; but I rather missed the variety of costume and physiognomy that I had expected in a place where all the nations of the world congregate. I saw only European sailors and English workmen, and in this respect any East Indian harbor, and especially that of Bombay, is incomparably more interesting to a spectator. There you see people of all countries and all colors, and the most extraordinary and amusing variety of costumes.

Digitized by Google

We landed at the custom-house—a spot that I approached with some trepidation, as I had heard terrible things of the severities exercised there; how every trifle had to be paid for, and that even one's pockets were not safe from the intrusive hands of fiercely eager custom-house officials. But I had alarmed myself very unnecessarily. A very slight glance was taken at my possessions; my passport was asked for, indeed; but when my name had been written in a book, it was returned to me immediately. I was told I wanted no such thing as what we call an *Aufenthalts-Karte*—a "permission to reside." My passport was never asked for again; and when subsequently I shipped myself for Africa, no police or other authority appeared to think they had the least to do with the matter.

The impression made on me by the busy throng of life in the streets of London was not altogether an agreeable one. The hurrying and driving, the choking mass of vehicles that made it really a perilous undertaking to cross the street, the never-ceasing noise, deafened and bewildered me, so that I was heartily glad when I at last found myself safe in my own room.

The greatest bustle of the town is, as is well known, in the city; for here are the counting-houses of the merchants, the Exchange, the Bank, the Mansion House (the residence of the Lord Mayor), etc. The merchants do not live in the city, but only pass their mornings there—from about eleven o'clock to four or five; as the abundance of all means of communication—railroads, steamboats, omnibuses, etc.—make it very easy for them to live in distant parts of the town, or even sometimes eight or ten miles in the country. The trains from the railway-stations often go every quarter of an hour; the steamers, from the first bridge of London to the last, every five minutes; and the omnibuses are in everlasting motion. These last are not very desirable conveyances, especially for a foreigner; for a considerable amount of study is required to determine which is the right one to get into. The inscriptions on the outside do indeed name the chief stations they go to, but different omnibuses pass frequently through quite different parts of the town to reach the same point; and if you address your inquiry to the conductor, he will generally reply with gentle-

Digitized by Google

manly composure in the affirmative, whatever place you inquire for, and then set down the unhappy stranger—it may be rather farther off the place he wishes to go to than he was when he got in. A drive in an omnibus can indeed in no respect be reckoned among the pleasures of London life. The carriages are tolerably large, but they take one-and-twenty passengers—twelve in and nine outside—so that of course one finds no very spacious accommodation in the seats; and the perpetual stopping, and getting in and out—all in the greatest hurry; the rainy days, with their accompaniments of wet clothes, dripping umbrellas, and dirty shoes, have to a stranger arriving with delightful anticipations of the supreme *comfort* to be met with in England, rather a disappointing effect.

This same English comfort, indeed, of which we hear so much, must be understood, it seems to me, with considerable qualifications, or must depend much on previous habits of life. I, for instance, do not find it comfortable to be almost always shivering when I am at home; and nowhere else have I suffered this inconvenience so frequently as in England. These open fires do, indeed, warm the fortunate person who sits immediately next to them, and who has nothing else to do than to warm himself; but not the unlucky wight who may happen to be engaged writing or sewing on the other side of the room, and pen or needle will soon fall from his or her shivering fingers.

Now, in a country that has to contend with cold eight months out of the twelve, I do not consider this a particularly comfortable arrangement; but the English are so immoderately fond of the sight of a fire, that rather than not see it they will often patiently endure the not feeling it.

Again, as every family, even in the most narrow circumstances, will generally insist on having a house to itself, the houses are of very narrow frontage, and the occupants of them have to pass a considerable part of their lives in going up and down stairs. Of course I do not speak here of the rich, who can undoubtedly surround themselves with every comfort in England; but so they can elsewhere, and mostly at far less cost than here. My remarks relate only to the habitations of the middle classes.

Digitized by Google

One great and unavoidable inconvenience lies in the enormous size of the town. You can not pay a visit, or attend to a matter of business, or take any amusement without a considerable expenditure of time and money. Visiting especially is expensive, as you can not make use of railroads or omnibuses when you are required to go in any thing like full dress. If you adopt the cheapest mode of conveyance for occasions of this kind, and take a cab at eightpence a mile,* as you may easily have nine or ten miles to drive there and back, no trifling addition is made to the cost of your evening's entertainment. As for the opera, that in England is only for wealthy people; for a box costs three or four guineas, and full dress is imperative.

It is probably on account of these difficulties and expenses that you find in English houses so little of that pleasant, easy sociality to which we more southern people are so accustomed. There are dinners and evening parties in abundance, but people do not come together in an unconstrained agreeable manner. The life of the women of the middle rank seemed to me particularly monotonous. They are mostly alone all day, and when their husbands return in the evening from their business, they are generally too tired for conversation, and do not much like to be disturbed by visitors, but sit down in an arm-chair by the fire, take a newspaper, and now and then, I believe, fall asleep.

The Sunday, which in other countries, though regarded as much as here as a day of prayer and religious worship, is also considered as a suitable one for innocent recreation, is in England so very often made dull and wearisome that the liveliest Southlander sinks under its weight. In many of the regular old-fashioned English families the very children are not allowed to amuse themselves with their balls and playthings; a cold dinner is taken, that the cook may have time to go to church morning and afternoon; several hours each time are spent in the long English service; and no book but one on an expressly religious subject must be looked into during the whole day.

The custom of assembling the whole family, servants and all,

* This was the charge when I was in London, but it has been since reduced to sixpence, at least nominally.

Digitized by Google

morning and evening, for a short religious service, I thought excellent; but to pass a whole day in prayer with any beneficial effect really seems to me impossible.

Prayer should be uttered with vivid consciousness of what one is doing, with devout attention, in spirit and in truth; not merely from the lips in lifeless formality of repetition. Prayers of this kind one can hardly hope will be answered.

In no country in the world, Persia and China excepted, can one so easily offend against the laws of etiquette as in England. If at dinner you should take your fork in your right instead of your left hand—if you should cut your meat into small pieces all at once, instead of cutting off each piece as you require it—or in a hundred other little matters vary from the modes established here, you must be content to resign at once all pretension to good breeding. Sometimes indeed, as, for instance, if you were to take any one into your bedroom, you would be considered to have actually trespassed against morality, and committed something like a crime, though to us such things would seem entirely insignificant. And yet there are cases where what would appear to us a decided impropriety is here perfectly allowable and customary. That two sisters, two maid-servants, or any two feminine persons, should sleep in the same bed, is in England so usual, that no one would scruple, if they had visitors staying with them, to make such an arrangement; yet this we should regard as a practice unhealthy, unpleasant, and, in many ways, objectionable. I have heard more in condemnation of it, indeed, than I can possibly explain here; but I earnestly wish to call attention to it, and if my remarks should induce a single family to abolish this bad custom, I shall feel that I have been rewarded for my plain speaking.

Again, we should see impropriety in the custom of a newly-married pair getting into a carriage, with servants and horses decorated with all the outward and visible signs of a wedding, and in that style proceeding on a tour, and entering all the hotels in their route. Yet this in England is a mere matter of course. I mention these things partly in the hope of rendering English people rather less severe on foreigners who may be guilty of slight departures from their own code of etiquette. I might hint, too, that

Digitized by Google

it strikes a traveler from a strictly monarchical country like Austria as rather curious to find that in free constitutional England the nobility and the court are regarded with more profound—perhaps I should say servile—awe than in our land of absolutism, even before 1848. With all respect for Her Majesty Victoria, I could not help smiling at the importance that seemed to be attached to the question whether I had seen the Queen, Prince Albert, or the Prince of Wales.

Can it be that the pride of aristocracy and wealth have here reached their culminating-point? and that there is scarcely a country in the world where people would do so much to gain admittance into stiff, cold, lordly circles, whose chief care is to exclude them? There is one other place in Europe, however, where the veneration for lords and titles appears to be as profound and heart-felt as in England, and that is, strange to say, in the little republic of Hamburg. I remember, during my stay there in 1848–9, there arrived in the city a certain Prince of Leiningen (a second or third son) with his tutor; and did not the republican Hamburgers strive one with another for his princely notice? Did they not give dinners, and soirees, and balls in his honor? Was not that citizen of the free Hanseatic town a proud and happy man whose invitations the prince accepted? and still more, the mother with whose daughter he danced? And was not every word that fell from the Serene Highness's lips clever, and witty, and wise? But to return to London.

The churches make a singular impression when seen for the first time. The whole space, with the exception of a few benches, is divided like a theatre into boxes and reserved seats, the former luxuriously carpeted and cushioned, and furnished with footstools and an assortment of the *handsomest* books of devotion. I asked how it was that I saw no ill-dressed people, and the answer was that "those who could not dress themselves properly of course would stay away."

I remember being told at Singapore that the governor had given express orders that the gentlemen should appear at church in black frock-coats, and the ladies in equally elegant attire; so no one, I suppose, who is not pretty well off in the world need

Digitized by Google

presume to think himself an acceptable visitor in the house of God. I am sorry to hear that in many countries the Catholics are following the example of the Protestants in this degrading frivolity. May Heaven cure them both of their pride, and teach them better!

When I went to see the cathedral St. Paul's—which, as well as Westminster Abbey, is of course shown out of the hours of service—three sailors presented themselves at the same time to gain admittance, but were rejected and turned back, I was told, because they declined paying the admission-money of twopence a piece. I will say no more on this subject, however, as I hear that this scandal has been abolished; but I could not but wonder how such a custom could ever have been established.

It is not my purpose to attempt any description of London, which would be merely to repeat in a very feeble and imperfect manner what has been said often, and better said before. If a stranger wishes to gain some general idea of the appearance and extent of the town, he would do well to climb to the top of St. Paul's, the Monument, or the Duke of York's column. I chose the Monument, and had certainly no agreeable impression from the enormous mass of houses that I saw spread out before me, in which the individual beauties, such as the pretty squares, were quite lost. The handsome bridges over the Thames did indeed attract attention, but the general effect was of a wide plain covered with dingy brick buildings, and the distant outlines of which were vailed in the fog that is seldom entirely absent from it.

The feverish rush of life through the thronged streets of London can hardly be imagined by any one who has not witnessed it. That in the streets of the Neapolitan and Sicilian cities does indeed, at the first glance, bear some resemblance to it; for, in the evening at least, the whole population of these places (the sick excepted) is turned into the streets. The difference is that there the people are gay and noisy, and evidently out for pleasure, while in London every one looks serious and anxious, as if in eager pursuit of business and money. I really felt frightened the first time I ventured alone into this living torrent, and did not dare to ask my way of any one of the multitude who were hurrying past me as if

Digitized by Google

driven by steam; but let me do them the justice to say, that however violent their hurry had seemed to be, they never failed to stop and listen politely to my question; nay, many even turned back with me, and went considerably out of their way in order to put me right.

The handsomest part of the town is that commonly known as the "West End," in which are the parks, squares, club-houses, and private palaces, or residences of the nobility; but these are enumerated in every Guide Book.

Among the public edifices, that which struck me most was Bedlam—the Hospital for the Insane. It is a fine building, surrounded by gardens, and its arrangements are very simple and appropriate. The dormitories are divided along their whole length by partitions into three compartments, of which the centre one serves for the keepers to sit and the patients to walk up and down in. The two sides are again divided into small chambers that will just contain a bed and a bench, which is fastened to the floor, and the doors of these cells have small openings, through which the keepers can observe the conduct of the occupants. Each division possesses its own separate washing and bathing rooms, dining hall, and room for receiving visitors.

I was much struck with the difference in the aspect of the male and female insane. The men almost without exception had it stamped on their faces that a profligate course of life had been the accompaniment, if not the cause, of their state of mind. The keeper led me through a part of the garden in which a number of these unhappy men were assembled, and I really thought myself fortunate when I had passed through the midst of them without experiencing any personal insult. I do not think any thing would induce me to take that walk again. The sight of the insane has always hitherto inspired me with feelings of sorrowful compassion; here I felt compassion certainly, but also, I must own, fear, aversion, and disgust. The impression was very different from the sight of the female patients. Many of these poor creatures were sitting quietly in a corner and weeping; one was carrying a great doll, and caressing and kissing it, as if it had been a living baby. What may not these sufferers have gone through before they came

Digitized by Google

here? What mournful histories, full of vain struggles of grief and despair, are here buried in oblivion!

The British Museum is a magnificent building, and, for the treasures with which its halls are filled, certainly the grandest in the world; and it would have astonished me even more than it did, had I not immediately before had an opportunity of devoting much time and attention to the examination of that of Berlin. The collection of antiquities from Nineveh, however, is absolutely unrivaled, and the excavations by which they have been obtained have been made partly at the expense of the Museum itself. Many of these treasures have already been set up in suitable places, but almost as many are still lying buried in the cellars for want of room to display them.

The College of Surgeons contains rare skeletons of men and animals, and skulls from all the nations of the world, as well as a collection of monstrous births and other equally remarkable objects. Professor Owen, one of the most distinguished men in England in the department of anatomy, is the Director of this college, and it is under his superintendence that it has reached its present point of perfection. I was so fortunate as to make his acquaintance, and he gave me permission to visit the place at any time, and pointed out many things to my attention. Not less obligation am I under to Mr. Waterhouse of the British Museum, who also devoted many hours to me, and instructed me in the mode of making collections. And I will take this opportunity of making my acknowledgments to the Privy-counselor Lichtenstein, the Director of the Berlin Museum, who allowed me to come there whenever I pleased, and frequently conducted me himself through the apartments. To him and the above-mentioned gentlemen I return my sincerest thanks for the complaisance and kindness they have shown me.

Besides the British Museum and the College of Surgeons, there are other museums, among which the India House, devoted exclusively to articles from India, is the most important.

The National Gallery of pictures is not very rich in *chef-d'œuvres*. Three pictures by Murillo pleased me best; but the galleries of many private persons contain, I understand, some splendid productions of art.

Digitized by Google

To see the elegant world of London you must visit the parks, Hyde Park and the Regent's, lying in the west and northwest of the town. There you will find throngs of superb carriages, and of equestrians of all ages and both sexes, mounted on fine horses of every variety, and ladies even driving their own carriages without attracting any particular attention. It is also not considered at all improper for a lady, or even a young girl, to ride in company with gentlemen in no way related to her. In the Regent's Park is the Zoological Garden, a most remarkably fine collection of exotic animals—lions, tigers, leopards, giraffes, and others, of astonishing size and beauty, and also a magnificent specimen of the hippopotamus. The department devoted to reptiles and large serpents is also very rich. Close to Hyde Park lie three other parks—St. James's, the Green Park, and Kensington Gardens—the latter much visited, and abounding in trees of venerable age and fine growth.

These parks are all laid out much in the same style, with spacious grassy lawns and avenues, and groups of fine large trees and shrubs. Flowers are mostly in conservatories and green-houses.

Covent Garden is a market, and no garden at all, but well worthy of a visit, especially on a Saturday, for the enormous mass of vegetables, fruits, and flowers, provided for the wants and enjoyments of this vast city.

In the City of London, properly so called, there are fewer sights than in the more aristocratic West End, but many extremely interesting objects, nevertheless; among which is the Tower, one of the most ancient buildings of London; the Bank; the Exchange; Guildhall—the latter boasting a splendid saloon for festive occasions; the Mansion House, the residence of the Lord Mayor; and the Docks, a little world in themselves, with deep, broad basins and canals lined entirely with massive freestone, in which the largest East Indiamen can come quite close up to the warehouses and discharge their cargoes. These warehouses are five or six stories high, and their vaults contain the most enormous wine-cellars in the world. The Docks are surrounded by strong high walls, and gates, which are locked in the evening.

In the city lies the much-talked-of Thames Tunnel, certainly

Digitized by Google

a most astonishing work, but which made much less impression on me than I had expected; partly, perhaps, from its insignificant entrance. A small, almost mean-looking house, is built over a wide, round opening; and it is not till you have descended many steps, to an almost terrific depth, that you reach a high-vaulted passage, which is the actual Tunnel. A similar long flight leads up at the other end; and the passage itself has two rows of columns, which support the roof and divide the Tunnel into three avenues. Two of these are left free for passengers, and the middle one is fitted up with shops. The Tunnel is handsomely illuminated with gas; and when you consider that a mighty stream is rolling and great ships sailing over your head, a feeling almost of awe is awakened. But this wonderful work, which cost enormous sums of money, and many human lives, is really of no use. The shareholders have suffered greatly; for the receipts from the toll, and the rents of the shops, of which very few are let, scarcely cover the current expenses; and since, in the course of time, extensive and costly repairs must be undertaken if the Tunnel is to be maintained, it is not improbable that, before long, it will have gone entirely to ruin. The chief causes of this failure are said to be the remote position of the Tunnel and the inconvenience of the entrance. By way of conclusion to my visit to the city, I went to see Barclay and Perkins's* brewery, and the public baths and wash-houses for the poorer classes; and I also took a walk through the Post-office.

In the brewery, I was told, from 1000 to 1500 sacks of malt are used every day. Among the vats are many that contain 6000 gallons of beer: 400 workmen are employed, and 160 horses. And, by-the-by, I have never in any other part of the world seen such magnificent cart horses as in London; they are of most unusual size and strength, and extremely well fed and cared for.

In the public lodging-houses, baths, and wash-houses, I found

* It was here that in 1850 the Austrian General Von Haynau—renowned for the length of his mustachios, and the facility with which he pronounced sentences of death after the suppression of the Hungarian insurrection—met with a most unexpected and summary punishment. He escaped, as is well known, barely with his life.

Digitized by Google

an institution that ought to be imitated in all the great towns of Europe. The lodging-houses for unmarried men consist of large halls, like those of Bedlam, divided by wooden partitions into small chambers, each of which receives abundance of light—in the day from without, and in the night from great gas lamps suspended from the ceiling of the hall. The gas is kept burning till midnight, and each lodging-house contains a dining and lecture hall, and a spacious kitchen, in which fire and hot water are always ready for the men to cook their meals. The price for each person is only three shillings a week. Similar houses are about to be erected for single women, and some for families are already in existence, which consist of sets of three small rooms, and a kitchen and coal-cellar. Water is laid on to each kitchen; and the rent for the whole is only five or six shillings a week. In the wash-houses every woman has a separate place, where she can wash her little stock of linen unseen by her neighbors. There are two taps, one for cold and the other for hot water, over each tub; and the drying is carried on very expeditiously in small closets, heated by pipes, and supplied with poles; and there is also a machine to wring the water from large things, such as counterpanes, sheets, etc. The price paid for all this accommodation is only a penny an hour. Associated with the wash-houses are baths, where there are little chambers furnished with large bathing-tubs of metal, or white glazed ware, and kept extremely clean. The charge for a warm bath of the first class is only sixpence, and for a cold one threepence. Those rather inferior in their accommodations cost but twopence and a penny.

The Post-office should be visited by a stranger on Saturday afternoon from five to six o'clock, at which hour, to a moment, it closes. To have a good view of the crowd which until that hour increases every moment, he should take his place in the great hall; but let him see that he gets a safe one, for people often get hurt in the tremendous crowding occasioned by the eagerness of every one to post his letters before the clock strikes. They are, indeed, received up to nine o'clock, but the postage increases with every quarter of an hour.

I saw a good deal of the environs of London, partly in excur-

Digitized by Google

sions that I made to Woolwich, Kew, Windsor, Chiswick, and Greenwich, etc., and partly in visits that carried me often ten or twelve miles into the country. In the lovely green of the meadows, and the rich and early vegetation, I found every thing that I had read or heard of it amply confirmed. It was only in the beginning of the month of April, and already the shrubs and hedges were out in leaf, and the prettiest little flowers were springing from the rich emerald carpet of the meadows. The holly, the Portuguese laurel, and many other shrubs, retain their leaves through the winter, and rejoice the eye with the beauty of their dark shining leaves. This perpetual freshness of vegetable life in England is ascribed to the moderate climate, the constant damp, and the saline particles with which the atmosphere is impregnated. In spite of its high northern latitude, and the severe and long winter, which often sets in at the end of September and lasts till March, England seldom suffers from that piercing dry cold, which in much more southerly countries in central Europe benumbs both vegetable and animal life. The snow seldom lies on the ground above five or six days together, and the cold is not so great but that the sheep can be left in the open air, as in Spain and Portugal.

The finest gardens in the immediate environs of London are those at Chiswick and Kew, in the first of which take place the exhibitions of flowers, in the months of May, June, and July. The exhibition only lasts one day; and I should certainly never have imagined that for a display of this kind rainy weather would be desirable; and yet it was so. In fine weather all the gay world of London resorts to these flower-shows; but the purpose of the meeting is rather to display their own finery than to see the flowers. Bands of music play in various parts of the gardens; and the thronging of the perpetually moving multitude makes a real examination of the supposed objects of the exhibition almost impossible.

I had, however, on my visit the advantage of very favorable weather—that is to say, it rained incessantly, and scarcely any one came to disturb me in my admiration of the glorious specimens exhibited in green-houses and under tents.

The splendor of the collection, especially of the exotics, is al-



Digitized by Google

most indescribable. I really saw many specimens of these beautiful strangers that were finer and fuller of blossom than I ever saw in their native country. The display of fruit was less remarkable, with the exception of the pine-apples, which were of extraordinary size, and often weighed ten or twelve pounds.

At Kew is partly a garden and partly a park; there are stately trees, extensive lawns, clear mirror-like ponds, artificial hills, summer-houses, and beds of flowers; but the great fame of the garden is for its exotic flowers and trees, among which are palms eighty feet high, kept in immense glass-houses. One of these might well deserve the name of Glass, or, as it is the fashion to say, *Crystal* Palace. It consists of two wings, and a central part, or transept, that rises like a cupola to the height of above a hundred feet; and on looking at it, it is easy to see how the idea of a similar edifice for the great Industrial Exhibition of London many have arisen. A gallery runs round the top, whence you obtain a general view of the flowers, shrubs, and palms; and it does not require much imagination to obtain from it some imperfect conception of the primeval forests of Brazil.

In the arsenal of Woolwich I did not see much that was new, or that I had not seen before on a smaller scale at Venice. One of the things that interested me most was the carriage in which Napoleon was taken to his grave in St. Helena. It was the same in which he used to drive out, with an iron frame, covered with black cloth, substituted for the seats.

The drive to Woolwich by the rail is not very agreeable, on account of a tunnel two miles long; and as neither tunnel nor carriage is lit, you sit for several minutes plunged in the most profound darkness. Here, again, I was struck by the capricious nature of the notions of propriety and impropriety in this country. On many of the railroads men are most strictly forbidden to enter the waiting-rooms assigned to ladies, yet they are open, and in broad daylight. But no one finds any objection to their sitting with ladies in the impenetrable night of the tunnel, though the newspapers have often borne witness to the facility thus afforded for theft and other incidents not strictly consistent with morality.

Windsor Castle, which lies about twenty miles from London,

Digitized by Google

is one of the finest buildings in the Gothic style, not only in England, but in all Europe. It stands on a gentle elevation, and is built of massive stone. Part of the building dates from William the Conqueror, but the actual founder of the Castle as it now stands, and of the very pretty chapel, was Edward the Third, though many improvements have been made in it by subsequent sovereigns. The Castle consists of two courts—the castle itself, and the round tower, the architecture of which is greatly admired. The apartments are lofty, spacious, and really royal in appearance, their arrangement extremely simple, and every one has a separate name as well as its peculiar historical recollections. The gallery contains portraits of the most renowned sovereigns of ancient and modern times—the likenesses not very remarkable, if I may judge by those I happen to have seen—the Emperors of Austria and Russia, the Queen of Prussia, etc., whom I could scarcely recognize. The chapel has some very fine paintings on glass; and here a fee of sixpence a head was demanded by the attendants, though it is expressly stated on the admission-card that nothing is to be given to any one. The prospect from the tower is beautiful. You can look into twelve counties, and follow the course of the Thames for an immense distance.

On the hill on which the Castle stands lies also the pretty little town of Windsor; and southward of it extends a magnificent park, four miles long and fifteen in circuit, containing majestic ancient trees, forming stately avenues overshadowing lovely paths both for walking and riding, and some spots, as Virginia Water, specially renowned for their beauty.

Greenwich Hospital was formerly a summer palace of Queen Elizabeth, but now serves, as is well known, for an asylum to invalids of the royal navy. There are 2500 men there, and every one has his own little sleeping-room, with a bed, a chair, and a cupboard. The dining-rooms are lofty handsome rooms with vaulted ceilings, and the people sit at long tables, in parties of four men each. To every one of these parties is given soup, three pounds of meat (alternately beef, mutton, and pork, occasionally salt), four pounds of potatoes, and a fine large white loaf. They also get beans and other vegetables, flour puddings, and every day

Digitized by Google

beer and tea. I visited the Hospital intentionally at dinner-time, in order to be present at the distribution of food, and I found here, as in every public institution of England that I have seen, that the provisions supplied were both abundant in quantity and excellent in their kind, not as in some other countries I could name, where the poor only have wholesome food on the days when a great man or an inspector pays them a visit. Strange to say, too, the officers of the institutions I allude to always happen to become aware of these visits beforehand.

The distribution is made in the following manner: The food is prepared in two caldrons; the meat is cut into portions of three pounds each before it is put in, and the four pounds of potatoes are hung in a net. When the meat is cooked the caldron is emptied into a large tub, and the soup runs off through an opening in the bottom into another tub. One man then takes out a three-pound portion of meat, which he puts into a deep dish, and another bales out the proper quantity of soup in a vessel that exactly holds so much, and pours it over the meat; a third then takes out the net of potatoes from the caldron, in which it has been boiled by steam; and the distribution goes on with incredible rapidity, yet in the most orderly manner.

There is a small building by the side of the principal one that serves as a hospital for the sick, who are entirely separated from the healthy, and have even their own garden to walk in. A large shady park is also at the service, not only of the sailors, but of the whole public; and in this park lies the Observatory, through which the English draw their first meridian. The Hospital likewise possesses a small but pretty picture-gallery, with representations of renowned naval battles, and portraits of distinguished naval heroes. Some old garments of Nelson are preserved under glass-cases, and among them are the coat and waistcoat through which, in the battle of Trafalgar, the fatal bullet entered his breast.

One very remarkable sight that I witnessed in London, though only of a temporary nature, must not be omitted, namely, the Great Industrial Exhibition in Hyde Park; and I must express my great obligation to the President of the Austrian Department,

Digitized by Google

Mr. Buschek, who furnished me with a ticket for the opening and for five subsequent visits.

The opening took place, as is well known, with great solemnity. The Queen and Prince Albert appeared with their eldest children, the ministers, and principal nobility of the Empire, and the embassadors from all the countries that took any part in the exhibition. After a short speech by Prince Albert to the Queen, a prayer, and a hymn, the whole procession moved on slowly through the building, stopping here and there at some of the most remarkable objects, while to the anxiously watching people without the most important movements were announced by the firing of guns.

The ceremony began at ten in the morning; at twelve o'clock it was over; and only then were the holders of what were called season tickets admitted.

I went out of the Crystal Palace a short time before the royal family left it, in order to have an opportunity of observing the deportment of the people. There was an immense throng of carriages, all very splendid, but the coachmen and other servants wore a most absurd masquerade costume. The former had curled and powdered periwigs, on the tops of which were stuck little three-cornered hats, and many had also huge bunches of flowers on the breasts of their coats; and the other servants, of whom two stood behind almost every carriage, held great sticks in their hands. The royal carriage was surrounded by a few soldiers of the guards, some of the most magnificent-looking men that can be seen in the world. Their uniforms also are particularly rich, and they ride very fine horses all of the same color.

The behavior of the people was exemplary beyond all description. Great as the crowd was, there was no violent pushing, far less quarreling or fighting, and never was there less stolen than on this day. Only two cases were mentioned at the police; and, strange as it may seem to *certain people in certain countries*, there was not a single soldier to be seen among the crowd. Simple policemen, with truncheons a foot long in their hands, were found sufficient to keep the people in the most perfect order; even they had nothing more to do than politely to request those who got

Digitized by Google

into wrong places to move out of them. A gentle tap on the shoulder, and a "Move on, if you please," was quite enough, and every one "moved on" accordingly.

My readers, I do not doubt, will very willingly excuse my giving any further account of the "Great Exhibition." Countless books, pamphlets, and newspapers have trumpeted its fame to every corner of the world; and there can hardly be found any one who has not read much concerning it, and seen representations of the fairy-like "Crystal Palace" and the master-pieces exhibited in it from every industrial region in every land "from Indus to the Pole." I can only say that the sight was a memorable, never-to-be-forgotten one, and that I scarcely believe the like will ever be seen again.

Digitized by Google

## CHAPTER II.

Cape Town.—Dangerous Meeting with two Negresses.—Malay.—Singapore.—Sarawak.—Rajah Brooke.—Malay and Chinese Dwellings.—Excursion to the Dyaks and the Antimony Mines.

It was on the evening of the 24th of May, 1851, that I betook myself on board the good ship *Allandale*, burden 300 tons, bound for the Cape of Good Hope. To my great astonishment I found no one there but the master, Captain Brodie, who informed me that he had given the entire crew, down to the cabin boys, permission to pass the night on shore, and that he himself was just about leaving the ship with a similar intention.

I was of course at liberty to do the same if I pleased; but as I had been living some miles away in the country, I thought it probable that if I did I might not be back in time in the morning, so I resolved to stay quietly where I was, and, locking myself into my cabin, remained for that night "monarch of all I surveyed," and constituted in my own person the whole ship's company.

On the following morning a steamer took us in tow as far as Gravesend, lying twenty miles from London, at what may be considered the mouth of the Thames, though the current is felt for fifty-eight miles farther, as far as the North Foreland. This night and the following day found us still lying opposite Gravesend, waiting for two sailors whom the captain had engaged, but who had failed to make their appearance; and they never came at all, so that he had to go back to London for others, and we did not finally sail till the 27th.

The voyage through the Channel was unfavorable; we had little wind, and during the first three days had to be continually coming to anchor. On the 30th so heavy a fog sunk down on the sea, that we could only see to the distance of a few hundred feet; and through the dense mist came the sounds of ships' bells and calling voices, giving notice of the precise position of other

Digitized by Google

vessels, in order to avoid, if possible, a collision. These sounds had a somewhat mournful effect, and were not adapted to inspire any very cheerful anticipations concerning the long and dangerous voyage that lay before us. For sailing ships this is not less than 8000 miles, as they have, on account of the wind, to make a considerable run to the westward, almost to the coast of Brazil; but steamers have not above 5000 miles to go to reach the Cape. It was not till the evening of the 2d of April that we succeeded in reaching the Atlantic Ocean.

In these few days I had had time enough to discover that our captain was inclined to carry his frugality in the entertainment of his passengers rather to excess, for in no other vessel in any part of the world have I ever been so badly fed. The mate, who, as is customary in vessels of this class, had the superintendence of the kitchen, and who certainly did not appear at all profuse in his arrangements, was nevertheless very soon dismissed from his office for extravagance, and the worthy captain undertook it in person. His bill of fare was soon made. For breakfast, weak coffee without milk, and salt meat; dinner, peas-soup and salt meat; for the evening meal, tea and salt meat. Occasionally we had a fowl, or a hard lump of dough with a few raisins in it; and this, with common sea-biscuit, completed the list. As for ham, eggs, or even cheese, all such things were regarded by our economical captain as superfluous luxuries. He was, he informed me, about to take the command of an East Indiaman, and Heaven help the passengers who may dine at his table! He was, however, a careful master, and in other respects not to be complained of.

What troubled me much more than the bad fare, was the bad company; for the only passenger besides myself was an apparently quite uneducated young man, who passed his time in smoking, whistling, and bawling among the sailors, and found his chief recreation in going to see the poultry killed. However, I could at all events congratulate myself on the strength of body and mind that nature had bestowed on me; for the bad food did not injure my health, nor the bad company my spirits. I tried to think only of the joyful moment of landing, and to console myself for the annoyances of the present by hopes for the future.

Digitized by Google

Nothing remarkable took place on the voyage to the Cape. The beautiful mollusk *Physalis*, which I have noticed in my first Voyage round the World, I now saw in the 35th parallel of north latitude, and the flying fish at 22°. On the 13th of June we sailed quite close to the island of Ferro, in the southern Canary group, passing it at a distance of not more than two miles from the western shore, which consists, however, of nothing but barren rocks, only here and there scantily covered with vegetation. It was land, nevertheless, and I gazed fondly at the pleasant and long-desired sight.

*June* 23*d*. Many and long as have been my wanderings over the surface of the vast watery waste of ocean, I have never beheld it in such perfect tranquillity as to-day. Not the smallest ripple disturbed its boundless glassy surface. There was something sublime in its profound repose. The next morning we saw two small water-spouts, at about twenty miles off; but as they were to leeward of us we had nothing to fear from them, and were able to observe their movements at our leisure as they danced along the surface of the sea, and in about a quarter of an hour fell down again into it. The same evening we saw a St. Elmo's fire at the top of our main-mast.

We crossed the equator between twelve and one o'clock in the afternoon of the 4th of July; but no ceremony took place on the occasion, nor did the sailors receive so much as an additional glass of grog. On the 11th of August, after a voyage of seventy-five days, we at last came to anchor in the roads of Cape Town.

Although we had seen no land since the island of Ferro, no very striking impression was made on me by the appearance of the place, perhaps because that of London was too fresh in my memory, so that Cape Town looked almost like a village. Its situation reminded me of that of Valparaiso, as it is surrounded like that town by a range of treeless and rather barren-looking mountains, of which the Table, Lion, and Devil's Mountains form the principal points. From the deck of the *Allandale* I could discover only one small tree, although it was the winter of the southern hemisphere, when in the latitude of the Cape hill and valley commonly wear a robe of lovely green. How must it look in summer, when the



Digitized by Google

glowing, almost perpendicular rays of the sun strike it, and scorch up every kind of vegetation?

Captain Brodie left the ship immediately after breakfast, and had not the civility to take me on shore—a piece of courtesy that was never refused me before by any captain I ever sailed with. Even the rough Chinese boatman, who took me from Hong-Kong to Canton, went three miles out of his way to take me to the English factory, and did not leave me till he had found for me the house I was in search of, to which I had introductions. Here I had to land by myself, and make my way as well as I could by inquiry. I had introductions to the Hamburg consul, Mr. Thalwitzer, whom, as well as his wife, I fortunately found at home; and I received from them so very kind and cordial a reception that I soon forgot the trouble I had had in finding them, and felt myself as much at home as if I had been in my dear native country.

Of Cape Town there is not much to be said. The streets are broad and airy, and in the time of the Dutch almost every street had its beautiful avenue of trees: but few of these are now to be seen. The houses are built quite in the European style, except that they have terraced roofs. The fort is provided with a great store of cannon, and the barracks are extensive. The Exchange, on the Parade, is a long, low, insignificant-looking building; the private houses all one story high, with from four to six windows in front, and containing lofty, handsome rooms. The Botanic Garden is not so rich in flowers, trees, and plants, as might, in such a climate, have been expected. The number of inhabitants in Cape Town is estimated at 32,000; of which one third are whites, one third mulatto, and the remainder negro; but the numerous ramifications and crossings of the European with the native population have produced, one may say, all kinds of colors. Real unmixed Hottentots or Caffres are rare at Cape Town; but blacks from Mozambique, whom we call negroes, are very numerous, and of pure descent. Among the mixed races you often meet with very handsome people, with fine eyes and expressive features; but they are mostly in European dresses, and you only see occasionally a peaked bamboo hat, or, among the unbaptized Malays,

Digitized by Google

a colored handkerchief twisted round the head, to remind you of where you are.

A few unusual articles of attire of this kind, and the long teams of draught animals harnessed to the wagons, are almost all you see that is new and strange. Wagons that with us would be drawn by two, three, or four horses, here have ten, or from ten to twenty oxen, harnessed two and two. A man or boy walks at the head of a team of this kind to guide it; and on the wagon itself sits the driver, armed with an enormously long whip. Horses are driven only from the box; but when there are six or eight to drive, there are two drivers on the wagon—one to wield the whip, and the other to guide the cattle. In the market, which is held (every day but Sunday) at an early hour in the morning outside the town, all kinds of provisions are to be found—fresh and dried fruits, vegetables, poultry, calves, sheep, oxen, dried and smoked meat, etc. Besides provisions there are also hides, sheep-skins, ostrich-feathers, and other articles for sale, which are disposed of by public auction.

Living is rather dear at Cape Town. Beef, veal, or mutton costs fivepence or sixpence a pound, flour fourpence, a fowl a shilling, a pound of butter two shillings, and so on; and a house containing six or eight good rooms will cost from eighty to ninety pounds a year. The only cheap article of food is fish, and for the cheapness of this the people have, in some measure, to thank their governor, Lord Somerset. In the year 1825, the butchers presented a petition to him, in which they prayed that a tax might be laid upon fish, the low price of which, they said, did them much damage in their trade. The governor only answered by writing with a pencil on the petition, "When you can show me a single dealer in fish who, like many of you butchers, keeps a carriage and livery servants, your petition shall be taken into consideration."

I passed four weeks in Cape Town, during which time I saw but little deserving of remark. I used at first to ramble freely about the environs, and amuse myself by collecting insects and objects of natural history; but this amusement was soon interrupted by a very unpleasant incident. One morning, while I was taking one

Digitized by Google

of these strolls, and just as I was rejoicing in the capture of a little snake, two negresses suddenly rushed out upon me from among some trees, seized hold of me, overwhelmed me with abuse; spit on the ground before me, in token of their hatred and contempt, and called me a witch and a sorceress, who ought to be put an end to. There is no saying how this scene might have ended—probably in no very agreeable way for me—had not a man fortunately at that moment made his appearance at a distance. I cried to him for help, and thereupon the two women took to flight.

On my return I mentioned this incident to Mr. Thalwitzer, who instantly sent off notice to a magistrate, and the women were pursued and taken. In the inquiry that took place it appeared to have been their intention to get me by some means into a neighboring thicket, and there, at all events, to rob me of my clothing, or whatever else they could get.

A child of about ten years old, who had seen the women, and, being frightened at their looks, had hid itself under the boughs of some trees, noticed that one of them was armed with a long knife. On their flight, she had let this knife fall, and the child had afterward picked it up and brought it to his parents, who carried it to the magistrate. At the examination, the production of this knife, of course, did not tell in their favor, and they were condemned to four weeks imprisonment "upon rice-water." This, it seems, is an ordinary punishment, and consists in no other nourishment whatever being allowed.

In the present instance this punishment appeared to me rather severe, and I begged for some alleviation of it, but in vain. I was told that these women were notorious offenders, and passed more time in prison than out of it.

In consequence of this occurrence I found it necessary to confine my walks within rather narrower limits than heretofore; but I made one beautiful excursion (for which I have to thank the botanist, Mr. Zeeker), to Green Point, Combs Bay, and round the Lion Mountain, whence we had fine views of the sea, the hills, and a very pleasant district. In general, however, the environs of Cape Town are not beautiful; the mountains are for the most part barren, or covered with scanty brushwood, and the plains are

Digitized by Google

wanting in rich grass and cornfields, their only decoration being an abundance of the most variously colored wild flowers. These lovely, tender children of nature spring up amidst the bushes, in the thin grass, and even force themselves out from beneath the stones. I have lingered for hours among them, and was always discovering new beauties in them, and finding specimens of kinds I had never seen before.

One favorite walk of the Cape Town people is a small wood which lies at the foot of the Lion Mountain, and is traversed by a pretty footpath. The Governor's garden and the Botanical one are also open to the public. Really beautiful and fertile as a blooming garden are the districts of Rondesbosch, Weinberg, and Constantia—the first lying at four, the two latter at nine and thirteen miles from Cape Town. Many merchants and official persons live at Rondesbosch, and drive to town every morning in omnibuses. Constantia is renowned all the world over for its fine grapes, and I regretted much not being able to see the vines in the season of their glorious adornment. The wine made from these grapes is dark, red, rich, and sweet, and even on the spot very dear.

The Table Mountain, which is 3000 feet high, I ascended one morning quite easily in three hours, and a most magnificent prospect over land and sea rewarded me for the exertion. The summit of this mountain forms an extensive plateau, which has gained for it the name of Table. It has a numerous and lively population of apes, which I heard chattering and screaming, though I could not see them, nor indeed any four-footed animal.

On Friday, the Malay Sunday, I paid a visit to their mosque, a fine lofty hall in the house of the chief priest. The Malays here, though Mohammedans, are not so strict as some of their brethren in the East, and allow strangers to witness their religious service. I found the women, who had put off their upper garments in the apartments of the priest's wife, wrapped in great white shawls and with vails on their heads, which, nevertheless, left their faces uncovered, sitting on the ground at the back of the hall. The men went into an ante-chamber and pulled off their colored trowsers, beneath which they had white ones, wrapped themselves in long

Digitized by Google

white robes, and put on a white head-dress over the colored one that they usually wear. They then prostrated themselves repeatedly, and after that sat down in rows, in the front of which the chief priest took his place and said a prayer. After the first prayer the men kissed the priest's hand, but after the second contented themselves with pressing it. A sort of chorister then began, from somewhere in the back-ground, to sing with the whole strength of his lungs a song or hymn, in which the men all joined in chorus; and when that was over, he pushed through the crowd to the foot of a little pulpit and roared a second hymn; hereupon the priest ascended the pulpit, and half read half sung a sort of duet with him, consisting of prayers from the Koran, for full two hours, after which the ceremony concluded.

It had been my original intention to stay only a short time in Cape Town, and set off as soon as I could on a journey into the interior of Africa, and penetrate, if possible, as far as the Great Inner Sea. I was assured that, as a woman, I should have little to dread from the natives, and that even the Dutch farmers and vine-growers, people who are not exactly renowned for the courtesy of their manners, would allow me, since I am a German, to go peaceably on my way. Their ill-will was confined, I was told, to the English, whom they try by every possible method to prevent from penetrating far into the country. The war then going on between the English and the Caffres would by no means have hindered me, since I had no occasion to go near the districts where it was raging; but when I came to make inquiries about the expenses of this journey, I found, alas! that they far exceeded my means, and my fine plan had to be given up. I believe there is no country in the world where traveling is at the same time so tedious and so expensive as here at the Cape. In the first place, you must purchase a long wagon, covered with linen or matting, and five or six pairs of oxen. This wagon must be fitted up like a house, for it is to serve the purpose of a dwelling and of secure nightly quarters; you must engage a driver, an ox-boy, and a servant, and lay in a stock of provisions, and very often of water also, for the journey. There is a great deal of trouble with these oxen. You often pass through districts infested by a little black fly,

Digitized by Google

whose sting is dangerous, and sometimes fatal to them; in other places there is no water to be had, and the poor animals perish of thirst, or, from drinking bad water, they fall sick and become unserviceable, so that you have to change them or buy new ones; and oxen become more and more expensive the further you go from the towns, since in the interior they are very scarce. Sometimes the road or path becomes impassable for oxen or wagon, and you must leave both behind and buy horses. Since for these reasons I was compelled to renounce my project of a journey through the centre of Africa, I began to turn my thoughts toward Australia; but it is not always easy to find the opportunity of reaching it from the Cape; but a Bremen brig, the *Louisa Fredericke*, was now lying in the harbor bound for Singapore, and at Singapore you may find ships to all the regions of the earth. Through the friendly services of an English government officer, Mr. Hoare, I got the passage of three thousand miles almost for nothing, the master, Captain Wienhaber, charging only for my board, and even for that the merest trifle, namely three pounds.

We sailed on the 25th of August with a fair wind, and in forty days reached the Straits of Sunda, a rapidity of progress that made less irksome the monotony of the sea, that otherwise would have been very tedious, for we saw during that interval neither ship nor land. In the Sunda Strait it was very different. Ships and steamers were constantly passing us, and land and mountains rising out of the sea on all sides. Java Head, which first attracted our attention, is a richly-wooded mountain of 4000 feet high, connected with ranges of lower mountains and lovely, smiling hills. After this we scarcely ever lost sight of land again: large or small islands were continually appearing, huge rocky giants rising from the sea, or groups of trees hanging their branches so low down into the water that they looked as if they were growing in it. We sailed through the Sea of Java, along the coast of Sumatra, and reached the Banca Strait, which is so hemmed in by the islands of Banca and Sumatra that it often looks like a broad river. On either shore appeared plains covered with high grass or thick woods, and mountains displaying all the luxuriance of tropical vegetation. The distance from the entrance of the Strait of

Digitized by Google

Sunda to Singapore is not more than seven degrees, but, having to contend with contrary winds and calms, we took fourteen days to it, crossing the equator full half a dozen times, and during several nights coming to anchor. The heat was almost intolerable. It rose in the shade to 92½° Fahr.; but the time nevertheless passed pretty quickly. The captain was an educated man, and moreover could play the flute. The natives of the places we passed occasionally paid us visits, bringing with them poultry and fruit, which they exchanged for handkerchiefs, little looking-glasses, or money, and thus kept our table well provided; and the variety of the ever-changing scenery of the shore amused me so much, that I am afraid I can hardly claim any merit for having borne this fourteen-days' passage with perfect patience.

We had, nevertheless, some disagreeable incidents. One morning a sailor, while employed in furling a sail, fell overboard; and on the very same day the same accident happened to the chief mate, while he was taking soundings. Fortunately there was little or no wind, and both were saved.

One night we were threatened with a still more unpleasant adventure. We were lying at anchor, and, since these seas are frequently infested by pirates, the captain had given strict orders to have a vigilant watch kept. We went to bed, but had scarcely got to sleep when we were startled by the cry from deck, "Two boats in sight from the land!"

Every body sprang up in a moment. Muskets, ammunition, pistols, and sabres were quickly brought on deck and distributed among the crew; our two six-pounders, the only guns we carried, were loaded; and in this grand attitude we awaited the foe. But after all, the two boats never came near us, and we were subsequently told that these pirates scarcely ever do attack European ships.

We reached Singapore on the 16th of November, after a fifty-four days' voyage from the Cape, and I was received by the Behn family with the same kindness as when, four years previously, I visited the place for the first time.

In Singapore itself I found nothing altered; but a magnificent light-house had been built during that time, about twenty miles off

Digitized by Google

the island, on a rock in the sea, where there is so tremendous a surf that the guardians of the light-house are kept furnished with fresh water and provisions for six months. The tower took eighteen months to build, and is constructed of masses of granite brought from the neighboring island of Urbin.

It happened, fortunately for me, that a cottage—built just before my arrival by some families in the country, for the sake of enjoying from time to time a better air—just then stood empty; and as Mr. Behn knew that he could afford me no greater pleasure than that of giving me an opportunity of passing a few days in the midst of the jungle, and enjoying to my heart's content the scenery, and the amusement of searching for insects, etc., he placed this cottage at my disposal, and also a boat with five rowers, that I might be able to visit all the little islands around. These five men, who were Malays, used to come every morning to know whether I wanted the boat, and if I did not, they used to attend me in my rambles through the jungle, help me to find insects, etc., and also serve as my protectors against the numerous tigers that swim hither from Malacca across the narrow arm of the sea that divides the peninsula from Singapore. These animals have of late increased tremendously, and do not hesitate to break into the plantations and carry off the laborers in broad daylight. In the year 1851, it is stated that no less than the almost incredible number of four hundred persons were destroyed by them.

All the horrible stories I was told, however, did not prevent my finding the greatest delight in roaming from morning till evening in these most beautiful woods. My five brown companions were armed with muskets and long and short knives, and from time to time beat the bushes and trees, and uttered precautionary yells, in order to drive away any bad company they might conceal; but I did not feel at all afraid, for I was busy with the beautiful objects that presented themselves to my observation at every step. Here merry little monkeys were springing from bough to bough, there brightly-plumed birds flew suddenly out; plants that seemed to have their roots in the trunks of the trees, twined their flowers and blossoms among the branches, or peeped out from the thick foliage; and then, again, the trees themselves excited my admira-

Digitized by Google

tion by their size, their height, and their wonderful forms. Never shall I forget the happy days I passed in that Singapore jungle, and I herewith send Mr. Behn from afar my acknowledgments for them.

We saw traces of tigers every day; we found the marks of their claws imprinted in the sand or soft earth; and one day at noon one of these unwelcome guests came quite near to our cottage, and fetched himself a dog, which he devoured quite at his leisure only a few hundred steps off. One night, too, I was startled from my sleep by a noise in the gallery near my bedroom. I did not think the sound I heard proceeded from a four-footed animal; but as I was situated, I should have thought biped visitors no less formidable; for at no great distance from the place where I was, there was a sort of government station, where from twenty to thirty criminals were kept, and employed in felling timber. They, in all probability, knew very well that my guards slept in a distant hut, that I was quite alone in the cottage, and that the doors were not, and could not be, locked. I took the precaution, indeed, to have always a large knife near me; but that would most likely have availed me but little, had I really tried to make use of it. I thought it best, however, to put a bold face upon the matter, and cried out in a loud voice, "Who's there?"

I received for an answer that a tiger had been seen, and that they were in pursuit of him—which was perfectly possible; but I did not hear a single shot fired, and the silence of the night was not further disturbed.

The following morning, when a little ape chanced to be playing before the door, and one of my men fired at it, his musket missed fire two or three times running, so that I had reason to congratulate myself that he had not had occasion to use it in earnest in my defense.

The small island of Urbin, not far from Shangae, deserves a visit; for besides the above-mentioned granite, it has a natural curiosity to show which no geologist, I think, has been able satisfactorily to explain. The masses of rock on the sea-shore, namely, instead of being smoothed and rounded as they usually are when constantly washed over by the tides, are angular, sharp-edged,

Digitized by Google

and split into various compartments. The clefts are from a foot to a foot and a half deep, and the edges stand one or two feet apart.

At Singapore I once more changed the plan of my route, and, instead of going to Adelaide in Australia, determined to proceed to the west coast of Borneo, and visit Sarawak, the independent territory of the English Rajah, Brooke. Captain Layell, of the *Trident* (320 tons), was so obliging as to offer to take me for an extremely moderate price.

The distance from Singapore to the town of Sarawak is estimated at 450 miles; and we took twelve days to get to Cape Datoo, at the mouth of the river Sarawak, which is here a mile broad. Another half day we had to lie at anchor in the roads, waiting to enter the river with the flood-tide, after which we had five-and-twenty miles to sail up the stream. With respect to Sir James Brooke, I find in Keppel's "Expedition to Borneo" that he was born in 1803, and went at an early age as a cadet to India, where he greatly distinguished himself, but was compelled to return to England in consequence of a wound. Subsequently he returned to the service, but his health had suffered so much that he was not able to resume the same active duty, and in 1830 he went from Calcutta to China for change of air and recreation. It was on this voyage that he became acquainted with, and deeply interested in, the Eastern Archipelago. He read all the best works that had been written concerning this part of the world, and soon attained to the conviction that the Eastern Islands, and especially Borneo, offered a rich field for inquiry and enterprise. His principal objects were to abolish the slave-trade; to suppress, or at least check, the piracy so prevalent here; and to endeavor to humanize the natives. With these objects in view he returned to England, where he had to contend with innumerable obstacles before it was possible for him to proceed to the execution of his plan; but in the year 1838, he at length left England in a small but well-fitted war-schooner, with a crew whom during the preceding year he had been carefully training for his undertaking; and "if ever," says Captain Keppel, "there was a man thoroughly fitted for such an enterprise, it was James Brooke. To distinguished

Digitized by Google

understanding, rapid power of comprehension, great decision of character, and all good qualities of head and heart, he added that of a most pleasant and open demeanor."

On the arrival of Sir James Brooke at Borneo, he found the territories of the Rajah Muda Hassim in a state of complete discord and disorder; but by his help they were in the course of two years restored to perfect tranquillity; and he then directed his attention to the pirates, and succeeded in entirely freeing that part of the coast from their scourge. In gratitude for his assistance, Muda Hassim resigned to him the district of Sarawak, and appointed him Rajah of it; and in 1841 Sir James Brooke took possession of it, and was acknowledged both by the Sultan of Borneo and the English authorities as its proprietor and prince. The results of his just and energetic government soon showed themselves over the whole country. The population of the town of Sarawak rose in ten years from 1500 to 10,000, and that of the country increased proportionally by numerous emigrations from the surrounding territories. Even the wild, free Dyaks know his name, and honor him as the liberator of their countrymen, who formerly lived as slaves under the yoke of the Malays, but whom Rajah Brooke has now placed on a footing of equality with them. Every one can in his dominions enjoy in peace the fruits of his industry; the trader may devote his attention entirely to his business; the peasant may have for nothing as much land as he can till, and moreover as much rice as will serve for seed, and for his support till the next harvest-time. The laborer can find employment in the gold, diamond, and antimony mines. The taxes are extremely trifling: the tradesman pays a mere trifle on his shop, the peasant a picul (125 pounds) of rice, and the laborer nothing at all. The chief revenue of the Rajah, besides that from the antimony mines, is derived from the cultivation of opium, which forms the great source of profit for the governments, not only here but throughout India. I shall have occasion subsequently to speak further of this monopoly. The Malays do not smoke much, so that at Sarawak, as every where else, the Chinese are the great customers for it.

I regretted exceedingly that I had not an opportunity of becom-

Digitized by Google

ing personally acquainted with Sir James Brooke, as, at the time of my arrival, he was absent; but his place was filled temporarily by Captain John Brooke, whom he has adopted as a son and heir of his title and domains. Scarcely had Captain Brooke heard that I was on board the *Trident*, than he sent down his own convenient proa, under the command of Captain Grimbel, to shorten for me the passage of the river, which for ships is often very tedious. The *Trident* had, indeed, I afterward learned, full three days' work to get up, while I had reached the town in four hours. A *proa*, I may mention, is a boat of from twenty to eighty feet long, and from six to eight broad, which draws very little water. These boats are frequently made use of by the pirates, as they can run with them into the mouth of any river, and easily escape from pursuit.

The banks of the river Sarawak are low, and in many places overflowed, so as to form a series of morasses. The first ten or twelve miles from the sea are covered on both sides with nipa and mangrove palms, both which are of incalculable utility. They have no trunks, but the leaves, which are from twelve to fifteen feet long, shoot up directly from the root. Every part of the plant is serviceable. The walls of huts are built with the ribs of the leaves, and the leaves themselves form the roof, or they are burned to ashes for the sake of a salt obtained from them. Mats and baskets are woven from the fibres; and from a juice obtained by boiling the leaves, a kind of sirup is made.

Nearer to the town the banks rise higher, and the country becomes hilly, while in the distance appear ranges of mountains, among which are the Matang and Santaborg, 3000 feet high. One feature of the country appeared to me peculiar, namely, that of steep mountains, rising to a height of several thousand feet, and with peaked tops, which seemed to have no connection with any other mountain or hill, but stood quite free in the middle of a plain.

The population, both on the sea-coast and the banks of the river, is extremely scanty; indeed, until I came within about eight miles of the town, I saw only a single house, which was about a hundred feet long, and stood on piles twenty feet high, near the mouth of

Digitized by Google

the river. It was inhabited by Dyaks. After this there is no appearance of human habitation.

In former times the coast was uninhabited for a distance of twenty or thirty miles inland, for the dread of pirates was such that no one ventured to build a hut within their reach. Since the arrival of Rajah Brooke, however, as I have said, the west and north coasts are entirely free from these ferocious invaders.

I was received at the landing-place of Sarawak by Captain Brooke in person, and he accompanied me to his uncle's house. When I presented my letter of introduction, he was so kind as to assure me that my name was so well known to him that any other introduction was unnecessary.

The town of Sarawak has neither streets nor squares; but consists of a throng of huts, crowded together without any order or symmetry. They are constructed out of the nipa palm, and stand on piles eight or ten feet high—a mode of building that is said to be imitated from the Chinese. The entrance is by a ladder, the rungs of which are so wide apart that, for an unpracticed climber, it is somewhat dangerous to attempt to get in. Still more dangerous, however, is the floor of the house itself when you have got in, as it consists only of coarsely-plaited net-work of thin smooth bamboo canes, very slippery, and in the interstices of which your feet are continually catching. Proceeding to the interior parts of the house, you find the grating somewhat closer, and generally covered with matting. Of furniture there is of course little enough—some wooden boxes and baskets, a few straw mats and cushions, some earthen vessels for cooking, a gong, a *parang* (a knife a foot and a half long), and some *clambus*. These are a kind of canopy, with cambric muslin curtains that hang down to the ground. They are about five feet high and as many broad, and are used to form separate sleeping apartments for grown girls and unmarried people, as well as for a protection against mosquitoes. They are very light, and can be put up any where. The lower space in the hut, beneath the grated floor, is used as a dwelling-place for fowls, dogs, and other animals. Among the Chinese inhabitants it is usually populous with pigs, and is a real dunghill, from which every kind of dirt is thrown up through the grated floor.

Digitized by Google

The population of Sarawak consists of Malays and Chinese; for the few Dyaks you see form no families; they are mostly either in service, or they have come here on business. The Chinese and Malays inhabit separate quarters of the town, and the former depart in nothing from the habits of life and costume of their native country, though they are compelled to one change, namely, that of seeking for wives among the Malays or Dyaks, as the Chinese government does not permit their women to emigrate; and a Chinese woman who should disregard the prohibition would forfeit any property she might possess, and would never be allowed to return. Most of the Chinese in Borneo take wives from among the Dyaks, as the Dyak women are much more industrious than the Malays, and have the advantage of not professing any religion, so that they easily accommodate themselves to their husbands in this respect, or, rather, do not seem conscious of the necessity of any accommodation.

The Chinese population may be regarded both as a benefit and an injury to a country in which they settle. On the one hand, they are industrious and persevering in all that they undertake; but, at the same time, they are in the highest degree covetous, artful, and untrustworthy. In Sarawak they have got all the commerce, as well as the business of the mines, and the greater part of the mechanical trades, into their hands. They get all the profit away from the idle Malays, as well as overreach and defraud the more simple and honest Dyaks in every possible way. The Malays are Mohammedans, but vary in many of their customs from their Oriental fellow-believers. They allow, for instance, much freedom to their women, who may go freely in and out, and not only wear no vails, but go clothed in almost too airy a manner. Most of them wear only one garment—the *sarang*—a large piece of stuff, which is wrapped round them, fastened above or below the breast, and descends to the feet. Some eke out this rather scanty costume with a kind of short jacket (*cabay*), or a longer upper garment, called a *padjee*. The wives of persons of the higher class seldom go out; but this is merely from indolence, and is not to be attributed to prohibition, for they may receive any visitors at home.

The costume of the men differs very little from that of the wo-

Digitized by Google

men. Like them they wear the sarang and the cabay, and sometimes even the padjet. The short trowsers they wear are covered by the sarang, and at the first glance it would often be impossible to distinguish the sexes, did not the men twist a handkerchief round their heads, while the women wear their hair uncovered.

Marriages are made here without any great ceremony, and very easily unmade. Each party may separate when it pleases him or her; and you meet with many, both men and women, who have changed their "better halves" at least half a dozen times. The female sex is not here remarkable for beauty of any kind, but the figures of the women are better than their faces. They have projecting cheek-bones, great mouths, with black teeth, and long hanging under lips; so that it will be admitted, I think, that they can not be called handsome, notwithstanding the brilliant jetty polish conferred on the said teeth by antimony and other kinds of blacking—regarded by the Malays as a great charm. Some of the more dressy ladies file them half away, or cut them to sharp points. The frightful extension of the lower lip is occasioned by the *siri* which they chew, and usually stick between the lower teeth and lip. Their noses are flat, and the nostrils broad; their figures are usually of the middle size, and less slender than those of the men; their complexions reddish brown, of a lighter or darker shade; their hair and eyes black. Their hands and feet are small, but thin and bony.

They begin to chew this *siri* at the age of eight or ten years. It consists of a thin betel leaf, with a piece of areca nut, with a little burned chalk and gambir, wrapped in it. Before putting this little packet into their mouths they rub the teeth and lips in a disgusting manner with tobacco, and presently the saliva and the whole mouth becomes of blood red. This horrid custom is so much in favor that old people, who have not teeth enough to chew the siri, carry about with them a little tube in which to pound it.

The country round Sarawak is very pretty, and rendered prettier by a few European houses that are scattered about on the hills around, where are also a small fort, a neat church and mission-house, and a court of justice. All these edifices—Rajah Brooke's not excepted—are built of wood.

Digitized by Google

The mission-house contains, besides a school for the natives, one for twenty-four children, mostly whites, who are entirely provided for. The little fort, though it does possess a few guns, has no garrison, for Rajah Brooke is too much beloved and respected, not only by his own subjects, but by all neighboring people, for him to have any need of arms.

I visited the houses of some of the most distinguished Malays, who were once formidable pirate chiefs, but have been transformed into peaceful citizens, and, in some instances indeed, into useful servants of the Rajah's government.

The dwellings of these wealthy Malays consist, like those of their poorer brethren, in one room only, but much larger, often not less than fifty feet long, and broad in proportion; these contain, besides the chambers, some other little divisions made with partitions of leaves. Handsome mats and carpets too are found in them; but the chief riches consist in gongs, weapons, and *balangas*. The latter are large earthen vessels of a vase-like shape, from two to four feet high, adorned with arabesques, but still not looking as if they were of any value. I should have taken no notice of them, or regarded them merely as intended to hold water, had they not been specially pointed out to my attention; and I was very much surprised when I was told that they are worth from a hundred to several thousand rupees each (a rupee is about two shillings). I almost thought there must have been some exaggeration in this statement, but I was assured that the possessor of one of these vases, if he had need of money, could always easily procure it, for any one would advance him either a part or the whole of the worth of this mysteriously valuable property.

What is still more curious, is that no one knows either where they come from or for what use they were intended. It is conjectured that they have been brought from China, and the Chinese of the present day make the most exact imitations of them, but a connoisseur will nevertheless know the real from the imitation at a glance.

Since I had a wish to become acquainted with the Dyak inhabitants, Captain Brooke had the goodness to propose to me an



Digitized by Google

excursion to one of their settlements, though he warned me I must be a good climber for such an undertaking, as the Dyaks do not like living in plains, but build their huts on the points of rocks, the higher and more inaccessible the better. In former times they probably did this for the sake of security, and now under the tranquil government of Rajah Brooke they continue to do so from habit.

The object of our present excursion was the mountain Sarambo, about 1500 feet high, upon which some eighty families have taken up their abode under a chief. We set out on our little journey on the 20th of December, at 11 o'clock at night, in a boat on the river Sarawak. The night was very dark, and threatened rain, but neither rain nor darkness was likely to occasion us any damage. The proa was well decked, brightly lighted, and divided by curtains into various apartments, in one of which a soft couch under a mosquito-net was made ready for me. The tide was in our favor, and when I awoke on the following morning we were just landing at a Chinese settlement consisting of two rows of huts, forming a little street. I saw here that the Chinese have no more objection to dirt than the Malays; the only difference is that the Malay puts his house upon piles, and lives over the filth, and the Chinese keeps it before his door.

Captain Brooke had sent servants, provisions, and cooking utensils on before us, so that we very soon had a most excellent meal. The company consisted of two Europeans, besides Captain Brooke and myself. After breakfast the pedestrian journey began, and a merry troop of Dyaks, to whom our coming had been made known the day before, surrounded our party, every one begging to carry something in order to earn a little tobacco. We had about twenty in our suite, some of them carrying nothing more than a little sauce-pan; but they received not the less from Captain Brooke—a handsome allowance of tobacco and of the copper coins that he was distributing among their companions. The path led round the foot of the mountain through broad, well-cultivated rice plantations, above which, rugged and abrupt, the mountain itself rose out of the plain.

I had heard much of the bad roads in Borneo, but I was really

Digitized by Google

astonished, nevertheless, when I saw the path—absolutely perilous to life—that led to the summit. Pools, marshes, brooks, and chasms were to be crossed by means of two bamboo sticks, or the thin, round trunk of a young tree; and to climb up almost perpendicular cliffs, there was no other help than one of these thin stems, in which a few notches were made for the foot to rest in, to steady you for a moment. At the most dangerous places there was, indeed, a sort of hand-rail, but of such fragile construction that a fall would have been inevitable had one leaned upon it in earnest; so that I was obliged to keep my eyes constantly fixed upon the path I had to tread, and could not give the smallest attention to the beauty of the surrounding scenery. Only when, from time to time, we came to a halting-place, did I find leisure to contemplate with admiration the rich luxuriance of the woods we were traversing, and the superb climbing plants and orchidaceæ. The palms, and especially the Sago species, are of larger size in Borneo than I have ever seen any where else; but its wealth of flowers and birds is not equal to that of Singapore. I was told, indeed, that this was not the flower season; but I remained six months in Borneo without finding reason to alter my opinion.

At a height of 1200 feet we came to the first Dyak habitation, a great hut fifty feet long and about as many broad, the entire furniture of which consisted in a number of sleeping-places ranged round the walls. It is, it seems, a custom among the Dyaks for the young men of a tribe to sleep all in the same dormitory, under the superintendence of a chief, and at some hundred paces from the parents' village. These huts serve at the same time for a place of rendezvous for feasts, and for the preservation of war-trophies, which consist of the heads of their slain enemies. I could not look without horror at a row of no less than six-and-thirty of these agreeable memorials hung up in ornamental style like a garland of flowers, and with the sockets of the eyes filled with white oval shells.

Rajah Brooke has put an end to this practice of cutting off heads in the district of Sarawak, but the natives still look fondly at their old skulls, the memorials of a sanguinary past time, and

Digitized by Google

doubtless to them associated with the recollection of what they regard as deeds of glory, very much as the tattered flags that we hang up in our public buildings are to us.

We continued our wanderings till we came to the neighboring village, which consisted of two great huts, each more than 150 feet long, built on piles, and standing opposite one another. The mode of entrance was by notched trunks of trees, placed against them like ladders, and always drawn up at night. Each hut had a spacious covered hall or vestibule, with doors all round, leading to the chambers of the several families, most of which have one and sometimes two little rooms to themselves. These contain places adapted for sleeping and cooking, and serve to stow away the little household utensils; but the large hall is the actual dwelling-place. Here they carry on their various occupations, here the children tumble about, and here the aged people rest. There is, indeed, quite the appearance of what we may call domestic life among these Dyaks. The women work at plaiting mats and baskets, and the men cut very pretty little boxes for tobacco or siri, as well as handsome handles for parangs.

There are fire-places in this hall as well as in the private chambers, but they seem used rather for lighting than cooking. A few years ago the fresh human heads used to be hung up over them to dry and smoke, after which they were carried in great state to the place of honor in the hut of the chief. The Dyaks, like the Malays, are in the habit of residing over a puddle or dung-hill, in which pigs, dogs, and fowls rout about as it pleases them; and it is difficult to imagine, in looking at these filthy holes, how the people living over them can ever be free from fever. But I heard nothing of it, though I saw many signs of cutaneous disease and tumors among them. From the latter the men appear to suffer much more than the women; but with these exceptions I could not find that they were subject to malady.

These Dyaks are not more highly endowed in the matter of personal beauty than the Malays; they have flat noses, very broad nostrils, immense mouths, pale thick lips, and projecting jaws. They also beautify their teeth in the same manner as the Malays, by filing them to a sharp point and staining them black. The

Digitized by Google

expression of their ugly faces is nevertheless serene and good-tempered, but mostly, it must be owned, somewhat stupid, probably, in a great measure, from a prevalent fashion of keeping the mouth open. Their color is light brown, their eyes and hair black; the men wear it short, but with the women it hangs down long, lank, and unplaited. The deportment of the ladies is certainly unpleasant, as they walk with their feet wide apart, and their stomachs as much stuck out as possible. This not very elegant carriage appears to me to be peculiar to women of the Malay race; at least, I have often noticed it among them, and not among any others.

The costume of the Dyaks must be admitted to have the merit of simplicity, for a gentleman's entire wardrobe often consists of a strip of bast of about a hand's-breadth passed round his middle, and sometimes, but not often, a similar strip round his head; but he adorns himself, nevertheless, with as many glass beads and brass rings as he can hang about him. The men have many more of these decorations than the women; indeed, I rather think the wearing glass beads is a privilege of the superior sex, for I very seldom saw a lady in possession of one. The long, broad knife called a parang is always worn by the men at one side, and a small pretty basket containing the ingredients of siri at the other.

The Dyak women wear a scanty petticoat reaching from the loins to the ankle, and round their waists several brass bands, or bamboo canes stained black, and forming a girdle of from two to eight inches broad, according to the opulence of the wearer. The girls put on these girdles when they emerge from the period of childhood, which in this country is usually in their tenth year. They are worn very tight, and weigh fifteen pounds, and they are only afterward laid aside when the wearer is about shortly to become a mother. Some have the arm from the wrist to the elbow covered with brass rings, and holes in the cartilage of their ears large enough for a piece of wood an inch in diameter to pass through. Tattooing is not fashionable, but feet, nails, and fingertips are worn of a red-brown color.

We passed the remainder of the day and night among these

Digitized by Google

people. In the evening Captain Brooke entertained them with brandy, of which they are very fond, and then requested them to favor us, in return, with a dance. They did not seem much inclined to comply with this request, and took a great deal of pressing; however, they stood up at last, and began. The dance they performed was a very quiet and sedate one, and gave, like the Hindoo dances, more occupation for the hands and arms than for the feet. It may be performed either by a man alone, or by a man and woman, as in this instance; and the woman made the same movements as the man, but kept her eyes so constantly fixed on the ground, that they appeared to be closed. None of the dancers continued the exercise long, but were soon relieved by other performers of a *pas seul* or *pas de deux*, as might be, to the tuneful accompaniment of an orchestra consisting of two drums and a gong.

During this entertainment the Dyaks who did not dance sat perfectly still—indeed motionless—with a certain tranquil seriousness in their faces that appears to characterize them. Nowhere have I been so little tormented by impertinent curiosity as among these people.

On the following morning we resumed our journey; and if I had found the ascent of the mountains difficult, it may be supposed the descent was not less so, especially as heavy rain had fallen in the night, and made the paths soft and slippery. I soon found it absolutely necessary to pull off my shoes, and go barefoot over stock and stone, through thorns and thistles, and thus continue my pilgrimage down into the valley.

At Simawan we again breakfasted, and then, entering the boat, rowed five miles further up the river Sarawak; then landed again, and walked three miles up a narrow valley, where we found ourselves in the midst of the antimony mines.

Mine, indeed, is not the word; for the ore lies in such abundance on the very surface of the ground, that no mining is required. The ground merely has to be broken with pickax and hammer, and the pieces of ore packed into baskets, and carried down to the river. One of the Chinese laborers here will carry, by means of a pole, with a basket at each end, a weight of two

Digitized by Google

*piculs* (250 pounds), and run with the burden, moreover, at a pretty quick rate. The ore is said to yield ninety per cent. of antimony.

From these antimony mines, or rather beds, we went to a summer residence of Rajah Brooke, to which is attached a small farm, where some dozens of cows are kept, and milk and butter made daily, which is sent to the Rajah's kitchen.

Cows and horses are found in Borneo only among Europeans; the former degenerate very rapidly, and give little milk, and their calves die in great numbers; horses, also, do not live so long as in their native countries, and do not continue the species; but, to make amends for the scarcity of more familiar animals, I saw at Rajah Brooke's a grand specimen of the nose-ape, two of the largest orang-outangs, and a honey-bear, an animal found only in Borneo.

On the 24th of December we returned to Sarawak.

Digitized by Google

## CHAPTER III.

Departure from Sarawak.—Compelled Return.—Journey to Scaran.—The Independent Dyaks.—Human Heads.—Journey along the Luppa.—Night of Horror.—Encounter with a Tribe at War.—Crossing the Schämel Mountain.—Ceremonious Reception by the Sultan of Sintang.

When I had nothing more to see in Sarawak I wished to continue my journey. My plan was to go by sea to the river Scaran, and then to follow its course inland as far as the range of mountains called the Schämel, which forms the water-shed of the streams running east and west; then to cross these mountains, ship myself again on the waters flowing westward, and so by a great circuit reach Poutianah, a Dutch settlement on the west coast of Borneo. Captain Brooke took a great deal of pains to dissuade me from this undertaking; he assured me that the interior of the country was full of wild, mostly independent tribes of Dyaks, and that he himself, as a man, would hesitate to attempt such a journey. I did not, however, allow myself to be frightened, but remained steady to my resolution; and, though I did not take his advice, Captain Brooke had the kindness to order his gun-boat, under command of Captain Grimble, to be got ready to take me to Sambas, at the mouth of the river Scaran, and a proa to carry me thence up the river to the fort of the same name.

The preparation of the boat, and still more the bad weather, detained me ten days in Sarawak, but they were passed very agreeably; and on the 31st of December Captain Brooke invited all the Europeans to a dinner, at which there was of course no deficiency of toasts. The first was, as usual, the Queen; the second, the absent Rajah; I was honored with the third; and for the fourth I begged to propose the gentlemen present; and thus gayly we saw together the entrance of the new year. On the 1st of January the weather brightened up, the sun again looked kindly down upon us, and Captain Brooke sent for all the children from the mission-house, and gave them a merry new-year's day.

Digitized by Google

The children ran and romped about in the garden, and the natives amused themselves with rowing matches on the river, at the conclusion of which Captain Brooke made presents to the visitors.

On the 5th of January, 1852, I set forth in the company of a missionary, who proposed establishing himself at Scaran, to prosecute my journey. We got down the river in safety, but found the sea so rough and stormy that it was impossible to make any way. One heavy sea that struck us carried away our bowsprit, and another washed the caboose (kitchen) and the entire dinner that was just got ready there overboard. After this it was resolved to give it up for the present, and the next day we were again at anchor before Sarawak.

Captain Brooke told me I ought to regard these difficulties as a warning, and give up my plan; but I replied that, though a woman and an old one, I did not allow myself to be troubled by omens.

Gales of wind and heavy rains continued for several days. No one could recollect such a continuance of bad weather, at least for a very long period; but the Malays accounted for it to their satisfaction by an eclipse of the moon that took place on the 8th.

Under these circumstances the voyage in the gun-boat was considered impracticable. If I would go, I was told I should have to venture it in the proa, in which I could keep close inshore, and run into every river. I accepted the offer, and the proa was accordingly prepared. On the 11th I embarked once more, and in the midst of a deluge of rain. Captain Brooke had given me a Malay guide; but the missionary staid behind, being *afraid of sea-sickness!* Captain Grimble tried to insist on accompanying me, but this I would not allow.

We found the sea still in very bad humor; and it sent wave after wave over us, so that the proa was soon half full of water; but after a struggle of some hours we got as far as a small river, into which we retreated for the night. The next day the weather had somewhat improved, and on the third we gained the mouth of the Scaran. Here both wind and tide were in our favor, and we did the sixty-nine miles to the fort in nine hours.



Digitized by Google

Commandant Lee received me with all possible courtesy in this wooden fort, which Rajah Brooke had had built shortly before, as the frontier of his dominions. It is surrounded by low earthen walls, and manned by a garrison of about thirty native soldiers; but Mr. Lee and another officer are the only Europeans.

The river Scaran is a rather more considerable one than the Sarawak, but divides itself thirty miles from the mouth into two arms, upon the smaller of which, called the Luppa, the fort is situated. The banks are variously covered with nipa palms, trees of rich foliage, jungle grass, and plantations of rice. The waters of the Scaran, like those of the Sarawak, are continually encroaching on the land; indeed with most of the rivers of Borneo the banks are so low that they stand under water for miles.

Mr. Lee had been forewarned of my arrival, and had communicated the intelligence to the natives, so that they came flocking from all sides to see me, for such an astonishing spectacle as a white woman had never yet been witnessed in their country. From morning till night, therefore, I had to present myself to be gazed at; but I must do my visitors, both Malays and Dyaks, the justice to say that they behaved with much modesty and discretion, and their curiosity was not at all troublesome. They merely held out their hands to me, and then sat down and stared at me in silence. Some of the Dyak women had on a sort of short garment when they came in, but they coolly took it off in the room, and laid it down.

The next day I again had visitors; but as I found that the Malays here were in every respect precisely like those of Sarawak, I did not allow them to detain me long, but preferred paying a visit to one of the independent tribes of Dyaks in the neighborhood of Scaran.

Here I found a great hut, at least 200 feet long, and such a quantity of goods spread out, that I should have taken these Dyaks for traders, if there were any traders among them. There were cotton cloths, and stuffs made of bast; superb mats; beautifully plaited baskets; the costly vases, the value set on which had so much perplexed me; parangs, drums, gongs, all kinds of treasures, in short, displayed; and an immense quantity of prepared

Digitized by Google

bamboos and nipa palms: not forgetting a goodly store of sacks of rice and other provisions.

I saw also among these Dyaks a great deal more finery than among those I had seen on the Sarambo mountains. Many of the men were literally loaded with it. Their throats and breasts were entirely covered with glass beads, shells, and the teeth of the honey-bear. Their arms up to the elbow, their legs to the calf, were encircled with brass bands; some wore a sort of armlet elaborately cut out of a white shell, which is regarded as of great value among them; but the most precious ornaments of all are necklaces and bracelets of human teeth.

Their ears were pierced, and adorned sometimes with as many as fifteen rings, each increasing in size till the largest reached three inches in diameter, and hung down on the shoulder, with a leaf, a flower, or some other little ornament fastened to it. Many wore on their heads small red caps decorated with beads and shells, brass plates, or lofty plumes of the beautiful argus bird; others had a piece of bast stuff rolled round their heads, with the ends stuck up and spread out to look like feathers as much as possible; but the gentlemen whose heads were thus elaborately full-dressed wore nothing whatever on the rest of their persons, so that the effect, on the whole, was somewhat singular.

The women, as usual, were by no means so fine: they had no ear-rings, no bears' teeth, and very few beads; but their girdles were nine inches broad, and adorned with an immense number of shining brass and leaden rings. I lifted up one of these ornaments, and I certainly do not think I exaggerate when I say it weighed twenty pounds.

Mr. Lee requested the chief to let the sword dance be performed; and accordingly two parangs were laid crosswise upon the ground, and two gayly-decorated young warriors presented themselves as dancers. They had narrow red scarfs with gold borders twisted round their heads, and a long colored piece of stuff thrown over their shoulders. The dance was very graceful and decorous, and gave employment to feet as well as hands and arms; the performers threw themselves into fine attitudes, and executed very skillful movements. First they danced for a few minutes round

Digitized by Google

the swords, appearing as if desirous of lifting them up, but, whenever they moved forward to take them, sprang back as if seized with sudden horror, until they at length really seized them, and manœuvred them in the most masterly manner, like well-practiced fencers. It was certainly the finest dance I had ever seen performed by savages. The accompanying instruments were, as usual, two drums and a gong.

On the same day I paid a visit to another tribe further on, and found little difference from what I had observed among the first, except that I had the pleasure here of seeing a pair of handsome war-trophies in two freshly-cut-off human heads.

These trophies had not, indeed, been wanting among the other tribe, but they had been dried, and made into mere skulls. These, on the contrary, had only been taken a few days before, and had a horrible appearance. They were blackened by smoke, the flesh only half dried, the skin unconsumed, lips and ears shriveled together, the former standing wide apart, so as to display the teeth in all their hideousness. The heads were still covered with hair; and one had even the eyes open, though drawn far back into their sockets. The Dyaks took these heads out of the baskets in which they were hanging, in order to exhibit them to me with great complacency. It was a sight that I shall not easily forget!

As they took these heads in their hands to show them to me, they spat in the dead faces; and the boys struck them and spat on the ground, while their usually quiet and peaceful physiognomies assumed an extremely savage expression. I shuddered, but could not help asking myself whether, after all, we Europeans are not really just as bad or worse than these despised savages? Is not every page of our history filled with horrid deeds of treachery and murder? What shall we say to the religious wars of Germany and France—to the conquest of America—to the deeds of violence and blood in the Middle Ages—to the Spanish Inquisition?

And even if we come to more modern times, in which we are outwardly more refined, are we at bottom more mild and merciful to our enemies? Not merely a wretched hut among the wild and ignorant Dyaks, but spacious halls and vast palaces might be decorated by many a European sovereign with the heads that

Digitized by Google

have fallen a sacrifice to his selfish ambition. Would not the wars of Napoleon furnish millions? Since the beginning of the world, how many wars have there not been which might be attributed to the greediness and lust of dominion generally of a single individual? And if we add to the thousands and tens of thousands who have, even in the most recent times, been destroyed in war, the numbers, still more pitiable, who have perished slowly in dungeons, or who have fallen victims to unhealthy climates, or any of the other incalculable miseries that war brings in its train, I do not think we Europeans can venture to say much about the cruelty of these ignorant savages, who kill their enemies (as we do), but do not torture them, and, for what they do, may plead in excuse that they are without the light of religion or of intellectual culture. Can we with a very clear conscience preach to them upon the subject of mildness, mercy, and aversion to bloodshed?

In some books of travels I have read that the Dyaks are in the habit of laying human heads at the feet of the objects of their affections, by way of love-token; but the Dutch traveler, Temmink, contradicts this, and I believe he is right, for human heads are not always so easy to get. A young gentleman who might wish to pay his lady-love so pretty a compliment would often be greatly perplexed how to come by one, as a head is what an enemy can not in general be very readily induced to part with.

I rather think this unpleasant custom of head-hunting originates in some kind of superstition; for when, for instance, a rajah falls sick, or goes on a journey, it is common for him to vow a head to his tribe in case of recovery or of safe return. Should he die, one or two heads are usually offered by the tribe as a kind of sacrifice; and in the same manner, when a treaty of peace is concluded between two tribes, a man is sometimes given up on each side to be beheaded, though it is rather more customary to make a pig answer the purpose.

When a head has once been vowed, it has to be procured at any sacrifice, and the Dyaks then go and lie in wait for an opportunity to get one. They hide themselves in the jungle grass, which is from three to six feet high, or among trees, or leafy branches that have been cut off, and lie watching for their victim; and then the

Digitized by Google

first human creature that approaches, man, woman, or child, is sacrificed. They first shoot a poisoned arrow from their ambush, and then spring like tigers upon their prey. With a single blow they separate the head from the body, cutting it off quite close and smooth, with a dexterity that shows considerable practice; they then carefully conceal the body, and put the head into a basket kept expressly for this purpose, and decorated with human hair. A murder of this kind always occasions a war; for the tribe, a member of which has been thus killed, immediately takes the field, and does not rest until it has obtained one or two heads as damages; and these are then brought home in triumph, with dances and songs, and solemnly placed among other treasures of the same kind. The rejoicings and feastings that follow last a whole month.

The Dyaks are so very fond of heads, that when, as sometimes happens, they undertake a feud or a piratical expedition, in company with the Malays, they only stipulate for these fancy articles as their share of the booty, and willingly resign all the rest to their more covetous allies.

The women and children generally go with them on such expeditions; but they are never undertaken till the rice-harvest is over, as that is of too much importance to be neglected, even for a head-hunt.

I regretted not to have come a week sooner, for I should then have witnessed the ceremonies accompanying the conclusion of a peace between two independent and hitherto hostile tribes, whom the zealous endeavors of Rajah Brooke had at length succeeded in reconciling. Mr. Lee informed me that the two chiefs, or rajahs, came to the appointed spot accompanied by twenty or thirty of their people. Each party brought a pig, and, after long speeches on both sides, the heads of the animals were cut off—not, however, by Dyaks, but by Malays. If the head falls at one blow, it is considered lucky; and these pigs are not eaten, but thrown into the river. The treaty is made, not according to years, for this mode of reckoning is unknown to them, but for so many rice-harvests.

Mr. Lee, like Captain Brooke, endeavored to dissuade me from my purpose of penetrating into the interior of the country. In-

Digitized by Google

formation had reached him, he said, that a chief of a tribe had been lately killed there, and that, in consequence, the whole district was involved in war. I was determined to go as far as I could, however, notwithstanding this kind solicitude for my safety, and I embarked accordingly on the 22d of *January* upon the Luppa, with the intention of going up the stream as far as the Schämel mountains. I had with me the servant given me by Captain Brooke, eight Malay boatmen, and Mr. Lee's cook, whom he was good enough to send with me as steersman, and who was of the greatest use, as he spoke some words of English, as well as the language of the country.

On leaving the fort, we entered immediately the territory of the free Dyaks, and, indeed, of some who are considered particularly fierce. Early in the afternoon we arrived at one of their settlements, and I stopped and determined to pass the night there; and, as I always made it a practice to do, approached them with the utmost kindness and cordiality, shook hands with both men and women, sat down in the midst of them, took the children on my lap, and so forth. After this, I set off on a ramble into the forest, in which, I need hardly say, I was accompanied by the whole troop of natives, with all their children.

They wanted to see where I was going to, what I wanted with the butterflies, etc., what was the use of the box in which I preserved them, and which I always carried with me; in short, they contemplated my doings with full as much curiosity as I did theirs.

At first they laughed at me amazingly when they saw me running after all sorts of "small deer;" but I had no sooner made them understand that these insects were useful in the preparation of medicines than the laughers became diligent assistants in the search, and I have them to thank for many valuable specimens. That savages should laugh at things of this kind was of course to be expected; but I did not suppose I should have had the same ignorant ridicule to encounter in several of the so-called civilized European colonies, and even in the United States of America. Sometimes those ladies and gentlemen carried their merriment so far that I could not help asking whether any of them had ever seen a museum; and if they had, whether they supposed the in-

Digitized by Google

sects had needed to be caught, or had betaken themselves there of their own accord, out of zeal for science.

With the evening twilight we returned from our ramble, and I found a place prepared for me and spread with nice clean mats. The people sat down near me, it is true, but they did not touch a thing belonging to me. They even showed so much respect for my property as to go away from the place when I left it, and I was able to leave all my things lying about without the least fear. When I was eating, also, they went a little further from me, in order not to put any constraint upon me. They entertained me with a kind of curry of fowls and rice—the latter, alas! strongly flavored with rancid cocoa-nut oil; but, as I had tasted nothing whatever the whole day, hunger compelled me to eat some of it, though I was obliged to stop my nostrils and get through the meal as fast as I possibly could.

The Dyaks remained late up in the evening, but at eleven o'clock their fires were extinguished, and then thick darkness surrounded me. I was quite alone with them, cut off from all human help, among these enthusiastic head collectors; but I did not feel at all afraid, for I knew that Rajah Brooke's name had penetrated thus far, and that I could rest in safety under the shelter of the esteem and respect it inspired.

*January 23d.* Nothing particular occurred during the following day. We passed in the morning several Dyak settlements without the slightest disturbance, and in the afternoon again made a halt with one of the tribes. Here things did not just now look very comfortable, for the tribe had only returned two days before from the wars, and had brought with them a head, which was hung up, along with two others nearly dry, over the fire-place and close to my bed. This was because the place nearest these valued trophies is the place of honor, and always to be offered to a distinguished guest; so my refusing it was out of the question. My situation, however, became a very painful one. The wind rushing through the hut rattled the dry skulls continually one against another, and the vapor and stench from the fresh head was suffocating, and from time to time driven by the wind right into my face. The people, too, appeared to be in a strangely excited state, and,

Digitized by Google

long after the fires had been put out, kept moving about my bed in the dark. Sleep was impossible, and I got by degrees into a perfect fever of terror; I could not remain lying down, and yet I did not dare to leave my bed. I sat up, therefore, and remained sitting, and expecting, I own, every moment to feel the knife at my throat, until at length the morning dawned, and I sank back completely exhausted on my couch.

Traveling in Borneo is a very slow operation. In the lovely early mornings it is impossible to induce the boatmen to set off, for they insist on first cooking their rice, and for this they take as much time as a professed cook would among us to prepare a grand dinner. When they have set off too, they are continually laying down their oars, now to prepare siri, and then to make straw cigars and smoke them; so that on an average more than half of the people are never at work. I do not think I ever had my patience more severely tried than during this journey; and the Malay attendant whom Captain Brooke had given me, and who he thought would have been of the greatest service to me, was the most intolerable of all. Probably his behavior would have been very different to a master from what it was to a woman, whom he considered entirely dependent on him.

His business was to act as my personal attendant, and at the same time to keep the other people to their duty, and get them off betimes in the morning. But he did nothing of the kind. The men might dawdle till twelve o'clock if they liked, and for his part he remained quietly in his bed, or, if he got up, loitered about smoking and gossiping, and getting himself waited upon, instead of waiting upon me. If I told him to do any thing he made me no answer, or even turned his back upon me, so that when I could not do without assistance I was obliged to ask that of the boatmen.

The scenery of the country we were passing through now became more lovely with every stroke of the oar. The morasses had disappeared, and were succeeded by luxuriant rice-plantations, with smiling hills in the background. Among the trees there were some glorious specimens—some with trunks a hundred and forty feet high; others spreading out their mighty branches, and hanging their leaves down into the water, so as to form deliciously

Digitized by Google

cool leafy bowers. Large hives of the wild bee were often hanging on lofty slender stems with very few branches; but to reach hives of this kind and rob them of their honey, the natives make a kind of ladder of bamboo, which is fastened to the trunk of the tree at every two feet, stands about six inches from it, and is carried to a height of eighty feet.

This day we again stopped at a Dyak settlement; but I had scarcely lain down to rest before I heard a sort of loud clapping noise, given very regularly, and in a sort of measured time. I got up, and went toward the place whence the sound proceeded, and there lay a man stretched out quite motionless on the ground, and half a dozen young men stood round him slapping his body with all their strength with open hands. I thought the man was dead, and was wondering what might be the meaning of this singular ceremony with his body, when all at once up jumped the dead body amid the loud laughter of the operators. The game, I suppose, was over; and I was afterward informed that exercises of the kind are considered very useful for strengthening the body and rendering it supple.

*January 25th.* More and more beautiful views are continually presenting themselves. The hills are multiplying, and becoming higher and higher. The peak that just now came into sight can not be less than 3000 feet high. The scenery reminds me of that of Brazil. Here, too, are vast impenetrable primeval forests, with overwhelming masses of luxuriant vegetation, and here, as well as there, but little cleared land, and but few inhabited places. The chief difference is that Borneo is intersected by a countless number of small streams or rivulets, while Brazil has scarcely any water but the vast floods of her mighty rivers. What might this island become were it peopled by industrious, peaceful, and truly civilized nations!* Unfortunately this is very far from being the case. The population is scanty, and more intent on war and mutual de-

* Borneo is the largest island in the world (of course not including Australia, which is a continent). It has a surface of 260,000 square miles; and its present population consists of 950,000 Dyaks, 200,000 Malays, 54,000 Chinese. Its chief exports are rattans, rice, sago, cocoa-nuts, and dye-stuffs.

Digitized by Google

struction than on any kind of productive labor; and for white settlers the climate is a great obstacle.

One peculiarity of Borneo is the brown color of its rivers. Some travelers maintain that this proceeds from their banks being lined with thick woods, and that the masses of leaves falling into the waters dye them of this color. But I can not admit this explanation, for in the island of Ceram, which I subsequently visited, where the banks of the streams are quite as thickly clothed with wood, the waters are as clear as crystal.

Alexander von Humboldt remarked this dark color in the rivers of America, and adds also that no crocodiles or fish live in water thus dyed. But in Borneo this is not the case, for both caymans (a kind of crocodile) and fish are found in them in abundance.

In the evening I was again surrounded by a swarm of Dyaks, and conversing with them as well as I could by means of my Malay interpreter. I asked them whether they believed in a Great Spirit, and whether they had any idols or priests? As well as I could understand their answer, they believe in nothing of the kind, and have no priests or idols whatever. It is possible, nevertheless, that I may have made some mistake with respect to their answers to my first inquiry; for, as to the last, I certainly think I have seen idols among them. If they have no other objects of reverence, however, they have at all events plenty of earthly superiors; for there is not a tribe of a dozen families that does not own a chief rejoicing in the high-sounding title of Rajah. I was often reminded by this frequency of titles of Hungary and Poland, where every body who is not a serf is a nobleman.

While we were carrying on this conversation, a boy came in from the woods, bringing a wild pigeon that he had caught there, and a man took it from him, twisted the poor little thing's neck, pulled out some of the long feathers from the wings, and threw it into the fire. Scarcely were the feathers half burned off, than he took it from the fire again, tore off the head and pinions, and gave them to a child who was standing by eagerly watching the proceedings. He then put the bird once more on the fire, and, after letting it roast for a few minutes, took it off, divided it into six pieces, and distributed it among the same number of children,

Digitized by Google

He himself did not taste a morsel; and I have frequently noticed similar indications of the Dyaks being affectionate parents.

In the night a terrific storm broke over us, accompanied by real tropical torrents of rain, such as, among us, are sometimes called rain-spouts. We all sprang up and took refuge in the interior of the house, expecting every moment, nevertheless, that its leafy roof would be torn from over our heads. But things violent are seldom of long duration, and when the deluge had raged for about half an hour it suddenly ceased.

The people, in the mean time, had been singing with all their might, and beating on the gong—I supposed to out-bellow the storm, or drive it away; but they went on, alas! till morning. Their song is a kind of wild yell, in which I nevertheless distinguished two of what might be called melodies, which were both sung as solos by the same person, and then the rest of the company joined in. To increase the entertainment, four young men also performed a kind of dance. They trod with slow, measured steps round the fire-place, above which the dead head was hanging, and each struck violently on the ground with a cudgel that he held in his hand, and from time to time spat at the skulls. I found afterward, however, that this music and dancing had nothing to do with the storm, but was intended as a sort of prelude to an approaching campaign.

Among all the tribes that I encountered on this journey the chiefs do not live apart, but in community with the rest, the young men sleeping and washing in what I must call the verandas and ante-chambers of the houses.

*January 26th.* My journey among the wild Dyaks had proceeded thus far so entirely without danger or difficulty—although I had had some cause for fear—that I began to feel myself quite careless and at my ease: this day, however, was to bring me a change in this respect.

I was sitting quietly in my proa, gliding along the river, when a small canoe, in which four Dyaks were seated, came rowing swiftly toward us down the stream. They did not stop as they came up, but only screamed to us in passing to turn back and get away as fast as we could, as a tribe a little further up the river

Digitized by Google

was just coming out to make war on us. They themselves, they said, had only escaped because they were not seen.

This news was of course a little startling. So near to the mountains as we were—for I expected to reach the foot of them this very evening—now to turn back was grievous.

I held a council with the cook, the only one of my company with whom I could exchange a word, and endeavored to induce him to go on. Fortunately he was a brave fellow, and thought that, although there was some danger—for the Dyaks on their war expeditions attack and kill all whom they meet—the probability was they would respect Rajah Brooke's flag. So up went the flag, and on went we; though, I must own, grievously against the will of the rest of the party.

We had not gone far before, sure enough, we heard the sounds of the war-song, with its *obligato* accompaniment of drums and gongs. The high-wooded shores still concealed us; but at a few oars' strokes further a sudden bend of the river brought us full in sight of a spectacle that it will be owned was alarming enough. On a small elevation, close to the shore, stood certainly a hundred savages, with high narrow shields on their arms, and long knives in their hands, and at sight of us they set up a most terrific yell, and began making no less ferocious gestures.

My heart, I must own, gave a leap within me; but it was too late to go back now. Decision and resolution alone could afford us a chance of safety. Opposite the hill where the savages were collected, there lay in the middle of the river a sand-bank; and upon this sprang my valiant cook, and began a parley with the enemy in the Dyak language, so that, unfortunately, I could not understand a word of it. So much greater, therefore, was my consternation, when suddenly the savages rushed down the hill where they were collected, and flinging themselves, some into canoes, some into the water, made toward our proa, surrounded it, and began to climb in.

"Now," I thought, "my last hour is really come." But at this very moment I distinguished the voice of my inestimable cook, who was forcing his way toward me, and calling out that there was nothing to fear, and that this was only their way of bidding us

Digitized by Google

welcome; and as he spoke I saw a little white flag hoisted on the hill as a sign of peace. No one who has not been in imminent danger of a terrible death can, I think, form a very clear idea of the feeling of that moment, or of the sudden revulsion when I knew that I was saved. The cook had been right. Rajah Brooke's flag was the talisman that protected us; and not only did these dreaded savages do us no harm, but they behaved in the most friendly manner, and invited me to pay them a visit. I accepted, in order to show that I trusted them, and set a value on their invitation.

This instance of the esteem and veneration in which Rajah Brooke is held by the Dyaks affected me much; for it showed how susceptible these rude nations are of gratitude when they find that they are really honestly and kindly dealt with. I could not help wishing that I had had here some of the enemies of this high-minded gentleman as witnesses of this scene. I think they could hardly fail to have repented of the charges they have brought against him.*

On going ashore with the savages, I found their women and children encamped in tents behind the height on which the men had been posted. They received me with the same marks of kindness as their husbands, and made me sit down with them. There were eatables spread out upon the ground, especially a number of little cakes of various colors—yellow, brown, and black—which really looked so nice that I accepted them very readily and began to eat forthwith. But I repented my epicurism, for they consisted only of rice and maize flour, mixed with an immense quantity of very rancid fat, which they procure from the fruit called "kawan." The brown and black ones receive their color from an addition of black sirup made from the sugar-cane or the juice of va-

* At the time of my arrival at Borneo, Rajah Brooke had gone to England to meet the accusations made against him that, in his warlike expeditions against the pirates, he had sacrificed human life, and had burned proas, huts, etc.

Did the gentlemen who made these charges think that pirates were to be put down with soft speeches? How many human lives have been sacrificed, and villages and towns burned, by European potentates, without any such righteous purpose—indeed, in wars that were themselves little better than piracies on a large scale?

I heard subsequently that Rajah Brooke had come off with flying colors.

Digitized by Google

rious palms. The good folks would insist on feasting me with these dainties; and to please them, I did manage to swallow some mouthfuls, but it was almost more than I could do.

Among the men who surrounded me, several had at their sides the baskets which are destined to receive any heads that the proprietor may succeed in bagging. They were very prettily plaited and ornamented with shells, as well as with human hair.

After we had finished our repast, they pressed me to come with them to their regular place of residence, which lay deep in the forest; and I set off with them immediately, without taking any one of my own people with me, believing that among these wild tribes one is more secure and the more respected the more confidence one shows in them.

Their huts I found exactly resembling those I had seen before. They begged me to stay with them the rest of the day and the night, but I wished to get as soon as I could to the mountains; so, after resting for a short time, I took a cordial farewell of my new friends, men and women accompanying me to my boat, pressing my hands, and urging me to come and see them again. They also gave me fruit, cakes, eggs, and bamboo canes full of boiled rice, by way of provision for the journey.

In the evening I reached *Peng-Kalang-Sing-Toegang*, a place with some dozens of huts, situated at the foot of the Schämel mountains, and the residence of a Malay Rajah, to whom I had a letter of introduction from Captain Brooke.

Here I dismissed my proa; for the part of my journey to be done by water (about a hundred and fifty miles from Scaran to the mountains) was now accomplished, and my present task was to cross the mountains on foot. Fortunately, however, the Rajah offered to accompany me in person, so that this formidable-looking journey no longer presented any difficulty.

The next day the preparations began. The Rajah selected the men who were to accompany us, had their weapons put in order, and a stock of provisions laid in, while I occupied myself with observing the mode of life and doings of the inhabitants of the place.

I was allowed free access to the Rajah's consort, not only be-

Digitized by Google

cause I was a woman, but because visitors in general are not rigidly excluded; for the Malay women are less jealously watched than the wives of the Turks and other Oriental nations. The lady in question was still very young, but by no means the loveliest of her sex; on the contrary, her face wore, in a remarkable degree, the stamp of dullness and stupidity. Not even her child which was playing about her could bring the smallest expression into it, or call forth one smile. This princely scion in question went, like the other children, stark naked; and its parents were in no way distinguished by their dress from their subjects and slaves. Their sleeping apartment was somewhat superior, being separated by a high bamboo partition from the kitchen and other parts of the hut. It served as a reception-room, and contained inlaid wooden chests, embroidered cushions, and the before-mentioned enigmatical, highly-prized vases.

The Malays keep slaves, and condemn to this servile condition not only their prisoners of war, but their insolvent debtors; and the latter have to continue in slavery till some of their relations or friends redeem them; which happens very seldom, as most of these people are excessively poor. The slaves are, however, very well treated, and regarded as members of the family. Indeed, had I not been informed of the relation in which they stood, I should never have guessed it from the behavior of the masters.

*January 28th.* My formidable pedestrian journey was now to commence. I had prepared a simple and appropriate costume for it, consisting of trowsers, a petticoat not reaching below the ankle, and which, on the march, frequently had to be tucked up still higher, a jacket, and a magnificent bamboo hat, impervious alike to sun and rain, which I had got in the island of Bali. As an additional protection against the heat, I also laid immediately on my head a piece of banana leaf.

As for my *chaussure*, I must own I often had to dispense with stockings, and eke with shoes also, when the road lay through a morass or even through water. Whoever undertakes travels of this kind must be prepared to submit to the same hardships as the natives, and I found that I could do it when I had determined I would.

Digitized by Google

I have slept many a night on the bare ground in the woods, and many a day taken no food but rice boiled in water.

Our party consisted, besides the Rajah, myself, and my servant, of twelve attendants, partly Dyaks and partly Malays, about half of whom were armed.

I had prepared myself, not only for a very bad road, but for the ascent of a lofty mountain chain. This was, however, in a great measure, a mistake; for our path lay constantly through narrow valleys, in which the ascent was very trifling. I doubt if we were ever more than 500 feet above the plain. But the road was tremendous—an uninterrupted succession of brooks, marshes, and standing pools, through which we had to wade with the water far above our knees. Occasionally we caught enchanting views of a triple mountain chain, rising range above range, one behind the other; and wide valleys lying between, traversed by fine rivers, all buried in the deep slumber of thick, impenetrable woods. Only at rare intervals we came to a little clearing, inhabited by Dyaks and planted with rice, maize, sugar-cane, and a kind of sweet potato.

When we came in sight of a settlement of this kind, a halt was made, and a portion of our party sent forward to reconnoitre, and ask permission to pass on. Twice our path led through the very middle of the Dyak houses, and we had to climb up the ladder that forms the entrance on one side, and scramble down a similar one on the other. The Dyaks often purposely refrain from cutting down the trees or opening a path, in order to render the access to their abodes more difficult for an enemy. They leave in the woods only very small and narrow openings, which can easily be closed up.

These dwellings might be compared with what, in fortification, are called block-houses.

After a rather harassing march of eight hours, we stopped at another of these hidden habitations, and without difficulty obtained leave to pass the night there.

*January 29th.* We had still no heights to ascend, but the way through these dense forests was so encumbered with the roots and fallen trunks of immense trees, that we had constant climbing. Besides this, it led through sloughs, morasses, and streams, which



Digitized by Google

we had either to wade through or cross upon thin bamboo-canes, placing one foot immediately before the other; so that it may be supposed it would have been no very easy traveling, even if the weather had been fine; and we happened to meet with very bad weather.

Whenever the deep silence of the forest was disturbed by any sound, however slight, that seemed at all suspicious, we halted and stood as motionless as if rooted to the spot, not daring to speak, and scarcely to breathe, till some of the men had been sent to reconnoitre, which they did by crawling like serpents, and winding themselves among the trunks and roots of the trees.

The next day we again walked for eight hours, when we arrived at a place called *Berg-Kallang-Boenot*, which was to be the terminus of our pedestrian journey. In these two toilsome marches of sixteen hours I do not think we had gone more than five-and-thirty miles. Here there also resided a petty Malay prince, at whose abode we passed the night. Of course, to all these people, Malays as well as Dyaks, I was a very new and surprising phenomenon. Very few of them had ever seen a white man, and none a white woman; and their astonishment was so much the greater, since, according to their ideas, a woman alone can hardly venture more than a few yards from her hut.

*January 30th.* At *Berg-Kallang-Boenot* I embarked upon the little river *Balang-Luppa* in a very little boat, with only one man to row. The river wound through the woods; it was very narrow —sometimes, indeed, so hemmed in by trees that we could hardly get through. Not the faintest beam of the sun pierced the thick covering of leaves; and the most deathlike silence was around us, broken only at rare intervals by the fluttering of a bird or the spring of a monkey. Acheron itself could hardly have been more silent and gloomy, and the color of the water was almost as black as ink. After some hours we overtook a little canoe, in which were a man and woman, a child, a great many fowls, and some household chattels. We stopped to parley, and, after a short conversation, I perceived, to my astonishment and consternation, that the whole crew and cargo were to be transferred to our little boat. Their own the party hid among the trees. In vain I protested

Digitized by Google

against this move; my rogue of a servant was evidently in favor of it, and did not pay the slightest attention to my remonstrances. This addition to our company of course made us very crowded; and what annoyed me still more was that the new-comers insisted on making a fire in the little boat to cook their abominable rice; and the heat and smoke of it came directly in my face.

The gloomy Balang-Luppa fell, after a course of about thirty miles, into the lake *Boenot*, which is about four miles across. Here I noticed a phenomenon that I have never seen any where else. The lake was filled with trunks of perfectly dead trees, without bough or leaf, which, nevertheless, had not fallen or become loosened at the roots, but stood straight up, like palisades planted by human hands. A broad water-road, like a natural canal, led us into a second lake, named *Taoman*, which was twice as large as lake Boenot, and, unlike it, had a perfectly smooth and unencumbered surface.

The environs of both lakes were very fine; wide wooded valleys lay to the east and westward, bounded by a picturesque range of mountains, with lofty domes and peaks, the highest of which could not be less than 5000 feet.

From lake Taoman we turned into the beautiful river *Kapuas*, after the *Banjer-massing* the most important in Borneo. It is very unequal in breadth in different parts, so that the average can not be taken at more than half a mile; but, like most of the rivers in this country, it can hardly be said to have any banks, as the waters spread far into the woods on both sides.

There were fewer inhabited places on it than on the Luppa, on the other side of the Schämel mountains: and had not the occasional bark of a dog or the crowing of a cock given token of life, I should have considered the whole region as entirely uninhabited.

This and the following night I passed in a most inconvenient manner in the boat. The increase of our party left me so little space, that I was obliged to be quite cramped up, and I would glady have endeavored to find shelter among some of the Dyaks; but my boatmen would not agree to it, and said it would be too dangerous.

Digitized by Google

On the morning of the 31st of January we met two proas, a large and a small one, filled with Dyaks and Malays; and in the afternoon a very large one overtook us, and the people in it called to us, in a very imperious tone, to stop. There was no choice now but to obey, for disobedience would have been inconsistent with our weakness. Instead of the pirates, whom we were in fear of, however, the strangers turned out to be only a polite Malay Rajah and his attendants, who were on a journey.

After a few questions as to where I came from, where I was going to, etc., he presented me with a large sort of basin, full of fresh cocoa-nut oil, and some sweet cakes, and we each went on our way.

On the 1st of February we reached *Sintang*, a town of at least 1500 inhabitants, and the residence of a sultan. Here I considered the perilous part of my journey concluded, for the Dyak tribes, whom I had to pass through to reach Pontianah, were subject to Malay princes, to whom I hoped to get recommendations from the Sultan of Sintang, as I had, for this purpose, brought a letter to him from the Rajah of Berg-Kallang-Boenot.

I must own I should have liked to have passed a longer time among the free Dyaks, as I found them, without exception, honest, good-natured, and modest in their behavior. I should be inclined to place them, in these respects, above any of the races I have ever known. I might leave all my things lying open, and go away for hours. I never found, on my return, that the smallest article was missing. They used, indeed, often to beg for trifles, but were quite content to have them refused when I made them understand that I wanted them myself; and they were never troublesome or importunate.

Perhaps I shall be told, when I call them good-natured, that the cutting off and preserving the heads of their enemies does not seem to imply any particular amiableness of disposition; but it must really be remembered that this deplorable practice is rather the result of ignorance, superstition, and a low and uncivilized state, than of any special ferocity; and I must maintain the assertion, in support of which I can adduce their quiet domestic mode of life, their moral conduct, the love they evidently bear their chil-

Digitized by Google

dren, and the respect they show their old people. The free Dyaks are incomparably more opulent than those who are subject to the Malays. They cultivate rice, maize, and tobacco, and occasionally sugar-cane also, and *ubi*. They get abundance of fat from the kawan fruit, and collect in the forests pieces of damar or pine-wood, which they use as torches; and they have plenty of sago rattans and cocoa-nuts. With some of these articles they carry on a barter trade for brass, glass beads, salt, and red handkerchiefs — in their eyes most valuable goods, and far better than money. Fowls and pigs are also among their possessions, though they are usually only eaten at weddings and other festive occasions.

Some travelers assert that the free Dyaks are handsome people, but I must own the utmost I can say for them in this respect is that they are not so frightful as the Malays—as their cheek bones are not quite so broad and projecting, and their noses not altogether so flat. They are generally of a middle size, have arms and legs exceedingly thin, and little or no beard, as they are in the habit of plucking it out. Ugly as they are, however, I think it by no means impossible that if I lived long among them I might be reconciled to many things that appear revolting at first, and perhaps even come to admire them.

The Dyaks are permitted to take as many wives as they like, but they make a very moderate use of the privilege, and mostly content themselves with one, whom they treat well, and do not overload with work, as all the heavy labor is performed by men. Divorces or separations are very uncommon among them; and in the relations between the sexes their conduct is mostly far more irreproachable than that of the Malays. The girls and young men are kept rather strictly apart; the former sleeping in little chambers near their parents, and the young men, as I have said, on the verandas or in the huts of their chiefs. In these respects the manners of the Dyak savages might often, I fear, bear an advantageous comparison with those of the lowest classes in some Christian civilized communities. They do not mingle with other races, and the girls who marry with the Chinese are no longer regarded as belonging to their tribe.

Digitized by Google

The Dyaks use no written character, and, as far as I could make out, have no religious belief. On this point there is, however, some difference of opinion among travelers; and Temmink maintains that they have a religion which is a kind of Fetichism—that they believe in a god called *Djath*, who rules the upper world, and a god *Sang-jang*, who is master of the lower.

They are said to represent these gods as having human, though invisible, forms—to invoke their help, and to sacrifice to them by scattering rice upon the ground. In their dwellings, also, wooden deities are said to have been found. Other travelers ascribe a kind of pantheism to the Dyaks, and assert that they believe in deities both above and below the earth, as well as in a number of good and bad spirits, among whom a certain *Badjang-Brani* is the worst. All diseases they believe to be occasioned by these bad spirits, whom they endeavor to drive away by striking on the gong.

According to others, again, they have no religious ideas at all, but a very confused notion of one Spirit, and of the immortality of the soul.

I can not undertake either to contradict or to confirm these assertions: all I can say with strict truth is, that during my stay in their country I never saw among the tribes with whom I came in contact either temple or idol, priest or sacrifice. At weddings, births, and deaths, many of the tribes did indeed perform certain ceremonies, and fowls and pigs were decapitated and eaten; but it did not appear to me that these things had any connection with religion—only, on concluding a treaty of peace, as I have before mentioned, the pig killed was not eaten, but thrown into the river. The dead are burned among some tribes of Dyaks, and the ashes preserved in hollow trees; others hang them in almost inaccessible places, or bind them to trees with their feet uppermost. But to return to my journey.

The situation of the little town of Sintang is charming; the huts lie partly scattered on the banks of the fine river Kapuas, partly half hidden among cocoa palms.

I could not land immediately on my arrival, as custom required me to remain in the boat till the sultan had appointed me a dwell-

Digitized by Google

ing. I sent, therefore, my servant, who arrayed himself in his state attire on the occasion, to deliver my letter of recommendation from the Rajah of Berg-Kallang-Boenot. He soon came back, however, with the letter, and accompanied by a minister of the sultan's, who informed me that his master was absent, and would not return till the evening or the following morning. The minister conducted me, nevertheless, into a hut, where room was made for me, and the beautiful mats, carpets, and *clambu* that he had brought with him arranged.

Late in the evening some one came to tell me that the sultan had returned, and would expect me on the following morning in the Divan. Fortunately I had now learned enough of the Malay language to be able to understand the people.

The next morning a large handsome boat, rowed by twenty men, came to fetch me, and my servant wrapped the letter in two silk handkerchiefs and followed me. At the wooden palace of the sultan, which lies near the bank of the river, I was received with music and the firing of guns: the path from the river to the Divan, a distance of a few hundred yards, was spread with matting, and the sultan advanced half way to meet me, as a mark of respect. It was very evident, nevertheless, by the embarrassment of his manner, that the good man did not know very well how to treat a European woman. With a sort of comical grace he extended to me the tips of his fingers (an astonishing familiarity, according to their notions), which I just touched with the tips of mine, and thus we floated along, as if dancing a minuet, to the Divan, which was only separated from the great hall by a wooden railing about two feet high. Here stood, half covered with colored cotton, a clumsy table and chair, and, in default of a second chair, a wooden chest. The sultan and I took our places at the table, while the ministers and great men of his dominions sat in a row on the ground along the walls. Outside had collected a throng of people, to whom the arrival of a European woman of course presented a remarkable spectacle.

The Rajah's letter of recommendation was put on a silver cup and brought to the sultan, the bringer shuffling along upon his knees with downcast eyes, and kissing the sultan's hand with great

Digitized by Google

devotion as he presented the cup. His highness then commanded his prime minister to open and read it.

A letter to a sultan, or any other person of high distinction, must, according to Mohammedan custom, consist of a whole sheet, only the first page of which must be written on; and should this not suffice, a second or a third sheet must be taken.

As soon as the reading of the letter was over, refreshments were brought; and a complete cover was laid for me, though the sultan had only a plate. The refreshments consisted of tea, without sugar or milk, sweetmeats and fruit, which was served on about twenty beautifully-cut glass plates, and partaken of by the entire company present.

When the repast was concluded, the sultan led me to the apartments of the female members of his family, where also he had had the politeness to have a raised seat prepared for me, and presented me to his wife and daughter; and, to say the truth, a most ugly couple they were, of the genuine Malay type. Although there were many men, and young ones too, present, the ladies wore no covering but a simple sarang, which half covered the bosom.

This Sultan of Sintang, who in his dominions is a complete despot, has forbidden his subjects to take more than one wife, the privilege of a more liberal allowance rightfully belonging, in his opinion, only to princes. I do not know though whether he has claimed it in his own case, as he only presented one to me.

At my departure the same ceremonies were observed as on my arrival.

I was a good deal surprised at the grand style of my reception, more especially as it was so much in the European manner, and I was certain that the Sultan of Sintang had never seen any Europeans; but my servant explained the riddle to me. When I sent him ashore with the letter on my first coming, the sultan had not really been absent, as I was told; but as he had not the least idea how to receive a European woman, he thought proper to consult my attendant as to what was proper to be done; and thereupon this personage took upon him to describe all the solemnities observed at Sarawak when Rajah Brooke returned to his dominions.

Digitized by Google

I had, therefore, his eloquence to thank for having been received pretty much in the style of a reigning princess. The chairs and table had been hastily made for the occasion; and the knife, fork, etc., were my own, and had been brought by my servant.

On bidding me farewell, the sultan promised to place at my disposal a *sampsan* (a shorter and broader boat than a proa), which was to take me as far as Pontianah; and I begged that he would do me the favor to send it by sunrise the next morning.

On the following morning, the 3d of February, immediately after sunrise, his highness himself was announced coming to return my visit. He did not, it seemed, consider it proper to do this on the same day when I had come to him; and as I meant to make so short a stay, he had been compelled to choose this very early hour. He came accompanied by his father and some of his male relations; but it is not the etiquette for the ladies of his family to return visits. The father of the sultan wore a cap and jacket of gold brocade, the first costly articles of apparel that I had seen on a Bornean prince; and it must be owned the old gentleman needed to be set off by a little finery, if that was any improvement, for the usual ugliness of his race was heightened in his case by an immense wen, the second that I had seen on the island. The first, a small specimen, adorned the consort of the Rajah of Berg-Kallang-Boenot.

This distinguished company proved by no means so gentle and modest in their behavior as the Dyak head-fanciers; for they pulled open and rummaged about all my packages; and especially on a small traveling-bag, that unluckily was standing open, they fell like wild animals. I really had not eyes enough to watch my goods, and protect them from damage; and with my poor collection of insects and reptiles my noble guests were particularly mischievous.

The princely papa fairly took possession of the said traveling-bag, and, pointing to the various articles, soap, tooth-brushes, etc., demanded what they were all for. I explained; but the consequence of my explanation was that he was so charmed with these curious contrivances that he wanted to keep them for his own behoof. I took them from him, however, before he went away, and



Digitized by Google

gave him as a compensation some pictures and trifling articles that I could better spare.

The entire ignorance these people showed of the ordinary articles in my possession was a sufficient proof that they can seldom or never before have come into contact with Europeans. They did not understand the use of the simplest. I had to explain and show them every thing, and there was scarcely one that they did not evince a desire to appropriate; so that I was heartily glad when my grand party had finally turned their backs.

The sultan, however, carried his politeness so far as to accompany me two miles on my journey.

The way from Sintang to Pontianah was performed very quickly in three and a half days. I had taken the precaution to inquire of the natives at Sintang how long this journey ought to take—a very necessary precaution, without which one is entirely in the power of these people—and I had been told six days, or, at the least, four; I therefore begged the sultan to give orders to his men to take me in four days; though my servant highly disapproved of my proceeding, as he liked to journey slowly and quite at his ease. I did not, however, trouble myself about him or ask for his help any more, but took on myself the command of the boatmen.

The banks of the river were more or less inhabited, and we passed many little villages; among others, one called *Sungan*, after Sintang the largest town in the sultan's dominions.

I paid a visit, in passing, to the Rajah, but did not stay more than an hour.

A mile from Pontianah the river Kapuas unites with the Landah, and both lose their names in that of the Pontianah, which falls at last into a lake about twenty-five miles off.

On the 6th of February I found myself safe and sound at Pontianah.

Digitized by Google

## CHAPTER IV.

Pontianah.—Excursion to Landah.—A Chinese Kapthay.—Another Pedestrian Journey.—A Mud Bath in the Morass.—Bamboo Bridges.—The Language of Signs.—Supper with the Panam-bahan.—The Diamond Mines.—Return to Pontianah.

PONTIANAH was the first of the Dutch settlements in the East that I had ever visited, and I confess I entered it with rather uneasy feelings. The Dutch had been represented by many travelers as so cold, so difficult of access, so indifferent to every thing unconnected with their pecuniary interests, that I almost shrank from meeting them; and I should have felt an unfriendly reception so much the more, that I had been almost spoiled by the extreme kindness and courtesy shown me by the English, both in this and my former journey.

I dispatched the letter to the Dutch government of the place, with which Rajah Brooke had favored me, to the proper quarter, and then remained sitting in my sampsan in a state of considerable anxiety.

My servant brought me back the vexatious intelligence that the Resident, Mr. Willer, was then absent in Batavia. His representative, however, Secretary Van Hardenberg, came down immediately to receive me, and that in so thoroughly cordial a manner that I felt immediately relieved from all anxiety.

There are no hotels or inns at places to which so few Europeans come as to Borneo; but Mr. Van Hardenberg placed at my disposal a small house that happened to be standing empty, which had served as a residence a few years before to an American missionary; and he added, moreover, that all my wants should be provided for. In the evening he presented me to the wife of the Resident, in whom I found a most amiable and cultivated woman, and she invited me to take up my abode in her house—an invitation that I could but joyfully accept; so that I gladly gave up my cottage almost as soon as I had entered it.

Digitized by Google

I had undertaken the journey to Pontianah, in a great measure, for the sake of visiting the celebrated diamond mines of Landah; but when, on the following day, I expressed this wish, I learned, to my regret, that, on the morning of the very day on which I arrived, a Catholic priest, named Sanders, had set off for that place in a convenient government boat. It was too late to overtake him; but I was informed that, as the journey by land was four days shorter than by water, if I could resolve to undertake that, I might still get to Landah before him. In any case I should meet him there, and could return in his company, and with the convenience of the boat; so I made up my mind to the land journey without hesitation, though the distance was more than 200 miles, and I knew I should have the half of it to travel on foot.

Mr. Van Hardenberg wished to give me a servant, for he said it was impossible I could get through the country without a knowledge of either the Malay or Dyak languages, as I should have daily to change boatmen, bearers, etc.; but really, after the specimen of this class of people I had had in the servant given me by Captain Brooke, I had taken such an aversion to them, that I determined to do without them, and go alone. I only begged to be furnished with letters to the chiefs and Rajahs through whose territories I should have to pass.

It was not till the 10th of February that Mr. Van Hardenberg was able to procure for me a small boat, which was to take me as far as Kubiang, a distance of sixty miles.

He accompanied me to the water-side, and, when I got in, called out to me, "If I had not myself witnessed the fact of your setting off on such a journey as this entirely alone, I really would not have believed it."

I proceeded for about thirty miles up the beautiful stream of the Landah, to where the small river Mandor falls into it at a place called *Kubu-trap*, where I was to pass the night in the house of a Chinese. Mr. Van Hardenberg had furnished me with a whole hamperful of provisions; but, as I was certain that before morning they would be destroyed by ants, I distributed them with easy generosity among my boatmen. Eatables can only be preserved from the ravages of these insects in well-closed tin cases.

Digitized by Google

As early as three o'clock in the morning we were again in motion, gliding up the Mandor; and this small stream is so completely closed in by woods, that we seemed to be passing through one unbroken leafy bower. With the rising sun there awoke some life in the forest. I heard, indeed, no songs of birds, but on all sides the less harmonious screaming of monkeys of various species —the gigantic orang-outang, the long-armed kalampia, the black siaman, the bintangon or nose ape, and others. The last four kinds are natives only of Borneo.

At ten o'clock we reached Kubiang, the end of our water journey; and I prepared myself for a walk of eight miles to Mandor, whither two of my boatmen were to accompany me.

For the first seven miles the way lay through dark woods, and, as the phrase is, "over stock and stone." Then we came to a pleasant clearing, covered with plantations. The soil was sandy, a very rare thing in Borneo; and well-kept paths, and planks or broad trunks of trees laid across the streams, announced to me that I was on Chinese ground, as neither Malays nor Dyaks have the least notion of providing any comfort or convenience whatever.

In Mandor I took up my quarters with the Chinese chief or *Kapthay*, to whom my first letter was addressed. In the Chinese settlements which are under the protection of the Dutch, a Chinese is generally chosen as chief or governor, who receives the title of *kapthay*, captain, or major, according to the size of the place. The dignity brings no emolument with it, and is only for a year, but admits of a second election.

Many of these kapthays live in forts, and enjoy almost princely authority, exercising judicial power over their countrymen, even to the pronouncing and executing sentences of death; and as long as they keep things quiet, and pay punctually their opium taxes, the Dutch do not interfere with their government in the least.

The Kapthay of Mandor was one of the most important of these functionaries, and dwelt in a fortress, at the entrance of which two six-pounders were planted. His residence consisted of many open courts and halls, and a few small, low sleeping-rooms in which the women had their abode. The largest of the halls served as dining-room, sitting-room, and church, or temple for religious worship.

Digitized by Google

Here were gods, beautifully decorated altars, wax-tapers burning, and rice, tea, and fruit offered to the said gods as sacrifice.

Toward evening the kapthay conducted me into the little town, which lies close to the fort, and consists of two rows of houses, containing about 700 inhabitants.

After the walk he took me to see his *pig-sties*, which were large and airy, and, what was remarkable, as they belonged to a Chinese, very clean. The kapthay, I understand, great man as he is, carries on a considerable trade in pigs and pork. These animals are washed or *rinsed*, by having water poured over them twice every day; and they are fed on a mixture of rice and various leaves (of the *kiang*, *kladi*, and *guelang* plants), which are cut small and boiled, and then mixed in the proportion of three parts to one part of boiled rice. The animals fed on this mixture were remarkably large and fat, so fat, indeed, that some of them could or would hardly drag themselves to their trough. Besides the pig-sties, I had to admire the kitchen, which was very clean, and the fare prepared therein, both for masters and servants, excellent. Rice formed of course the solid foundation, standing, in fact, in the place of bread among us; but besides this there were boiled fowls, pork, and vegetables, and a number of smaller dishes. This Chinese kapthay, indeed, lived incomparably better, and in a more cleanly manner, than the greatest Malay Rajah. His wife (he had but one) wore rich dresses, and possessed both money and diamonds; and their child, a baby of eight months old, was dressed in silk, with gold trinkets, and had a silk cap embroidered with gold on its little head.

The kapthay asked me again and again whether I had quite determined on traveling on foot to Landah. He informed me that Mr. Sanders, who had been there a few days before, had had the same plan, but had given it up on learning that he would have to make a great circuit to avoid a district in which the Dyak tribes were in a disturbed state, and that the road was bad beyond all description. I did not allow myself to be frightened, however, and only begged that he would find me a good guide, and arrange the journey so that I might reach Landah as quickly as possible.

This night I passed in a comfortable room, and in a clean good bed.

Digitized by Google

*February* 12*th.* After an abundant breakfast of boiled fowls, rice, eggs, and fruit, I set out on my second walking journey, accompanied by a Chinese guide and a Dyak cooly, or porter, who both set off at a pace as if we were running for our lives, and continued the whole day the same "hot haste." I really believe we ran twenty miles without stopping. Fortunately it was on Chinese ground, and over good smooth paths; so that though I reached Sompa in a rather exhausted state, I was no further affected by my exertions. Here my Chinese attendants delivered me over to the Malay Rajah, who was to forward me another stage; and I had not only no regret on parting with my Chinese guide, but was delighted to get rid of him, for his curiosity had been intolerable. Before I was aware of him, he had got hold of my traveling-bag and peeped into and examined every thing it contained; and moreover, though I did not know it till afterward, had stolen some money out of it—the first time I had been robbed in all my travels.

*February* 13*th.* This day's journey was short; I scarcely estimate it at more than fourteen miles—but such miles! There was certainly variety; for sometimes we had to climb over trunks and roots of trees, sometimes to walk through swamps, and sometimes to walk through the *Alang-Alang*, a kind of jungle grass five or six feet high, and here intersected by very narrow, deep, slippery paths, on which you are continually falling. Immediately after rain—and so near the equator there are few days without rain—when the sun breaks out again in all his scorching force, these deep narrow paths between the high grass are full of vapor, and are hot and close to suffocation. Yesterday and to-day we have been continually inclosed among high mountains; but the paths wind out of one valley into another, so that we have seldom had to climb more than two or three hundred feet. At these points we often obtained the most exquisite glimpses of scenery. In these, as in the Schämel mountains, the ranges towered one above another in two and three-fold chains, with spacious valleys between, and rich, dark, impenetrable forests. The more I saw of this beautiful country, the more enchanted I was with it, and the more fervently I wished to see it filled by a civilized, industrious population, subjected only to a mild, just government.

Digitized by Google

This afternoon I took a cold bath *malgré moi*, for I fell from a Borneo bridge (that is to say, a bamboo-stick), a distance of five feet, into the marsh below. In I went over my shoulders, and my companions had some trouble to pull me out again. When they did, I was of course covered with mud; but fortunately there was a nice clear brook close by, and I seated myself in it, and had myself rinsed in the same manner that the kapthay did his pigs, namely, by having water poured over me until the mud was entirely washed off my clothes; then, dripping wet as I was, I had to walk several hours to the place where we were to pass the night. I really thought that the fall and the involuntary bath would have done me some harm, for I was very warm at the time; but, thank God, it did not. I suffered nothing more from it than from the fright.

We spent the night in *Bo-Ba-Ker*, a small Chinese town of 400 inhabitants; and here also I was called on to admire the clean, spacious kitchen and handsome pig-sties of my host. The Chinese prefer pork to every other meat, and devote therefore all possible care to these animals. The poorest Chinese indulges in pork once or twice a week, and incomparably better fare is to be obtained by travelers among the Chinese than among the Malays or Dyaks. You get good clean food, and generally a little room to yourself to sleep in; and whoever is fond of tea may revel to his heart's content in the beverage.

A Chinese never drinks water, and in the poorest cottage a large pot of tea is always standing ready, from which every one may quench his thirst when he pleases. It must be owned, however, that the Chinese tea is mostly very bad, and of an extremely bitter taste; it is only what you get among the rich that Europeans consider drinkable.

On the 14th we had a very severe march of more than nine hours, through thick woods and high jungle grass; and we only did twenty miles. The way led mostly through a region inhabited by Dyaks, whom my companions said they were afraid of; and they ran on at such a rate, that it was with the utmost difficulty I kept up with them. Fast as they went, however, they kept the most anxious watch; and whenever the faintest sound was heard

Digitized by Google

in the woods they could tell immediately whether it proceeded from a beast or a human being. When the latter was the case, they stopped instantly, with every appearance of terror; and very likely those from whom the sounds proceeded did the same thing. A deathlike silence followed. Then my two attendants would sometimes call out that they were only accompanying a white woman, with a letter of protection from the Rajah in Sompa, to Darid. Sometimes we got no answer; but sometimes a few Dyaks would suddenly stand before us, as if they had sprung out of the earth. They had come quite close to us without our perceiving it, and without making the slightest noise, and only emerged from the forest when they saw that from our little party there was nothing to fear.

In the course of this day we passed what is called a *pantak*, a small square inclosure, made with great wooden figures that stretch out their arms as if they were dancing. These places are made by the Dyaks, who, after a warlike expedition, come here with the heads they have captured, and perform the first solemnities. Both Dyaks and Malays appear to have a great veneration for these pantaks, and believe, it is said, that whoever does the least damage to any of the wooden figures will be attacked by evil spirits, and shortly die.

From this it would appear that the Dyaks do really believe in evil spirits.

A little before reaching the village of Darid we came to the river Mengak, which, like most rivers of Borneo, has such a tranquil and undisturbed course that you never suspect its existence till you come in sight of it. Since this river, by means of its connection with the Suar, into which it falls, leads to Landah, our pedestrian excursion ought to have ended here. I found, however, that all the people were busy with the rice harvest, and the Rajah was not at all inclined to spare men to man a boat for me. In three days he said the heaviest work would be over, and then he would see what could be done for me; but this did not suit me at all, for by that arrangement I should miss Mr. Sanders. I asked the Rajah, therefore, to give me a guide and a cooly, or even a cooly only who knew the way, and declared I would continue the journey on foot.

Digitized by Google

For a long time they would not hear of this, but I worried them so intolerably that at last they gave way, and not a little proud was I of my triumph. Alone, and knowing but a few words of the Dyak language, my will had obtained the mastery over theirs, and effected the purpose I had in view in spite of opposition.

*February 13th.* Again walking, or rather running, the whole day, during which we did twenty miles. Our route was a very circuitous one, for the Malays as well as the Dyaks had here pursued the policy of closing up paths and rendering them inaccessible, to protect themselves against some neighbors with whom they were constantly at discord. We passed several Dyak villages, but only staid long enough to refresh ourselves with a draught of water or cocoa-milk.

A few miles from Tata, the goal of the present day's journey, we came to a bridge so dangerous that it really made me shudder to think of crossing it. It consisted of nothing more than a few bamboo-sticks tied together, and suspended at a height of thirty feet across a stream—the Suar, here 100 feet broad. The natives generally choose for such passages places where strong branches of trees project over the water; or where perhaps the trunks themselves stand in it, and can be used as pillars to which to fasten the bamboo-canes.

A bridge so high and long as the one now before me is usually, indeed, provided with a sort of hand-rail, but woe to any one who should take it for a support and lean on it in the slightest degree. They would infallibly be plunged into the depths below. It consists only of two very thin bamboo-canes, bound together by a cross-piece at about every ten feet, and can serve for nothing more than to assist you to maintain your equilibrium.

My proportions are not of the most substantial order, but I could not help trembling as I committed them to this airy ghost of a bridge. The frail reed danced under my feet, the still more fragile railing shook under my hand, and my head turned giddy as I glanced down and saw far below me the river hurrying on its course. Yet after all I did reach the opposite shore in perfect safety.

Yesterday and to-day I had really some hardships to undergo.

Digitized by Google

One third of the way was through jungle grass; the other two thirds up and down high hills covered with dense forests, and right through several marshes; and I was compelled to go barefoot like the natives of the country. Shoes would infallibly have stuck in the mud and been left behind; and high boots would have become so heavy that I could not have walked in them. Another inconvenience was that I was sure to be, at least once a day, drenched through with the tropical rain, and had then to let my clothes be dried on me by the heat of the burning sun. The only thing that made me amends was the constant beauty of scenery displayed in this mountainous region.

At Tata I found the same difficulty as at Darid; there were no men to be spared for a proa, for all were busy as before with the rice harvest. I could not here make myself understood by the people as they spoke only the Dyak; and I was obliged to eke out my limited stock with hieroglyphics or picture-writing. I drew a proa with eight rowers, and near it a little canoe with only one, and myself steering. Then I pointed to the large boat, and signified that I did not want that, but the small one with one man.

At last they understood me, laughed at my way of making myself intelligible, nodded their approval, and promised to fulfill my wish, and let me have one boatman.

I had subsequently also often occasion to remark how well and quickly the savages understand the language of signs; and I became at last so accustomed to it, that when I came back among the whites, I had to watch myself very carefully that I might not have recourse to it involuntarily, and accompany my words with pantomimic gestures.

The people of Borneo, both Dyaks and Malays, are in general very fond of their ease, and difficult to get in motion; and the only people I remember who can be compared with them in this respect are the men at the post stations in Russia. There I have often had to wait several hours till the courier was buckled up, the horses fed, and all things ready for a start.

Here in Borneo it was the *mahan* (dinner) that was my great stumbling-block. This word mahan plays a most important part here. Whenever you ask after any body, and he does not make his appear-

Digitized by Google

ance, you are sure to hear the word *mahan*, and then the matter is settled. One would suppose they had a most voluminous bill of fare, as the preparation of food seems to occupy so large a space in their lives; and yet they have, in fact, nothing to eat but rice, some little dried fish, and a few other trifles. Any one who sets the smallest value upon time can hardly help getting out of patience with them.

I found it impossible to get away to-day till ten o'clock, and we again came to a halt at four, at a place called Sawal, where the river Suar has three little falls, of which the first is the largest.

The proas are here emptied, and carried over rocks at the side of the fall, and then loaded again when it is passed. In general the people manage to arrive at night, and then they only have to carry the proa, and load it again the next morning. As this is the custom, it was determined that we also should pass the night at the falls; although we might easily have gone on, for the boat was very light, and my baggage only weighed ten pounds.

We slept on a rock under the open sky; and in the morning I myself helped to carry the boat past the fall, and by noon we had reached Landah. It was high time I found, for Mr. Sanders intended setting off on the following morning on his return to Pontianah.

He was not a little astonished to see me arrive thus entirely alone; but still more when he heard of the rough journey I had had to make, and that on foot, in order to avoid the disturbed districts of the Dyaks.

He was so obliging as to defer his return for a day to accommodate me, and, as it afterward appeared, he had no cause to repent having done so.

Landah, like all Malay towns, consists of irregular groups of bamboo huts; it stands close to the river, contains about a thousand inhabitants, and is the seat of a *Panam-bahan*, a personage of higher dignity than a rajah, but of less than a sultan.

In the evening we were invited to present ourselves to this great man, who received us in his Divan surrounded by four ministers and many of the attendants and people. The prince, the ministers, Mr. Sanders, and myself, were accommodated with chairs placed

Digitized by Google

round a table. The accommodation, however, appeared to be rather doubtful in the case of some of the company, for I noticed that the ministers drew up one leg after another, and were soon sitting comfortably cross-legged.

The table was covered quite in European fashion with table-cloth, knives and forks, etc., and, moreover, spread with excellent fare—roasted, stewed, and potted fowls, ducks, lamb, fish, rice, and so forth. Instead of wine we had lukewarm sherbet, but not so good as I have tasted in Persia and the East. In default of fine fruit, it is prepared from herbs and sugar, and tastes then much like medicine. We all made use of the knives and forks during the banquet, but some of us employed these instruments in such a comical manner that I could hardly help laughing.

The dress of the prince was very simple. One of the ministers wore a fine cloth jacket with gold-embroidered facings, but it must have seen a great deal of service, for his elbows made their appearance through the sleeves. Out at elbows or not, however, these people are very rich in diamonds, though they carefully conceal them, and more especially from the eyes of us greedy Europeans, whose rapacity, not without reason, they stand much in awe of. On this occasion they wore only a few, in rings, but they were very fine stones.

We flattered ourselves that we should be allowed to see the prince's treasures, but we were mistaken. This was rather vexatious, as we were told he was in possession of the finest diamond ever seen in the world, one far exceeding the renowned Koh-i-Noor; but this diamond is never shown to any one, and it is not even known where it is hidden, so much is its owner in dread of being robbed of it, or even perhaps assassinated on its account. What a very desirable property it must be!

The conversation at table turned on my travels, and particularly on the recent ones in Borneo. What most surprised the prince was that I should have been able to pass in safety through the country of the independent Dyaks. He thought I must be under some immediate and special divine protection, and be in fact more than an ordinary mortal; and this notion, fortunately perhaps for me, I found prevailing in many places, as well among the Moham-

Digitized by Google

medans as among the ruder nations. Some thought I was seeking for the spirit of a deceased relative, and some regarded me as a kind of *demi*-saint—an idea that undoubtedly served as a protection to me. The Prince of Landah was much amazed, too, at my pedestrian performances, and declared that, young as he was, he could not walk for two hours together.

I asked him whether he had not any curiosity to see something more of the world than Landah; but he answered with great naïveté that he liked his ease better than all the wonderful things in the world.

It was to the interest inspired in the prince and his ministers by the account of my wanderings, that we were indebted for receiving, on the following morning, a promise that we should be taken to one of the largest diamond mines—a favor very seldom granted to Europeans. When permission has been asked, the answer generally given is that the mine is not at present worked, yields nothing, and so forth. Had it not been for my arrival, Mr. Sanders would have had to leave the place without seeing it.

The prince dismissed us at ten o'clock, and one of the ministers undertook to escort us home; but instead of taking us to our abode, he led us to his own—evidently a premeditated piece of politeness, for just as we came to it, we saw arriving also the chairs and the table, which, it seemed, he had borrowed of the prince in order that he too might receive us in European style.

I was, of course, tired by my journey, and wished to stay only a very little while, but I was not allowed to depart; and soon, to my horror, I saw that the table was being spread a second time with the very service that had displayed its magnificence in the palace of the prince. But the case was not altogether so bad as I had feared, for the minister was only about to add a dessert of fruits, pastry, and sherbet to the supper we had already taken. We did not, however, get home till midnight.

*February* 18*th*. In the morning we set off by water for the diamond mine of Mongo, in company with the minister. The diamonds are found here in low sand and earth hills, which also contain many flints. At the foot of these hills, holes are made two feet broad, and about two and a half deep, into which the earth

Digitized by Google

and stones, loosened by the rain, fall. This is then carried in baskets to a neighboring tank, about twenty feet long and fifteen broad, in which stand the washers, who are furnished with large, flat, wooden trays. The earth is put into these trays, a little at a time, and shaken and washed until the stones are all loosened and separated from the earth. The washers then feel about it lightly with their hands, collect all the stones, and examine them carefully to see whether there are any precious ones among them. They then let the remainder fall into the basin, and continue this work till they have nothing left in their trays but fine black sand and earth, which is then also thrown into the basin; but both stones and earth are subjected to another careful examination before they are allowed to leave the tank. After rain none but the workmen, who are Chinese, are allowed to approach the place. Some basketsful of the earth were washed in our honor, but only two diamonds, of the size of pins' heads, were found. Of these Mr. Sanders had one, and I the other; and the minister said he had received orders to allow me to search for diamonds, and to keep whatever I found; but I replied that I had not come there to get diamonds, but to see the mines; and I made no use of the permission.

There are many other places in this country besides the Mongo mines where diamonds are found; and all that weigh above three carats, wherever found, must be sold to the prince, who usually gives goods in exchange for them—a kind of trade from which he is pretty sure to derive a handsome profit.

The Borneo diamonds, even at the places where they are found, bear a very high price.

In the evening we were again invited to the Panam-bakan, whom our company appeared to entertain; and hints were even given us that, as we seemed so much in favor, we should perhaps be after all allowed to see the treasures; but the prince's complaisance did not go so far as that.

On the 19th we again embarked on the river Landah, on our return journey to Pontianah. We went in the large boat as far as the mouth of the river Karanyan, where we got into a smaller boat with the purpose of going up it to the village of Karanyan,

Digitized by Google

in which some American missionaries resided for several years. Their object was to make proselytes among the Dyaks; and they probably hoped for more success among them than among the Mohammedans, who mostly cling to their faith with great firmness. They found themselves disappointed, however, and finally left the place, without, as far as I could hear, making a conquest of a single soul.

The row up the Karanyan was a very beautiful, but not a very convenient one, for the stream was very shallow, and the channel so choked up with trunks of trees, that it seemed to have been done intentionally to keep off intruders. Many living trees also bent down so low over the water that we had to lie down quite flat in the boat in order to effect a passage through these natural gates.

Although we were several hours on the way, the time passed very quickly in admiring contemplation of such a magnificent variety of palms, leaf-woods, shrubs, creepers, and orchidaceæ, as can scarcely be imagined by any one who has not seen it. There were such giants among them that I was obliged to lie quite back in the boat to be able to catch a glimpse of their tops.

At Karanyan we found one of the missionary houses standing, though two others, as well as a little chapel, had vanished without leaving a trace behind. The remaining one was under the particular care of a Malay, who received from the missionaries a compensation for his trouble. They had promised on their departure to return soon again; but this was two years ago, and nothing had yet been seen of them. We found some articles of furniture and some books that had belonged to them.

From this place we took a walk of four miles to *Toborg* and *Sareton*, in order to visit some Dyak tribes who have their abode in those villages; but we saw directly, from their undecorated appearance, and the small stores of rice, poultry, or pigs that they possessed, that they belonged to the dependent races; and, in fact, we found they were subject to the Panam-bakan.

In their features and deportment, too, we missed the open, tranquil, pleasant expression of the free tribes. They received us in a cold, gloomy, distrustful manner, and only thawed a little after Mr. Sanders had made them a present of some salt and tobacco.

Digitized by Google

But I had again occasion to admire the modesty of the Dyaks, and their good temper among themselves. Instead of thronging in upon us and snatching the presents out of each other's hands, as the Malays often did, they took gently what we gave them, and waited quite patiently until the oldest among them had made the distribution—a distribution in which the women received their share as well as the men.

We asked whether the missionaries used to visit them often, and they said every three or four days; they used to preach, read something out of a book, talk to them a little, and then go away again.

Toward evening we went back to Karanyan, took possession for the night of the missionaries' house, and on the following morning returned down the river to our convenient boat, in which we continued the journey the whole way back to Pontianah, and arrived there quite safe on the 22d of February.

---

## CHAPTER V.

Pontianah.—Mortgages.—Opium Farming.—Opium Smokers.—Amok.—Journey to Sambas.—The Pangero-rato.—Courtesy of the Dutch Officers.—Return to Pontianah.—The Boa.—Some Remarks on the Races of Borneo.

I COULD now allow myself time to make myself a little acquainted with Pontianah. The situation of the town is any thing but pleasing. It lies twenty miles from the sea, on a plain that, with the exception of some rice plantations, is entirely covered with thick woods, and whose heavy monotony is only broken by the confluence of the Landah and the Kapuar, which here form a fine delta. The immediate environs of the town consist entirely of swamp and morass, so that you can hardly walk a thousand yards on dry ground in any direction.

Near the town is a fort, surrounded by earth-works, and garrisoned by a hundred and thirty men, but the whole European colony is formed by the resident and five or six official persons, some



Digitized by Google

military officers, and a doctor. The inhabitants are reckoned at about six thousand.

On the opposite shore of the Pontianah resides a sultan, who, like the so-called independent princes of India under the English, is supposed to reign freely over his people, but, in reality, is quite under the control of the Dutch resident, and dare not undertake any thing, or so much as cross the frontier of his dominions, without leave.

The only difference between the princes of Hindostan and those of Borneo is, that the latter have sought the assistance of the Dutch of their own accord, while the former have mostly been subjected against their will. The princes of Borneo have not the power, on the one hand, to settle the disputes of the Malays, Chinese, and Dyaks, and, on the other, to put down the conspiracies often formed in their own families; and they therefore willingly accept the yoke of the Dutch government for the protection it implies. They are left to the undisturbed enjoyment of most of their lands, of the taxes paid by their subjects, of the gold washings and diamond mines within their territories; but the Dutch claim for themselves the salt monopoly, and the revenue derived from opium, as well as from some other less important articles. Many of these sultans and princes even receive a yearly pension from the Dutch, as a compensation for the rights of which they have been deprived. The Sultan of Pontianah, for instance, has an annual pension of 48,000 rupees (£4800).

There exists at Borneo, as I have already said, a class of slaves, partly prisoners taken in war, and partly debtors who have not been able to meet the claims on them at the appointed time, and have fallen consequently into the power of the creditor, as a forfeited pledge. In accordance with this barbarous law, the debtor must serve his creditor as a slave until the debt is liquidated; and should he die before that time, his wife, his son, his daughter, or the nearest of his other relatives, has to take his place. Whoever does not pay his taxes to the sultan for three years becomes his slave.

The resident, Mr. Willer, is, I am told, exerting himself greatly for the abolition of this cruel and unjust practice.

Digitized by Google

Another evil that in its consequence is even greater, as it affects not merely individuals, but whole nations, is the use of opium; but this evil the Dutch government does not attempt to suppress. On the contrary, it uses every means in its power to increase it.

Wonderful enough it is to see European governments founding colonies, subjecting whole countries for the sake of diffusing civilization and Christianity, and at the same time doing all in their power to encourage their subjects in vices by which every principle of Christianity or civilization is opposed. Why do they not discourage a practice which causes the destruction of thousands—nay, millions—of miserable, infatuated creatures in every country where it prevails? Why, but because of the miserable gain, because this vice is the most productive source of revenue!

What shall we say to the war declared by the English against the Emperor of China, who was doing his best to guard his subjects from this poison, by prohibiting the importation of opium?

How can we ask uncivilized nations to respect our religion, when we let them see that it does not restrain us from the most unprincipled and shameful grasping, and that a sufficient amount of profit will reconcile us to any proceeding, however flagitious?

One evening I paid a visit to the Sise houses in the Chinese quarter, where opium is smoked. The smokers sat or lay upon mats, and had at their side small lamps to light their pipes; and I could not help noticing how some, who seemed to have nothing else of sense or consciousness left, were careful to scrape the last atom of opium adhering to the leaf on which it had been placed. That horrible pictures are to be seen at these places it is scarcely necessary to say. Here is a creature stupefied and incapable of speech, making a faint attempt to rise and drag himself home, but sinking powerless on the threshold; another is already lying senseless and lifeless, stretched upon his mat, unconscious that he has any home. There sits one with hollow cheeks, fixed eyes, trembling in every limb, the very picture of misery, for he has now no more money with which to attain to this enviable condition, and smoke himself into idiotcy. In some the opium has for a time an exhilarating effect, and they chatter and laugh under its influence

Digitized by Google

till they fall back exhausted; but even then, they say, rejoice in delightful dreams.

Those who have once accustomed themselves to this poison can not live without it; they can neither work nor think until they have inhaled another momentary supply of life from the terrible drug.

To my astonishment, I found in the opium houses some women, who were, as I was told, just as passionate smokers as the men.

A picul of opium (125 pounds) costs in Singapore 1200 Spanish dollars, but the government farms out the right of sale at so high a rate that it makes six or eight hundred per cent. profit.

The greater part of the revenue of the Dutch government in Borneo is derived from this opium farming, and it was mentioned to me with high satisfaction that the consumption of opium was yearly on the increase. In Pontianah the revenue from it amounted in the year 1831 to about 116,000 rupees; in Sambas to 130,000; in Java it is said to have reached the enormous sum of ten millions—more than the amount of all other taxes and duties put together.

My time during my stay at Pontianah was chiefly employed, in defiance of heat and morasses, in rambles in search of insects and reptiles, and I used to take a sort of childish pleasure on these occasions in every day crossing the equator on foot, as Pontianah lies scarcely a mile from it.

One morning while I was here I had a great fright. We were sitting quite comfortably at breakfast, when we suddenly heard a terrible screaming and running about before the house, and on stepping out into the gallery we saw a servant of the police with a drawn sword running across the street, and heard at the same time from the flying people the terrible cry, "*Amok, Amok!*" We rushed back into our dwelling instantly, and shut and locked all the doors and windows.

"Amok" is a kind of raving madness, to which the Malays, not only in Borneo, but also throughout the Indian Archipelago, are occasionally subject. It seizes on them quite suddenly, and awakens the most vehement and irresistible desire for human blood; persons under its horrid influence rush out furiously, and

Digitized by Google

attack and kill whoever they meet, were it their own wives and children, and they have to be cut down or shot like wild beasts. It is said that this frenzy sometimes originates in jealousy, but it seldom attacks any but opium-smokers.

This time we escaped with the fright, for it turned out that there was after all no "amok" about, but only three criminals escaped from the neighboring prison, where they had been confined for heavy offenses.

From Pontianah I wished to go through the heart of the country to Banjarmassing, another Dutch settlement, but as this would be a journey of two or three months, I thought it better not to undertake it alone, without any knowledge of the Dyak language. I looked out, therefore, for a faithful confidential servant or guide, but there was none to be found who would risk this certainly rather dangerous undertaking, so I had to give up my plan, and had no choice left but to go to Batavia, and there look for an opportunity of getting to Australia. This was much against my will, for I knew how dear living is in Batavia, and traveling in Java generally, and that therefore I should have to leave that beautiful country as quickly as possible. Besides this, the Dutch themselves gave me no very favorable account of their country people there, and did not even offer me letters to them, though one of them had a relative, and others friends of their youth, there. I was the more struck with this because the English invariably, without the smallest solicitation on my part, had offered me every facility, and did whatever they possibly could to render my travels agreeable. But, as I have said, I had no choice; and after I had staid at Pontianah longer than I had intended, I engaged a place in an Arabian vessel that was about to sail in a few days for Batavia.

During these few days, however, I had the pleasure of becoming acquainted with the resident, Mr. Willer, who returned from there before I started. I took the more interest in this gentleman, not only because he was the author of a very complete work on the Battakers of Sumatra, and the Alforas of Ceram, but for the efforts he had made to obtain the abolition of the debtor-slavery before mentioned.

Digitized by Google

I had also personal experience of the kindness of his disposition; for as it happened that he knew the captain of the Arabian vessel in which I had taken my place to be a worthless fellow, he would not suffer me to sail with him, but offered me an abode in his own house for all the time I might be detained, and undertook himself the care of my further progress. As it happened, however, a Dutch vessel arrived very soon after, and he engaged for me in this a passage to Batavia; and I had by this means the advantage of seeing a little more of Borneo, for this vessel was going to touch at Sambas.

On the 6th of April I left Pontianah in a government boat early in the morning, and by noon was on board the *Christian Huigens.*

I found the ship in a great bustle, for her freight consisted of a transport of troops—120 soldiers, 46 women, and about a dozen of children. Among the soldiers were thirty Europeans, but the remainder, as well as the women, were all natives of Java, and I am sorry to have to add that there was much more to object to in the behavior of the Europeans than in that of their more uncivilized brethren. I thanked God that I had no daughter or young girl with me, for I should have had to keep her locked up in her cabin. Among the half-naked Dyak savages I never saw any thing that need have offended a really innocent and modest woman; but sorrowfully I must declare, that as far as I have seen the Christians of these countries, whether they call themselves Catholic or Protestant, they are far more immoral in their conduct than the Mohammedans and heathens. The officers of these troops even declared to me that they much preferred the natives as soldiers; that they were more orderly and manageable, more attentive to their duty, and far less given to drunkenness. At least one third of the Dutch troops in the Indian Archipelago consists of natives, among whom the *Madarese* (from the island of Madara, belonging to Java) are most distinguished for valor.

We reached the roadstead of Sambas on the 8th of April, and came to anchor before the entrance to the river, after a sail of 80 miles. During this short voyage we had never lost sight of land, but had views either of Borneo itself, or of the islands and islets

Digitized by Google

which are here numerous. They were all mountainous, and covered with thick woods.

At the mouth of the Sambas there lies on a hill, 150 feet high, a small fort, named Fort *Sorg*, in memory of a Colonel Sorg, who here died of the wounds he had received in a fight with the Chinese of Mandora. The commandant of the fort, Captain Van Houten, was kind enough to take charge of me until a boat should come from Sambas to fetch me—a kindness that was so much the greater, as his dwelling consisted only of two little rooms.

I never saw so deplorable a little fort; it contained only a few low huts thatched with leaves, that just served to shelter two officers, the surgeon, and the soldiers. They said it had been erected in the greatest haste, when the Chinese at Mandora revolted and refused any longer to acknowledge the authority of the Dutch, or pay their opium taxes. Three regular battles took place in the plain that lies at the foot of the hill Pameburg, on which the fort stands, and 4000 Chinese were defeated by 600 of the Dutch troops. The Chinese thereupon vowed obedience again; but their fidelity, as may be supposed under these circumstances, is not much to be relied on, and, in fact, further disturbances are expected. When once these disputes are fairly settled, a regular fort is to be built in a more healthy spot.

I remained for two days Mr. Van Houten's guest, and then left the fort for Sambas in a government boat, which the assistant resident, Mr. Van Prehn, was so kind as to send for me. The distance is thirty-six miles, but I reached it in the evening, and was conducted to the house of the *Pangerang-rato*, a dignitary who, like the *Panam-bakan*, holds an intermediate rank between a rajah and a sultan.

Mr. Van Prehn had his own house crammed with officers, so that it was impossible for him to offer me a lodging.

The Pangerang received me in the divan, and here every thing had such a European air, that I flattered myself I had got into good quarters. After about an hour's conversation I ventured to express a wish to go to my room, and I was then asked whether I would take any thing to eat. I requested modestly that I might have a couple of boiled eggs, and then I went to my room and

Digitized by Google

waited till this banquet should make its appearance. I waited, however, a long time; but at last there came a man with a little bundle in one hand and a packet in the other, both of which he put down upon the table and unfolded. The bundle contained six eggs, the packet a pound of wax candles. This extremely simple mode of waiting upon me was the more droll, as I had had several servants, as well as a female attendant, assigned me, who followed me at every step like my shadow; but no one of them offered to bring me either a plate, or a knife, or bread, or salt. I thought if I asked for them I should have to wait as long as before, and for this I had not patience, for I longed exceedingly to go to bed; so I stretched out my hand and took one of the eggs—but, alas! it was cold and *unboiled!*

After my long day's traveling, therefore, I had to seek my couch without tasting a morsel.

My apartments consisted of a great hall, to which three steps led up; and a small part of it, separated by a partition, formed the bedroom, which had neither door nor window, and merely a little screen placed before the entrance. In the morning I could not, of course, remain in the dark hole, and went into the hall; but this had half a dozen doors, and was accessible to all comers. In a tropical country there is never any want of idle people, least of all in a princely residence; and since I besides offered rather a remarkable spectacle—for no one of the people there had ever seen a European woman—my great hall was constantly thronged; and every movement I made was watched by countless curious eyes, so that I really sometimes felt like an actress.

The next morning I felt, as may be supposed, no deficiency of appetite for breakfast—in fact, I was ravenous—when, behold, it made its appearance, and it was nothing but literally tea, without milk or bread!

I really began now to be in an ill humor, and somewhat angry with those who had sent me to a house where I was treated thus, and yet would have to submit to every thing, as I could speak to no one; but at length there arrived two gentlemen, Captain Van der Kapelle and Dr. Enthoffen, to invite me, in the name of all the officers, to take possession of one of their cottages, and I need

Digitized by Google

not say how gladly I accepted the invitation; and they took leave, promising to come for me in the evening.

In the mean while dinner-time came—a time of profound interest to me just now, for my fast had lasted for four-and-twenty hours; but as there were still no signs of preparing any meal, I took courage, and managed to signify that I desired to eat. Then the dinner was brought—rice boiled in water, half a wing of a fowl in such a fierce curry sauce that it burned my mouth like a live coal, and two thin slices of meat, roasted to a cinder, swimming in very rancid cocoa-nut oil. Even with my appetite, I could eat but little of this.

At four o'clock, however, a large basket of fruit was brought to me; but I dared not eat much, for in these countries the fruit often disagrees seriously with Europeans.

At five came my two deliverers, and Captain Van der Kapelle took me to his own house, which he had been so obliging as to retire from and find another lodging for himself and his servant, in order to leave it quite free for my accommodation, quartering himself, in the mean time, with one of the other officers.

It must not be supposed, however, that because I had a whole house for my accommodation, I had many superfluous chambers; for in truth my palace consisted but of two, and was protected by a modest roof of leaves. It had been got up rather in a hurry, like many similar edifices that stood near, to afford a shelter to the officers who had been sent for, with their men, to strengthen the garrison of Sambas during the Chinese revolt. In time of peace the whole European population, soldiers excepted, does not exceed eleven persons, the assistant resident, and some other government functionaries.

Sambas contains some thousands of inhabitants, and resembles other Malay towns in appearance, except that most of the Chinese have built their houses upon rafts, which gives the river a very animated effect to the eye. It lies, like Pontianah, in a large plain, but not in so marshy a one. In the background some mountains are visible, and before the house of the assistant resident even a large meadow with avenues of trees.

Sambas possesses, besides the fort, a hospital with spacious apart-



Digitized by Google

ments, very clean, good beds, and abundant stores of linen, medicines, and provisions; among the latter many hermetically-closed tin cases of vegetables, meats, and wines, both hock and claret. Natives of the country can be received into this hospital as well as Europeans; but they seldom make use of the privilege. They have a great dread of hospitals; for, as they see people often die in them, they think of them more as places where patients are killed than where they are cured; and when they are ill they greatly prefer quacking themselves.

To my great astonishment, I found that the Dutch here live on the same free terms with the native girls as the French do in Otaheite; and on this subject I might repeat, word for word, what I have said with reference to the latter. It struck me the more, because neither at Singapore, Sarawak, nor any other of the English colonies, have I ever seen any thing of the kind.

Although there is not much to be seen at Sambas, my time passed quickly and agreeably enough. Mr. Van Prehn used to send me his boat every morning, with two Malays, who rowed me into the forest, and there accompanied me on my rambles. To tropical heat I was already accustomed, and also to the morasses. As for serpents and dangers of that kind, I never thought about them. I am afraid, too, I must myself be classed among the destructive animals; for whatever attacked us "died the death;" and neither insect, reptile, nor butterfly escaped our merciless scientific enthusiasm. In the afternoons I had employment enough to get my morning's victims into order, and in the evening I received visitors. I shall always remember with pleasure and gratitude the European residents in Sambas, especially Messrs. Van der Kapelle, Enthoffen, and Van der Prehn. They gave me a much better account of their Batavian fellow-countrymen than my friends in Pontianah had done, and they furnished me with abundance of introductions; so that I looked forward to my journey thither with much better spirits.

On the 26th of April I left Sambas; but it was to return to Pontianah, whence the ship had to take a cargo of rattans and 50,000 cocoa-nuts, bought here for a shilling a hundred, to be carried to Batavia.

Digitized by Google

At the mouth of the river I had the pleasure of meeting and breakfasting with Mr. and Mrs. Willer, who were coming to Sambas about the Chinese affair. At Fort Soy I met with the same cordial reception as before from Captain Van Houten, and he surprised me this time with a present of a collection of insects and a remarkably beautiful and rare plant.

On the 1st of May I went again on board; but we had four days' work to get over the sand-banks by which this roadstead is surrounded. On the first day the sailors caught a boa, which had probably been swept from the land by the tide. It came swimming straight toward our ship, regarding it doubtless as a safe place of refuge, and tried to come on board; and so it did, but not till it had departed this life. It measured eighteen feet in length, and was eight inches in diameter.

The sailors pulled its skin off, and were then going to throw it into the sea; but I advised them not to do that, but to eat it. They laughed at me, of course, and recommended me, if I liked it, to eat it myself, as I was quite welcome to their share. I immediately had a slice cut off and broiled, and began forthwith to eat it in their presence.*

When they saw that, the boldest among them stepped forward and asked me to let him taste it. I gave him a little bit, which he so much approved of that the others soon followed, and they tasted so much that at last I had the laugh on my side. It was then unanimously determined that the dead enemy should be eaten, and both soldiers and sailors thanked me for the good advice I had given them.

We had thirty soldiers on board, as well as some women and children; and among them were several sick, going to Batavia for change of air; and one of whom, a native of Java, died during the voyage. Immediately on the decease the body was laid near the main-mast; and after six hours it was wrapped in a mat, some

* Those who have read the account of my First Journey Round the World will perhaps remember that at Singapore I went out with a tiger hunt, in which, instead of a tiger, we killed a boa. We gave it to some Chinese at a pepper plantation, who, after skinning, proceeded to cook and eat it. I tasted their curious dish, and found it by no means unpleasant.

Digitized by Google

stones were fastened to the head and feet, and it was laid on a plank and pushed into the sea. No one of his countrymen or comrades—nay, not even his wife—showed the slightest emotion on the occasion. Her eyes remained dry, and her features expressed the most perfect indifference.

I had remarked that when the body was wrapped in the mat some of the countrymen of the deceased put some coins in with it; and on my inquiring why this was done, I was told that, according to the popular belief, when some coins were given to a dead man thrown into the sea he did not come up again.

We did not drop our anchor in the roads of Pontianah till the 8th of May, and on the 22d I again left it for the last time.

As this was my final farewell to Borneo, I will take this opportunity of saying a few words about the various races with whom I became acquainted there.

The Dyaks, who constitute by far the greater part of the population, pleased me best, as I have already said; and, indeed, not merely among the races of Borneo, but among all the races of the earth with whom I have come in contact. They—or, at all events, the free tribes—are of an uncorrupted, innocent, and noble character. The Malays, on the contrary, made a most unfavorable impression on me; and with respect to them I can but confirm what is said of them by most travelers. I believe, indeed, that the Malays of Borneo are the worst of their race; they cheat, lie, steal, treat the Dyaks who are subject to them with great harshness, and appear to have very little affection for their wives and children. They break the conjugal tie on the slightest inducement; and I have known both men and women, hardly thirty years of age, who had been married six or eight times; though they will sometimes, after having made two or three other matrimonial experiments, come back to the first spouse.

The men, of course, as Mohammedans, are allowed by law to take several wives at a time.

Besides possessing the amiable qualities thus indicated, these Malays are slothful, indifferent to the feelings of others, and dirty beyond description. They do, indeed, according to the prescriptions of the Koran, perform certain ablutions—that is to say, they

Digitized by Google

let the water run over them two or three times a day; but they do not wash off the impurities of the skin, or even dry themselves. Their food is poor, because they are too lazy to plant any thing but rice. In every hut I stopped at in the course of my travels in Borneo I used to see both men and women lying half, nay, whole days, gossiping, chewing siri, dozing, playing with the children, or doing nothing whatever, except perhaps gaping at me for hours together.

The Chinese are known to be in their country artful, deceitful, and cruel, and they do not change these qualities when they emigrate any more than they do their customs or their clothing. They have, however, on the other hand, the merit of patient industry; they appear attached to their children; and probably for this very reason they do not so frequently change their wives.

The Chinese play in Borneo very much the part of the Jews in Poland or Hungary. All trades and mechanical arts are in their hands; they farm or work the mines, and also cultivate the land with incomparably more care than either Dyaks or Malays. Their food, as might be expected, is much better; they keep, as I have said, both pigs and poultry; and they raise vegetables and fruit. Tea stands with them in the place of water, and they drink frequently a kind of cream obtained from rice, and sweetened with sugar.

In general, the Chinese may be regarded as the citizens of the country, the Malays as the peasants, and the dependent Dyaks as the slaves.

The description sometimes given of the hard lot of the women of Borneo I believe to be grossly exaggerated, especially with respect to the Dyaks. People who think they suffer hardship must know certainly little enough of the daily lives of large classes of women in many European countries. They have not seen, as I have, in Germany, a poor peasant woman, heavily laden with provisions, setting off before daylight to walk to a distant market for the chance of selling her load, returning exhausted in the evening, and then having her children and her cows to attend to, to clean out the cow-house, and often to go in the fields afterward to help the men with their work. They have not seen, I suppose, a poor

Digitized by Google

washer-woman standing at her tub from three in the morning till seven or eight at night, till the skin is fairly rubbed off her fingers. They have not known how, in some European cities, women are continually carrying loads of wood up four or five pairs of stairs to the tops of the houses; they have never heard of needle-women sitting twelve or fourteen hours a day, or more, in a dull, close room, and scarcely even once a week getting to see the real light of day or the blessed sunshine! No! indeed, there is no harder lot than that of many and many a poor woman of Europe.

The Bornean women weave baskets and leafy screens for the walls of their huts, as well as look after their children and their little domestic concerns. They go sometimes into the fields, the Dyak women especially, at all events during the rice harvest, for some hours in the day, and they cut a basketful or so of rice, and carry it home; but what is wanted for mats and for the huts is brought home by the men. The women sit in airy, shady, open rooms, working just as much as they please, for there is no one to urge them on, and taking it quite easy. If the piece of work is not done to-day, it will be to-morrow or the day after. The children give them but little trouble; they run about naked, and do whatever they like, and when a woman has an infant at the breast she remains entirely at home. As for cookery, among the Chinese it is done by the men; and the Dyaks and Malays scarcely do any cookery but boiling rice. They have no cattle, and the pigs and poultry mostly find their own food. They have no sauce-pans to scour, no rooms to clean; for all kinds of dirt are dropped easily and conveniently through the trellised bamboo floor. As for washing and mending clothes, since they wear only one garment, and the children none, that does not fall very hard upon them; so that, on the whole, we can hardly, I think, ascribe—as some sympathizing travelers have done—the early appearance of age in the Bornean women to their laborious lives. I rather think that their early marriages—as early not unfrequently as the eleventh or twelfth year—have to do with this phenomenon.

Digitized by Google

## CHAPTER VI.

Batavia.—Things remarkable.—Chinese Play.—Buitenzorg.—Performance at the Governor General's.—Typanas.—Ascent of the Pangerang.—Pandong.—The Tea Plantations.—Coffee-mills.—Sulphur.—Return to Batavia.—Excursion to Tangerang.—Popular Recreations.

We had a favorable voyage of only seven days from Pontianah to Batavia, a distance of four hundred miles. From the roads you see little of the town, and nothing at all of the residence of the Europeans—only a wide, fruitful plain, surrounded by mountains. The passage from the roads to the town (three miles) has to be made in government boats, and a payment of three rupees is demanded for it. A ship captain may indeed use his own boats if he likes; but should he do so, he would have to pay all the same, and goods can only be landed in those belonging to the goverment. For the carriage that took me from the landing-place I had to pay three rupees more, and a half rupee for every cooly; so that altogether, including the donations, I did not get ashore under nine or ten rupees—about four times as much as it would have cost in Calcutta, which certainly no one ever reckoned a cheap place.

I alighted at the Hotel Neederland, but the next morning I received a visit from the resident, Mr. Van Rees, to whom I had brought a letter of introduction from Sambas, and who invited me in the most cordial manner to his house, and sent for me the same day. His wife, a most pleasing and highly-educated woman, was no less friendly; so that my entrance into Batavia was effected in a very easy and agreeable manner. The proprietor of the Hotel Neederland, too, a Mr. Hovesand, when he found who I was, refused to accept any payment, but politely begged me "not to spoil the pleasure he had in receiving so great a traveler" by insisting on making him pecuniary compensation.

Batavia has a population of 100,000 persons, among whom are 2000 Europeans and 20,000 Chinese. The town is not hand-

Digitized by Google

some, the houses small and insignificant, especially in the Chinese quarter, crowded almost one upon another. The Europeans have merely their counting-houses in the town, and live in villas outside it. The principal spots inhabited by them are *Königsplein*, *Waterloo-plain*, *Cramot*, and *Ryswick*. The two first have spacious and beautiful meadows, with avenues of trees about which the European residents ride and walk in the evenings. Waterloo-plain boasts also of a Waterloo Column, and here are the abodes of the officers, and the largest government buildings, and a court of justice, as well as the public schools and a theatre, besides other large edifices, among which the most remarkable are the Catholic and Protestant churches, the police court, the museum, the *Harmony*—a kind of club—and the military and Chinese hospitals: the post-office was not yet finished when I was there. The palace of the Governor General is insignificant;* his actual residence, indeed, is at Buitenzorg, six-and-thirty miles from the town, and he only comes to Batavia for a few days in every month, in order to give audience, hold courts, and receive company at dinners and balls.

The houses of the Europeans are mostly modest in their style, only one story high; and they are wanting in the prettiest feature of houses in tropical countries, the terraces on the tops. They have, on the contrary, heavy roofs with deep projections, overhanging doors and windows, for the sake of shade. The interiors, however, have spacious and lofty halls and chambers, the floors neatly covered with matting; and they almost all stand in green meadows or beautiful flower-gardens, which are not, as in Calcutta or Bombay, surrounded by thick walls, but by living hedges or elegant railings; and this makes walking among them extremely pleasant, for you seem to be always in a large well-kept park.

I had heard much of the luxurious style of living among the Europeans of Batavia, and perhaps I might have been struck by some things had I not previously visited British India; but whoever has seen the buildings, equipages, dinners, and so forth, in

* Java, including the small neighboring island of Madura, has an extent of 47,000 square miles, and a population of nine and a half millions.

Digitized by Google

Calcutta, can hardly be much struck with any thing of the kind any where else.

The taste of the Batavian grandees in the dress of their attendants certainly did strike me, but not exactly with admiration. I should not have thought the costume of European livery servants so beautiful as to be worth transplanting to this distant quarter; but they, it seems, do. In some of the first houses I saw lackeys in richly laced livery coats and gorgeous breeches, but at the same time with bare feet, and the handkerchief wrapped round the head, which is characteristic of their country. When, too, as was sometimes the case, the dark-brown face and wrapped-up head was finished off with a European footman's livery hat, the effect was such as even to endanger one's gravity. The poor fellows really looked like dressed-up orang-outangs. The mode of life of the Europeans here is much the same as in British India; and every where you find the same succession of dinners and entertainments, in which people who have nothing to do get others to come and help them.

The ladies wear all the morning the sarang and jacket of the natives, but in the evening appear in European full dress; and the afternoons are always devoted to sleep.

Batavia is said to have been in former days very unhealthy, but it is less so at present than it used to be, as many of the marshes have been drained. The Dutch, especially the men, seem to bear the climate better than the English do; and I saw several gentlemen who had lived fifteen or twenty years uninterruptedly in Java, and yet looked as fresh and healthy as if they had just left Europe. The women do not look so strong; but here, too, extremely early marriages are customary; so much so, indeed, that the government has thought it necessary to interfere, and prohibit the marriage of girls of European families *under the age of fifteen.*

The people do not so often send their children to Europe as the Anglo-Indians do; indeed, most of the girls are brought up entirely in the country; but young men who have any hopes of obtaining important official appointments are obliged to be sent to Europe, as they would not otherwise be eligible, even though they

Digitized by Google

should possess in perfection every kind of knowledge likely to be serviceable in this country.

With respect to the healthiness of the climate of Java, I have great doubts whether it is really superior to British India; the difference may very likely be attributable to the greater quantity of strong drinks consumed in the latter. Living is at least one fifth, if not one fourth, more expensive here than in Calcutta.

Slavery unfortunately exists in Java, though it does not appear in its worst form. No owner is allowed to punish a slave, and the one is as free to lay a complaint as the other. The slave receives, besides his entire maintenance, a trifle every month to buy siri. No new slave can be imported, but the children of slave parents remain in slavery; and this law gives occasion to frequent frauds and crimes, especially among the Chinese, for when a child of a slave dies they frequently contrive to substitute for it some orphan of free parents, to make themselves amends for the loss.

A healthy slave, who has no other recommendation than his bodily strength, costs about 400 rupees; a cook, male or female, from 600 to 800.

To the honor of the Dutch I must mention that it is very common for them to give their slaves their freedom, and that not only when they leave India, but solely from motives of philanthropy. Mr. and Mrs. Van Rees, for instance, on the 1st of June in this year, set the whole of their slaves free; but no one of them left the house—they all begged to be allowed to remain. The same benevolent action was performed by the widow of the resident Overhand; and in that case also the emancipated slaves remained in her service. It was in the company of the above-mentioned gentleman I visited the various public institutions of the place. We began with the Chinese hospital, which was built with Chinese money; that is to say, with the produce of a small tax levied on them for that purpose by the Dutch government. The sum was found in time considerable enough for the erection of this fine building, which is provided with European doctors, and native nurses and attendants; it has also a department devoted to the care of the insane. When I saw it there were sixty-eight patients of this class, and one hundred and forty-seven others. We went

Digitized by Google

into two of the wards, and on this occasion I could not help admiring the kind-heartedness of Mr. Van Rees. He went up to the beds, even of those affected with eruptive diseases, who had an indescribably disgusting appearance, and whose breath and surrounding atmosphere must have been dangerous, asking how they were, and speaking some kind and consolatory words to each. Children with tumors and cutaneous affections he patted on the cheeks, and laughed and joked with like an affectionate father. I must own, to my shame, that I kept myself several yards off, and that I should have found it hard to prevail on myself to follow his noble example.

This hospital is the most complete that I have ever seen; a patient could not be better cared for in a well-arranged private house. The beds are excellent, the apartments airy and beautifully clean. The patients, both sick and convalescent, are clothed till they leave the house in dazzlingly white garments. When a sick person is brought in, his entire clothing is taken from him and kept till the day of his departure. The officers of the institution have handsome rooms in a quite separate part of the building.

We arrived in such good time in the morning that we witnessed the distribution of the breakfast. The Europeans got good coffee, with sugar and milk, and beautiful white bread. The natives prefer living in their own fashion, and they received rice, vegetables, fish, meat, etc. We were taken into the bath and store rooms, in which were most ample stocks of body and house linen, stores of fine fresh provisions, beverages of various kinds, and all sorts of surgical instruments. In one of the rooms were parts of the human body which had been attacked by any peculiar disease, preserved in spirits; and here I noticed also the skeleton of a sailor, who, after he had completely broken his backbone in falling from the top of a mast, had been kept alive for six weeks by the care and skill of Dr. Enthoffen, whom I had become acquainted with in Sambas.

At this hospital native young men, as well as girls and women, are instructed in various branches of medical science. The former are qualified to become assistants to the medical men; they are taught the structure of the human body, and the mode of setting

Digitized by Google

fractured limbs, bleeding, etc.; and they are often sent into parts of the interior country where no other medical assistance can be obtained. The girls and women are instructed in midwifery. Some of the young people were questioned in my presence on various points, and they gave with little hesitation very correct answers, and could name all the parts of the skeleton that stood in their room, and explain their structure. The feminine pupils were no less well informed; and this surprised and pleased me still more, as women and girls in these countries are never accustomed to learn any thing. During the time they are receiving instruction in the hospital (two years), they are kept closely secluded; they never leave the premises, and are allowed to receive only female visitors. The young men are allowed to go out for some hours every day, but it does not appear that they ever abuse the privilege. They are generally industrious and quick of comprehension.

The museum contains, with the exception of specimens of minerals and many idols from Bali, nothing that is very remarkable, for it is in this country so very difficult to preserve specimens of quadrupeds, reptiles, and insects, that they are mostly sent to Holland.

The governmental buildings in Waterloo Place contain a large Hall of Session, with portraits of all the Dutch governors general; but I visited it chiefly for the sake of seeing a collection of drawings by a countryman of mine (Mr. Wilsau, of Vienna) of the magnificent Hindoo temples in the interior of Java. The sight of these drawings awakened in me the liveliest desire to see the originals; but, alas! the expenses of traveling in Java were far too heavy for my slender means.

The prisons of Batavia I found incomparably better kept than ours in Europe. The rooms are all airy and clean, and the prisoners can enjoy the open air and sunshine in a small garden attached to it. Twice a day they have a large portion of rice with fish, and vegetables and meat twice a week. They are not fettered, nor even deprived of their beloved siri; and I doubt if any where else criminals are treated with so much indulgence. To what extent this may be desirable, is a question I need not enter upon here.

Digitized by Google

I did not enter the theatre; for, as my wardrobe was arranged merely for traveling, I was by no means fit to make my appearance in the full blaze of European finery. I did not feel this as any great privation; for there was not much pleasure in seeing an old, well-known European play, or an opera that I knew by heart, in this distant part of the world, where it must necessarily be given in very inferior style. I had far more curiosity to see a Chinese theatrical performance, which the Governor, who was unwearied in his kind attention to me, induced the Chinese *major** to get up in my honor.

This major, like most wealthy Chinese, both here and in their native country, kept his own dancing-girls, who are also actresses, and undertake to represent the male as well as female characters. The theatre was a wooden booth, put up opposite the major's house, in the street, so that every passer-by could partake of the amusement; and we ourselves witnessed it from the balcony of one of the windows of the house.

The piece was played by six actresses; and as there were always officers or soldiers on the stage, I presumed it was something of a warlike nature. Besides these heroes, there appeared two servants, who frequently mourned and wept; but what I admired most in the whole affair, was the terrific combats, sometimes of two, sometimes of four warriors. They screamed the words in a loud, harsh, monotonous voice, without any attempt to express feeling; their gestures were any thing but graceful, and not always such as one liked to see—considering that the warriors were young ladies; and when they marched, they drew up their feet as high as they could in their trowsers, and set them down again with a thundering tramp that one certainly did not expect under those circumstances. Their dresses were extremely rich, being made of heavy silk stuff, with embroideries and costly gold fringe, but very tasteless as to the form. They consisted of long petticoats with wide sleeves and short trowsers.

The piece was in four acts, but the last three were so exactly like each other, that one might have thought the actors were constantly repeating the same.

* The chief of the Chinese in Batavia bears this title.

Digitized by Google

When the play was over we were led to a table spread with "all the delicacies of the season" (in Chinese estimation), including the favorite *trippang*, and the still more delicious birds'-nests, both of which are salt, have a strongly spiced taste, and would assuredly not tempt a European palate to excess.

Only a few days had passed since my arrival in Batavia when I received an invitation to Buitenzorg, to the Governor General's, Mr. Deimar van Twist; and I acknowledge these civilities with so much the more thankfulness from their coming really as a surprise to me, after the very unfavorable account I had had of the Dutch in Batavia.

On the 1st of June I went to Buitenzorg in company with Mr. Rees. The roads were very fine, and, as we found post-horses* ready at every stage, we did the thirty-five paals (about as many English miles) in three hours. The farther you go from the town the more charming becomes the country, the mountain-chain appears more distinctly, and summits of from 6000 to 10,000 feet high rise majestically out of it. The most prominent are the Pangerang, of 9600, and the Gedé, of 9000 feet. Buitenzorg itself lies 800 feet above the level of the sea.

The palace of the Governor General is a stately building, consisting of a centre and two wings; it lies on a magnificent well-watered meadow, shaded by immense far-spreading banyan-trees; troops of deer were straying about it, and behind stretched the extensive botanical garden.

As I was not to be presented till eight o'clock in the evening (just before dinner), I had plenty of time to see the grounds, which are very large, and laid out with great taste. Beautiful parterres of flowers alternate with groves and lawns, and thickets, and bright clear water glitters through the fresh green leaves. The paths and roads are kept in the most beautiful order, and cross each other in every direction, while elegant seats offer themselves for repose to the weary. Among the plants and trees there are some rare and valuable specimens. Mr. Tresmann, the superintendent of the garden, pointed out especially a plantation of vanilla, a climbing

* When post-horses are wanted in Java it is always necessary to send notice beforehand.

Digitized by Google

plant, and two delicate exotics, both of which had been lately introduced from America. With the vanilla the climate seemed to agree extremely well, and its branches were hanging down loaded with large juicy pods. These are cut off in a green state, and dried first in the sun, and then in the air, until they are quite shriveled and have turned black. Mr. Tresmann presented some to me, which were equal to the finest I have ever seen in the West Indies. The China plants do not succeed quite so well; some were already dead, and the living looked in a rather languishing condition.

In the evening I was presented to the Governor General and his lady, and the former took me in to dinner. I had heard from every one that this gentleman was extremely serious and taciturn; but though his countenance had certainly at first a deeply serious and thoughtful expression, I found him by no means sparing of his words, and even the seriousness gave way to a pleasant, tranquil cheerfulness. Nothing could be more kind and engaging than his manners and those of his lady toward myself. I passed three days with them in Buitenzorg, and they were continually making parties to show me all that was best worth seeing in the neighborhood, especially the cochineal plantations of the Count van der Bosch, and the swallow grottoes, from which the Chinese procure the costly dainty of swallows' nests.

The estate of Count van der Boseh, *Pendeh-Gédé*, may be regarded in every respect as a model farm. The Count is an intelligent and zealous agriculturist, and exerts himself particularly to bring this branch of his rural economy to perfection; but the cochineal plantations constitute only a small part of the land he has under cultivation, as he also raises rice, sugar, coffee, and so forth.

For me the cochineal plantations had the most interest, and I made the longest stay in them, to which I was the more inclined, as the director, Mr. Meyer, himself conducted me through them and explained every thing.

The cochineal plant, or nopal, a plant of the cactus tribe, was, it seems, brought here only twenty-four years ago, from one of the Spanish West India possessions. Of the many insects brought

Digitized by Google

with it, two only reached Java alive, but fortunately they were of different sexes. At what a rapid rate these creatures are propagated may be imagined when it is stated that Java has now for several years past been exporting from 150,000 to 200,000 *pounds* of them annually; and on repeated trial, it has been found that 33,000 of the largest sort go to a pound.

In beginning a nopal plantation, healthy leaves or plants are placed with the lower part in the ground, and in the course of a year a little stem is formed with several leaves upon it. In the third year the plant is fit to receive its insect population. To effect this, a little bag is made of cactus leaves, five or six cochineal insects placed in it, and it is then fastened with a thorn under one of the leaves of the nopal plant. One of these plants generally has as much as 300 leaves, but not more than seventy or eighty of the bags of insects are placed on each. In the western part of Java the cultivator is very content if, on the average, every four plants will yield a pound of the living cochineal insect, but in the east of the island the same quantity is usually obtained from three.

When the plants are fully peopled, they are either left open, or covered with a sort of roof of leaves. In the first case, the propagation only goes on as long as the dry weather lasts, but when the plants are sheltered, it may go on nearly the whole year. According to the common course, the rainy season may be considered to be over in the month of April; but in the west of Java, where, even in the good time of the year, it often rains, plants which have been left uncovered sometimes have to be peopled from six to nine times with the insect before a good harvest is obtained.

As soon as the insect (*Coccus cacti*) has produced its progeny, it dies, and the new-born ones crawl about on the leaves, fasten upon some place, and remain there without moving any more; and when the insects are taken from the plant, they are dried in rooms heated to 165° or 175° of Fahrenheit.

These drying-rooms are heated by means of iron tubes, and the moist vapor which arises is let out at an opening in the wall. A hundred pounds of the fresh insects do not yield much more than thirty pounds when dried, besides three pounds of dust. This fine dust, in which the insect is enveloped, appears to afford it

Digitized by Google

some protection against rain. It has a silvery-gray color, but when this is gently rubbed off the insect appears black.

The price of cochineal has been falling very much in these latter years, and the Dutch factory only pays two rupees a pound for the best kind, and eighty-five *doits* (about sevenpence) for the refuse, the expense of packing and transport to the place of embarkation included.

The great Swallow Grotto, in which thousands of these birds build their nests, lies about twelve miles from Buitenzorg, and is farmed along with the adjacent lands by a Chinese, who pays for both 100,000 rupees a year. The farmer led us himself into the grotto, which is very difficult of access. We had guides, torch-bearers, ladders, and so forth, with us, but could not, nevertheless, penetrate far into the interior. Some nests were found, however, which were presented to me; they were of a whitish color, with some feathers intermixed, and so small that I can hardly understand how a bird of the size of an ordinary swallow could find room in them for itself, not to speak of its young family. It is conjectured that they are made of a kind of sea-weed, as these swallows always build in caves and grottoes at no great distance from the sea—not, at all events, more than thirty or forty miles inland.

The *harvest* of nests is reaped every three months, and they are then carefully cleansed from the feathers and dried in the air. The whiter and freer from feathers they are, the higher price they fetch; but it is not always possible to purify them entirely from the mixture of feathers, as they are so closely interwoven and amalgamated with the sea-weed. These extraordinary dainties cost in Java from 400 to 700 pounds the picul. Three nests are reckoned to an ounce, and, if purchased singly, they cost on the spot from one to two rupees a piece. The farmer of these grottoes reaps annually about twelve piculs of nests.

The Governor General gave me the pleasant surprise of ordering post-horses for me to Bandong, the seat of the Resident of Preang—a great favor, I must observe, which is shown to very few.

On the 11th of June I left Buitenzorg, but only to go a distance of ten miles, as I was to stop at the house of a family of the name



Digitized by Google

of Back, where I passed two most pleasant days. They did every thing that was possible to make my stay agreeable; and when they discovered my entomological propensities the whole family assisted me in my researches. My hearty thanks to them and my other friends in Java, whose kindness and sympathy I shall never forget. On the 13th I went on ten or twelve miles farther to Typanas, a summer-house of the Governor General's. The way led over the *Mega-Mendango*, a mountain almost 5000 feet high; and nearly at its summit, about a quarter of a mile from the road, lay a small lake in the midst of fine woods, and filling the crater of an extinct volcano. It is not more than a quarter of a mile in diameter; but high precipitous walls of rock rise round it, so that it is only accessible at one point, where the rock has been cleft by nature. These rocky walls are clothed to their very tops with a mantle of the richest green, and covered by fine trees. The water of the lake looks very dark; but this may proceed merely from the deep shadow of the surrounding woods.

The prospect from the Mega-Mendango is one of the most beautiful in Java. On one side you have majestic mountains, behind you the wide richly-cultivated plain of Buitenzorg, and Batavia; before you the Residence of Preang, varied by ranges of hills, groups of rocks, and detached mountains, and one of the most fertile and best cultivated parts of Java—which is saying much, for over the whole island the richness of the culture vies with the lavish prodigality of nature.

Preparations had been made for my reception in the Governor's summer-house at Typanas, a place that lies 3400 feet above the sea-level, and possesses a half European climate. I found chimneys in the rooms, and even our German stoves, and in the extensive gardens the fruits and vegetables of Europe.

From here I was to ascend the Pangerang, a mountain nearly 10,000 feet high; but the ascent is so easy that you can ride almost to the top. There are two stations on the way, that is to say, two wooden cottages, where you stop to let your horses rest, or exchange the tired for fresh ones; and there is a third cottage, only 150 feet below the summit, which has been erected for the convenience of the botanical gardeners of Buitenzorg and Typa-

Digitized by Google

nas, who come to visit plantations made on various parts of the mountain.

I found fresh horses ready at each station, and in four hours reached the summit, where a flag-staff has been erected.

Unfortunately I enjoyed no fine prospect, for all the country below was vailed in mist; so that I had to go down again in a great measure without my errand.

In descending I halted at one of the cottages and was refreshed by strawberries, of which there are here large plantations.

The cottage, which was in rather a decaying condition, contained one large room and three small ones; and of furniture there was no superfluity. There were two very shaky tables and three chairs in the grand saloon; and in the bedrooms the beds were made only with moss; but there was a small iron stove which I saw with great satisfaction, and which did me good service, especially in the evenings, as the thermometer had fallen to 44° Fahrenheit. Of food and drink, bed-linen, etc., there was great abundance, as a most liberal supply had been sent on for me; so that here, in the midst of primeval forests, on the top of a mountain almost 10,000 feet high, I lived as luxuriously as in Batavia itself.

The entire mountain is thickly wooded, with the exception of an area of about 100 feet at the top, which is bare. The mountain yields some fine specimens of ferns, which, near the summit, form trees of twenty feet high. All the trees are clothed with an astonishingly thick moss, and all around me was beautiful and magnificent; but still there was wanting the great charm of a clear sky, for the absence of which nothing can entirely make amends. I went up full six times to the top of the mountain, but every time returned disappointed. In the intervals I loitered into the woods, and discovered many traces of the rhinoceros, but not the animal itself, for they fly the neighborhood of man; and it is a rare thing, even to the hunters, to surprise one.

From the top of the Pangerang I could see completely over the crater of the neighboring Gedé—and, indeed, the two mountains are so closely connected that they might be regarded as a single one with a double summit. The crater lay only 600 or 700 feet

Digitized by Google

below us; but we could not go to it, as there had been an eruption only a few days before, and thick clouds of smoke and glowing ashes were still rising out of it, which, at least at night, afforded us a very fine spectacle. Great part of the forest of the Pangerang was covered by ashes, and if we touched a bough, we brought down a regular shower of them upon our heads.

On the following morning I thought I would make one more visit to the summit, and my perseverance was at length rewarded, for the horizon was without a cloud, and I could gaze far over this mountain-world—over countless peaks and summits—over fallen-in craters—over the rich plain of Buitenzorg, and Bátavia, and the undulating slopes of Preang, and the ocean beyond, on both sides of the island. Can such a sight as that be bought too dearly? | You live an age in such a moment, and feel your heart filled with sublime emotions that seem to bear you up toward a nobler, better world. |

On the following day, the 18th of June, I went on to Bandong, a distance of forty miles. Abounding as Java does in high mountains, I saw no river, but only brooks and torrents, that forced their way through ravines, and went foaming over masses of rock; so that it is only when much rain has fallen and the water is high they can be navigated, and then only with bamboo rafts. The cause of this deficiency in rivers is easily perceived in the shape of the island, which is so very narrow in proportion to its length.

I was surprised to see in this diligently cultivated country, where human labor can be so well employed, men performing the office of beasts of burden. All burdens are carried by the coolies, even should the distance be more than 100 miles; and they receive rather less than a farthing a mile for their labor. They carry eighty or ninety pounds each, by means of a pole resting on their shoulders. There are resting stations for these porters, as for horses; and at every village a certain number of men must every day be ready to perform this service, at the above rate of payment; and, small as it is, you can trust any property to them without the slightest hesitation. The government goods only, coffee, sugar, salt, etc., are carried in carts drawn by

Digitized by Google

buffaloes, but as the roads are generally very bad,* especially in rainy weather, and these carts often sink up to their axles in mud, you can not give a pair of buffaloes a load of more than at the utmost eight piculs (1000 pounds) to draw. Men perform here, however, the services of animals of draught as well as of burden, as I had often occasion to see. At the first river I had to cross on this last day's journey, the road descended very abruptly to a bridge, and here the horses were taken out and men harnessed to the carriage in their places. The second river had no bridge at all, and then the men had to pull the carriage through the water, while horses and buffaloes walked in a leisurely manner by the side of them. It reminded me, by a curious contrast, of Iceland. Here, in Java, where food for horses and oxen is to be found in the greatest abundance, man himself serves as a beast of burden; in Iceland, where you have almost to look for the grass with a telescope, people will not only not carry any thing, but will hardly set foot to the ground themselves.

Traveling with post-horses in Java, you get on pretty quickly, rather too quickly sometimes; for I should occasionally, as in Russia, have given the drivers their fee with more pleasure if they had driven at a slower rate, particularly over the hills and mountains, where the roads were often full of holes or of great stones.

But exactly when we came to the top of a height, the horses were urged forward to their utmost speed by the cries and whips of the drivers; and we generally went over these places faster than on the finest plain, the poor animals arriving at the station breathless, trembling, and covered with sweat.

This was so painful to me that it spoiled the pleasure of the journey; but I tried in vain to induce the drivers to alter their plan. They assured me that it was unavoidable, that the horses of Java are so willful and obstinate that they would otherwise stand stock still at the top of every hill. Perhaps this willfulness is often only the result of their bad training; but they will sometimes, when they are first put in, not move a step, and it is

* Near the post-road, which runs all through Java, is another destined only for these carts.

Digitized by Google

only with great trouble—that is to say, by screaming at, and whipping them—that they can be made to set off. Sometimes also they will stand still in the middle of the way, and then, as a matter of course, they suffer for it. A society against cruelty to animals would be by no means out of place in Java.

Whether your carriage contains one person or several, you drive in the plain with four, and in the mountain region with six horses; and, besides the driver, every pair is provided with a runner, who does not indeed run the whole stage, but at every turn of the road, at bridges, in going up hill or down, he must always be at the side of his cattle. To get over very high hills, you have two or even four oxen harnessed in front of your six horses.

Posting is as dear in Java, or dearer, perhaps, than in any other country in the world. A stage of six or eight miles will cost, including the fee to the driver, from eight to twelve rupees. You have to give a trifle to every runner, to every ox-driver, and every time you get fresh horses, which may be two or three times between one station and another; so that though you give very small coins each time, your hand seems constantly in your pocket. It would be infinitely more agreeable to have all these little sums reckoned and charged at once with the horses. To be sure most people have servants with them to take the trouble of these little matters off their hands, but I was mistress and servant in one, and had it all on my own.

In Bandong, situated at a height of rather more than 2000 feet, I was received with the utmost politeness by the assistant-resident, Mr. Van Gasbak, and I remained some days in order to visit a tea plantation, some coffee-mills, and other noteworthy things.

On the way to the tea plantation we went a little out of our way to see the waterfall of *Tjurung-Tjecapandang*. We came to a fallen-in crater, which, like that of the mountain Meda-Mendango, had transformed itself into a lake; but it is much smaller, being under 150 feet in length, and in breadth still less. Into this lake there falls from a height of about seventy feet over a wall of rock, a slender, rather too slender, stream of water, which forces

Digitized by Google

itself a passage, and then winds away prettily through the valley below. The walls of the crater are, like those before mentioned, overgrown with trees, and draperied with climbing plants.

This tea plantation is a very extensive one, and stretches over many hills and slopes; and it is said that the present farmer, Mr. Bramsteed, possesses above a million of the shrubs. Tea, like coffee, flourishes best on hilly ground; the plants are kept low, as I have seen them in the neighborhood of Canton; few being more than three or four feet in height; and ten of these, it is calculated, are required to produce one pound of tea. The mode of preparation is here very simple, and requires much less manipulation than in the Chinese factories. Instead of having every separate leaf of the green tea rolled as is done there, they here take a whole handful at once, give them a kind of light kneading, and then let them fall on a copper plate and dry by a gentle heat, in which process they fall apart of themselves, but certainly do not look so pretty and regular as by the true Chinese method.

The tea plantations of Java, as well as those of sugar and coffee, are the property of the government, but are usually farmed on a fifteen or twenty years' lease. The government gives the farmer the ground and the plantation ready formed, and secures to him a certain number of workmen at a fixed price. The rate of wages in this, as in all the residences far off Batavia, is extraordinarily low. A day laborer has but ten doits a day, and a pound of rice, worth about two more. For the plucking the tea, which is the chief part of the work, women and children are employed, who of course get still less. The farmer receives from the government seventy-five doits a pound for the tea, and his profit is considered to be at least a hundred per cent.

The Java tea is said to improve much by the voyage to Holland; but, after all, connoisseurs give the preference to that of China.

The method of gathering in the rice harvest in Java is rather curious, as the reapers make use of very little knives, with which they cut every ear separately in the middle of the stalk. The ears are then made up into little bundles and carried home on poles upon the people's shoulders, and every one who likes to help in

Digitized by Google

the harvest may do so, and may keep one fifth part of what he reaps for himself.

My next object was to visit the coffee-mills at Lembang, eight miles off, and with this I meant to unite an excursion to the sulphur crater at *Tangherbon-prank*, four miles further; but as I arrived at Lembang in rainy weather, and the visit to the crater had necessarily to be put off, I thankfully accepted the invitation of Mr. Plippeau, the proprietor of the coffee-mills, to remain a few days in his house.

In order that this dull afternoon might not be quite unemployed, Mr. Plippeau explained to me the treatment of the coffee from beginning to end; and I found that they make much more ceremony with it than they do in Brazil. The coffee is here received into great tanks of water as it comes from the trees, and left in them till the capsule or husk that contains the bean can be easily crushed. In this state it is put into wooden chests furnished with holes, through which the beans can pass, and squeezed and worked with the hand until they are quite loosened from the pod; after this the beans are laid out to dry, and then put into a great machine called a mill, where they are freed from a fine skin that envelopes them. Nothing remains after this but to sort them, in order to separate the inferior from the best, and then to pack them.

In Brazil the coffee is not thrown into water, but dried in the sun directly it comes from the tree, lightly pounded, by which operation the husk and the skin are loosened together; after which it is dried on copper plates over a gentle fire. At Lembang, the drying of the coffee is the great difficulty, as throughout the year there is more wet weather than dry, and the coffee, having been moistened through and through, requires long and uninterrupted heat to dry it.

The mills at Lembang are the largest in Java, and they yield annually 28,000 piculs of pure coffee.

The culture of coffee is, as I have already remarked, a government monopoly in Java, and so also is tea, sugar, and some other articles; but the Residence of Batavia is exempt from these restrictions, and every one may there cultivate and sell whatever commodities he pleases.

Digitized by Google

In the other residences the government generally keeps the coffee in its own hands, but farms out the culture of tea, etc., on condition that these articles shall be cultivated and delivered at fixed prices. In the districts which are well adapted to coffee, every peasant or owner of a cottage is obliged to plant 300 coffee-trees, and keep this number always complete. During the first three years, when the trees produce nothing, the peasant gets nothing for his trouble; but in the following year he receives from eighty to a hundred doits for every picul of coffee in the husk which he delivers at the mill. The proprietor of the coffee-mill is also paid by the government, and is said, like the tea-planter, to make a hundred per cent profit of his capital. Six piculs of coffee in the husk produce one of pure coffee. In districts where there is no mill, the peasant is obliged to cleanse the coffee himself, and the government pays him six or seven copper guilders for every picul. But the peasantry is much oppressed on account of this coffee, as they often live fifteen or twenty miles from the coffee-gardens, and taking the year through, have generally to go to work at them two or three times in a month; and though they are provided with huts for shelter, they have every thing else to find for themselves.

The Residence of Preang, on the whole the most fruitful of Java, is also the richest in coffee. Its hilly uplands—for it consists of an extensive plateau 200 feet above the level of the sea—are particularly fit for it, and I never saw any where coffee plantations in better order. It is calculated to contain sixty millions of coffee-trees, of which thirty-five millions are under the immediate care of the Resident of Bandong. Three trees produce two pounds of pure coffee.

On the following morning I rode over to the sulphur crater, for which Mr. Plippeau was so good as to furnish me with horses and guides; and as every mile I went I got some addition to my party, either of horsemen or pedestrians, I had soon thirty persons in my train. It is a custom in Java, when any one to whom respect is to be paid passes through a village, for the magistrate and several of the inhabitants to turn out and accompany them a considerable piece of their way. This honor fell to my lot, of course, on account of Mr. Plippeau and the deputy-resident.

Digitized by Google

The mode in which the natives on the Preanger territory manifest their "high consideration" of superiors and Europeans is sometimes rather odd in its effect, as they go plump down upon the ground without minding whether they turn their faces, their sides, or their backs to you. If they are on horseback they alight, lead the horse on one side, and then crouch down by the side of it.

It was a tolerably long way to the crater, but we were able to come quite close up to it. It appeared to be between 200 and 300 feet deep, and the top about 400 feet in diameter; but the bottom was not visible. The walls are steep, and it is only possible to get down at one place, over loose stones, and not without danger. In the depth below columns of sulphureous vapor were rising in several places, and pure sulphur was lying all about. I scrambled down with considerable trouble; and near the hillocks of sulphur thrown up I heard a loud roaring noise, like that made by steam being let off from a locomotive; and columns of smoke, or rather steam, rushed up with much violence. It is possible with care to go very near to them; only you must be sure to have the wind with you, or the suffocating sulphureous vapor would be driven in your face.

Several Europeans, as well as natives, had told me that the ground in the crater was hot enough to burn the soles of your shoes; but I laid my hand upon it, certainly in fifty places, and sometimes quite near the columns of vapor, without suffering any inconvenience, and brought back my soles quite uninjured.

Why will travelers always exaggerate and deceive each other, as according to my experience they constantly do? or is it my peculiar misfortune thus continually to observe and feel things differently from others?

A few years ago this crater threw up such a quantity of ashes, that the woods for a quarter of a mile round were killed; and the naked, charred, black trunks of the trees, which seemed to have been in a conflagration, formed the most abrupt contrast with the rich, blooming vegetation that encircled them, without the slightest intermediate gradation, like a garland.

I had seen several both active and extinct volcanic craters in Java; but I never observed in them any of the pure porous lava

Digitized by Google

that I have seen on Vesuvius, Etna, and the volcanoes of Iceland. Those of Java appear more frequently to vomit ashes, sand, and water, or stones.

Returning to Bandong, I found that Mr. Van Gasbak had procured for me a pretty amusement at the house of the *Regent*, who had ordered his dancing girls to execute, in my honor, the national dance, the bedogo.

A regent, I must explain, is a rajah or other native of high rank, who bears this title, and is associated with the Resident in his government, besides having a certain percentage out of the coffee, sugar, etc. Nothing of importance is ever ostensibly undertaken without his approbation; but I do not think his opinion is often found to differ much from that of the Dutch Resident.

The six dancing girls were becomingly dressed in closely-fitting jackets without sleeves, silk sarangs embroidered with gold, reaching barely to the ankle, and trowsers descending to the feet, which were bare. A purple sash encircled the waist, the ends of which hung down to the knee; and bosom, waist, wrists, and arms were adorned with gold ornaments. On their heads they had open-work helmets, which allowed the abundance of their rich black hair to be perceived; and you might have fancied you had a group of Amazons before you, but that their faces unfortunately were of the true Malay type.

The dance consisted of three movements: the first very calm and simple; in the second the dancers seized plumes of ostrich and peacocks' feathers, which they waved about like swords, and fenced with them; and in the third they armed themselves with bows and arrows, and represented a regular combat, in which one-half of the number was defeated, and the slain remained for some time lying on the field of battle. The music that accompanied the combat was very noisy and discordant; but on the defeat of the one party, a soft plaintive melody arose at some distance off. The whole performance was really pretty and expressive, and had nothing whatever offensive in it—a negative kind of praise certainly, but one which, I am afraid, would not always be given by an impartial spectator to our ballets. The only thing I did not quite like was that the dancers kept their eyes constantly fixed

Digitized by Google

on the ground—a custom that I have noticed in those of most non-European nations, and which is meant, I rather think, to express profound respect for the spectators.

From Bandong I went back to Buitenzorg, availing myself of the kind invitation of the Governor to remain a few days more at his palace. I was exceedingly indebted to this gentleman, not only for the uncommonly friendly reception I had in his house, but also because I have little doubt that I owed to that much of the distinction with which I was treated throughout the Dutch settlements, and the support and assistance given to my traveling plans.*

In Batavia I again went to the house of my amiable friends, Mr. and Mrs. Van Rees, and, while there, I was surprised by a very welcome visit from Colonel Steuerwold of the Dutch service, whom I had become acquainted with in 1848, in going from Gottenburg to Stockholm, and whose high character even more than his talents and knowledge made me proud of the attention he showed me, and which much exceeded that generally given to a mere traveling acquaintance.

A few days after my return I went to Tangerang, a place about fifteen miles off, whither Mr. Van Rees had occasion to go on business, but had delayed till my return, in order to take me with him.

He took this opportunity also of letting me see some of the popular recreations—a dance, a burlesque play, some feats of skill by "a Hercules," and, alas! also a cockfight. The Dutch government has now strictly forbidden these brutal exhibitions, which were formerly the favorite diversion, and at the same time the ruin, of the lower classes. Many were so devoted to them that they attended to nothing else, and would forfeit house and land, and see wife and children perish, rather than renounce their horrid passion.

The dance I did not find very entertaining: six girls stamped about in a very awkward manner, within a very confined space,

* The Governor General of the Dutch Indian possessions, though he holds his office only for four or five years, has more power, while it lasts, than a constitutional king in Europe; and he has a very large salary, besides several palaces, summer residences, and landed estates.

Digitized by Google

and at the same time favored us with a kind of screaming song, in which certainly we had not to complain of any want of power in their voices. The play was much more amusing. I did not indeed understand what was said; on which ignorance, by-the-by, Mr. Van Rees said I was to be congratulated; but I admired the natural manner, the droll play of feature, and the eloquence of the principal characters, who, it seems, had no speeches prepared for them, but had to invent them on the spur of the moment. The female parts were here played by young men, by which the spectators were no losers, for there is nothing to choose between the sexes in point of beauty. The young men looked just as well as the ladies would have done; indeed I should not have known the difference if I had not been told.

The close of the entertainment, the performance of the Hercules, was really curious in its way. He appeared with nothing on but a pair of drawers; and a cord was passed round his neck, and with this his hands and arms were so firmly tied behind him, that he could not make the smallest movement. He came to us to have the knots examined, and then he crept under a high covered basket, beneath which various garments were placed; and after the lapse of a few minutes the basket was lifted up and the Hercules made his appearance completely clothed in them; then he crept again under the basket and came out without them, but holding the cord with all its knots fast in his hand, and so forth. All this would, of course, have been nothing in a theatre, where assistance might have been given him; but this was in a meadow, where no assistance was possible. One of the gentlemen present offered him twenty-five rupees for his mystery, but he declined the offer.

On the following morning, the 7th of July, we were to have seen a sugar-mill on our way back to Batavia, but it was unluckily not at work, although the sugar-canes all around were standing in ripest perfection. I never saw any where larger or richer sugar-fields than in Java; and the mills are said to bring a profit of two or three hundred per cent.

Digitized by Google

## CHAPTER VII.

Sumatra.—Arrival in Padang.—Journey into the Interior.—Fort Koch.—Kotto-Godong.—Strange Laws.—Muara Sipongie.—Dissuasion from the Journey.—The Battakers.—Their Customs and Laws.—Farewell to the last Europeans.

I HAD been cherishing for a long time the wish to make a voyage to Sumatra; but I found, on inquiry, that the expenses were far too great, being no less than 500 rupees there and back. Mr. Van Rees, however, gave me hopes that I might be able to get the passage on more reasonable terms; and only a few hours after our return from Tangerang, when he had driven into town, he wrote me a note, in which lay inclosed a ticket for the double voyage. It may be supposed how delighted I was with such a present. He had mentioned the matter, it appeared, among some German merchants settled in Batavia, and they had immediately determined to offer me this very acceptable compliment. I again tender my hearty thanks to these gentlemen, and assure them that they procured for me one of the most interesting journeys I have ever made.

The steamer *Macassar* (120-horse power, Captain Bergner) was to sail the next day. My preparations were quickly made, and at six o'clock in the morning I went on board, still accompanied by my unwearied, kind friend, Mr. Van Rees.

We came in sight of the coast of Sumatra the same day, before we had lost sight of Java. Both islands are very mountainous, but the mountains of Java are higher and more varied in their outline.

*July 10th.* We lost the coast of Java this morning, and on Sumatra we could distinguish a three-fold range of mountains. A beautiful smooth girdle of land extended from the sea to the foot of the mountain range, and both plain and mountain are richly wooded.

We were bound for Bencoolen, the chief place of the Residence

Digitized by Google

of the same name; but the anchoring ground is not adapted for steamers, except in very calm weather; and since the weather did not favor us, we were compelled to run for Palu Bay, twelve miles off. The captain went overland to Bencoolen, and came back the next afternoon, when we concluded our voyage.

On the morning of the 13th of July we reached Padang, the chief town of the Dutch settlements in Sumatra. Its situation is very beautiful. To the west lie pleasant hills and low mountains, one of which, called the Ape Hill, is pushed out into the sea, and only connected with the island by a narrow isthmus. Northward, at a distance of four or five miles, rises a higher mountain chain, and between it and the town stretches a lovely fertile plain.

Padang has a population of 27,000, and is the largest town in Sumatra, and the seat of the Governor, who inhabits a beautiful house called Wellhorn, about four miles from the town, among the mountains. Padang has no beauty of its own, but the dwellings and country-houses of the Europeans lie near it in pretty gardens, overshadowed by cocoa-nut trees, in which the whole district much abounds. I alighted at the house of Major Koeling; but scarcely had the Governor, Mr. Van Swillen, heard of my arrival, than he came himself to invite me to his, to which I went accordingly the same day.

My intention was to stay only a short time at Padang itself, as I wished to visit the Highlands, as they are called—*Benyol, Mandelling, Ankolla, the Great Toba*, etc.—and to go among the wild cannibal Battakers. People tried to dissuade me from this plan, as they did from a similar one at Sarawak. They told me that, in 1835, two missionaries, Messrs. Layman and Mansor, had been killed and eaten by the Battakers, and that no European could possibly venture among them without a military escort.* They advised me to content myself with the Dutch settlements, and not

* When, two years afterward, I returned to Europe, I read in a newspaper that three French Missionaries had, in 1855, ventured into the Battaker country, only as far as Tapanolla (while I had been as far as the Great and Little Toba), and had there been killed and devoured by the cannibals, amidst festive dances and music.

Digitized by Google

to expose myself to the danger of terminating my life in so horrible a manner. It was, however, precisely for the sake of becoming acquainted with these Battakers—a people so little known to Europeans—that I had chiefly desired to come to Sumatra; and as I thought it probable that the very weakness of my sex would be my protection, I determined not to listen to these warning voices.

On the 19th of July I began my journey on horseback, with a very clouded sky; and, exactly as it had happened to me at Sarawak, on the very first day I met with an obstacle that compelled me to turn back. When, namely, I reached the banks of the river *Udjong-Karang*, I found that, in consequence of several days' rain, the country was flooded far and wide; the bridge had been washed away in the night; there was no raft ready as a substitute, and I had nothing for it but to go back to Padang.

The next day I set forth again, but the sunshine was very watery, and in a short time I had a settled rain. I went on, however, two stages (twenty miles) to *Labalong*. The distances in Sumatra are divided into stages, or military marches, of from eight to thirteen miles; and at each of these stations you find a little fort or some small building, in which a government officer resides, and where you can find shelter for the night. At some there are clerks or other subordinate persons, who will receive a stranger for payment.

When we were only six or eight miles from Padang the country began to look rather wild; the number of rice plantations decreased, and there was more forest and jungle. Considering the wildness of the country it appeared rather thickly peopled—mostly by Malays, who form the greater part of the population of Sumatra; and here also, as elsewhere, their houses were built on piles.

As in Java, all goods, coffee excepted, are carried by men, and on their heads; but coffee is transported by horses or buffaloes.

There are many huts on the road, near which are stands, about five feet high, where the coolies can conveniently push their burdens from their heads and rest. The huts serve them also as houses of public entertainment; and they find in them tea, coffee (the latter an infusion from the leaves of the coffee-tree), boiled

Digitized by Google

rice, and *qué-qué*, a kind of cake or bread; and they can pass the night at these huts if they desire it.

These coolies are usually as trustworthy as those of Java, though they receive just as little pay, namely, two doits and a half, or about a farthing, a mile. I only heard of one case in which they had, not indeed stolen any of the property confided to them, but caused the owner considerable damage.

A mineralogist had collected and sent to Padang several chests of minerals, and, as they were not locked, the coolies looked into them. Seeing nothing but stones, they thought they would make the matter a little easier to themselves. Stones were stones, and they would pitch these out, carry the chests empty, and when they got near Padang put some more stones in. They did so accordingly; and the unfortunate mineralogist did not discover the loss of his treasures till long afterward, when he returned from his travels, and then it was irremediable.

In the larger villages I was struck by the appearance of open halls, built of wood, and with elegantly carved roofs, painted in gay colors. These, I was told, were for the rajahs to hold their courts in and hear complaints; and in them, also, all important commercial affairs are settled; and they are provided with a kind of great drum, called taboo, which is beaten when, on any occasion, the people are required to assemble. These drums are from eight to fifteen feet long, and one end is covered with a skin as much as three feet in diameter; the other end is smaller.

The diversion of cock-fighting is, it seems, allowed in Sumatra, and is no less in favor than on the neighboring island. I met many men and boys going along with their fighting cocks under their arms.

*July* 21*st*. I did not go far to-day; only ten miles, as far as *Kaja-Tanam*. The weather was delightfully pleasant, and the sun gave such a gentle warmth that I quite forgot how close I was to the equator. Some birds were singing, too, not, indeed, in the style of such finished musicians as they are in Europe, but very well for the tropics. Monkeys were chattering and jumping from bough to bough, and the country became finer and the mountains grander in their forms as we proceeded: the highest, the *Sin-*

Digitized by Google

*gallang* and the *Merapi*, were as much as between 9000 and 10,000 feet.

I had bought no horses for this journey, for I was told the gentlemen to whom I was recommended for each day would be sure to furnish me both with horses and guides; and so it proved. But in this way I had often both guides and horses to change twice in one day, and as soon as I had got accustomed to the humors of one of my steeds I had to take a new one. Sometimes I got a beast that was so extremely lively as to kick out on all sides, and positively refuse to be mounted, so that they had to tie one of his fore legs and his nose together till I had got up, and then away we went, neck or nothing. I generally found it best to let them go on as fast as they liked at first, and felt pretty sure that they would get rid of their superfluous vivacity at the end of a mile or two.

I had arranged my journey so that I always started very early in the morning, and rode at least a stage, whether a short or a long one, uninterruptedly; we mostly reached our destination by twelve o'clock, and then, after half an hour's rest, I set off on one of my insect and butterfly hunts.

At *Kaja-Tanam* I found in the controller, Mr. Barthelemy, who received me in a very friendly manner, an enthusiastic ornithologist and bird collector. He accompanied me in my hunt, and promised, besides, to look for insects and reptiles in my absence, and have them ready for me on my return.

*July* 22*d*. We went twenty miles to Fort de Koch, also called *Bahiet-tingi*. The first part of the way was very romantic: a fine road led through a ravine, called by the Dutch a *kluft*, inclosed by wooded hills and mountains; a forest stream burst foaming over the rocks and loose stones, while another, close to the road, formed a cascade over a cliff sixty or seventy feet high. At the end of the ravine the road rose in a spiral direction to a height of 3000 feet, and led to a lofty table-land. I met long trains of horses and buffaloes, the latter harnessed to cars laden with coffee, which was being taken from Prianam to the sea-coast, where it would be shipped for Padang. The horses are here rather larger than those of Java, the buffaloes very large and heavy; but nei-

Digitized by Google

ther one kind nor the other has much strength or endurance. The horses not harnessed to cars can only be laden with a picul weight, and a pair of buffaloes will draw at most eight, and that only on very good roads. Neither pack-horse nor buffalo will go with these loads more than six miles at a time, and they require rest every fifth day.

Light as this labor appears to be, the animals do not live long. They are fed with grass, and with the marrow of the sago palm. A common horse costs about fifteen or twenty rupees, and a buffalo up to thirty; but the horses that come from the Battaker country, and which are much larger and stronger, will fetch higher prices, even up to 300 rupees.

Fort de Koch lies on a fine plateau of nearly 3000 feet in height; it has a charming prospect over wide valleys and majestic mountains, and enjoys a very moderate climate; the mornings and evenings, indeed, are quite cool. On this table-land the vine prospers well.

At Fort de Koch I alighted at the house of the resident of the *Agamer* territory, Colonel Van der Hardt, a distinguished officer, who had been engaged in all the wars of Sumatra, from 1830 to 1849, and was the first to advance with his regiment into the Battaker country as far as the entrance to the valley of *Silidong*, by the great Toba.* I had already become acquainted with this gentleman in Batavia, and he had also accompanied me to Padang. He overwhelmed me with polite attentions of every kind, and immediately made a party to show me what was best worth seeing in the neighborhood, the rich and beautiful campan, *Kotto-Godong;* which is the most elegant and opulent that I have ever seen, either in Sumatra, Java, or any of the Dutch East Indian possessions.

The style of building in the houses is curious and original: they are of wood, painted in bright colors, and very much longer than they are broad; and each end runs together into a peak, which rises above the central part, so as to give them more the appearance of ships than of houses. The roofs are sometimes made in two or three slopes, each slope being provided with two peaks, and looking very much like a Turkish saddle. The front

* In the following year he was made Governor of Celebes.

Digitized by Google

and side walls are decorated, often quite covered, with finely and elaborately carved arabesques. The houses stand upon piles; but these are invisible, being covered with bamboos or boards, and the whole effect is very peculiar and pretty.

The interior of these ornamental-looking houses consists of one large apartment, which takes in the whole length and three quarters of the breadth of the house; and at the extremity of it is a small raised compartment that looks as if it had been added after the house was built, which is furnished with mats, carpets, cushions, etc., and is intended as a place of honor for the most distinguished woman present. The back of the house is divided into little rooms for the fires and sleeping-places, but which are pitch dark, as the back wall of the house has no windows. Opposite every house stands a miniature one, carved and painted in the same style, which serves for the preservation of the store of rice. In each of these houses there only lives a single family, and not, as among the Dyaks, a whole tribe.

As the Rajah of the campan* had been informed beforehand of our coming, we found him and his family in their richest dresses. The sarangs of the ladies were of heavy silk, richly and elegantly embroidered with gold, and they showed us some that had cost as much as 500 rupees. Their jackets were of blue, red, or green silk, with gold borders; their headkerchiefs so heavy with gold, that they were not tied to, but merely laid on, the head. Some of these cost as much as six guineas apiece. The women weave their sarangs and headkerchiefs themselves; but the velvet, of course, they buy. The Rajah's ladies wore round their wrists finely-wrought gold bracelets, and on the little finger of the left hand some rings. Many had this finger decorated in still more striking style, namely, by a golden *nail* two inches long, which is fastened on like a ring, and is admired as a sign of wealth and *do-nothingness*.

The Malay chief priest came in grand state to pay his respects, and certainly he did astonish us with his finery. He wore a long

* Every campan in the Dutch settlements has its own Rajah, who receives a small salary and undertakes that the community under his rule shall observe the laws and fulfill the orders of the government.

Digitized by Google

robe of rose-colored silk, and over it another of white gauze, trimmed with three broad flounces. The sleeves were also full trimmed with lace. To complete this costume, which any European lady might have gone to a ball in, this reverend personage had a man's white waistcoat and a belt, in which were stuck some superb weapons. He also had on a white turban, and over it a large lace vail that fell down and half covered him. Altogether, I never saw such an absurd-looking fellow; and when the lace vail was thrown back, and a young and beardless face appeered, I should certainly, had he not been announced as the high priest, have had considerable doubt whether we had before us a lady or a gentleman.

Besides the house of the Rajah, we visited some where we found the women and girls occupied with skillful gold-weaving; and then we went to a goldsmith's, who had really produced some beautiful things, and, to our great astonishment, merely with the help of a small anvil, some hammers, nails, and other trifles. His entire stock of tools could be put into a little box, and carried under his arm; so that, in case of need, he could set up his work-shop any where.

The ordinary costume of the Malays in Sumatra, like those of Java, consists of the sarang and cabay, or *padgee*—the only difference being that here they are worn of dark blue, nearly black, and in Java of gay colors. In the matter of beauty, or rather of ugliness, these Malays may fully vie with their brethren in Java and Borneo; they have the same broad faces, the same pale projecting jaws, and the same pointed black teeth.

Many of the quite young people seem to have lost some of their teeth, and to have gaps in their gums. The rich fill these with golden teeth—not so much, however, for convenience as for decoration; and they only put them in on festive occasions. The women have the cartilages of their ears pierced only once; but every art is employed to enlarge the hole as much as possible; and to effect this they stick in a rolled-up leaf or a piece of wood, and then replace it with a larger and a larger, until the opening is an inch wide. These holes in the ear are thought to be so handsome in themselves as scarcely to need the foreign aid of ornament; and

Digitized by Google

are only on festal occasions further adorned with gold, silver, or brass rings, or the elegant simplicity of a rounded lump of wood.

One remarkable peculiarity of the Agamer district is, that the women possess many of what we are accustomed to consider the rights of the stronger sex, indeed, that the men often have to play the subordinate part, which would seem odd in any country in the world, but is more especially so in a Mohammedan one, where they will not allow us poor feminine creatures so much as a soul.

When, for example, a girl has reached a marriageable age, her mother begins to look out for a suitable bridegroom for her, and, when she has found one, goes and opens the negotiation with the gentleman's mother. The papas have no voice whatever in the matter, but the two ladies settle it entirely between themselves. When the day comes for the wedding, the mother of the bride goes and fetches the bridegroom, who then takes up his abode in the house of his wife's parents, and becomes a member of her family. This does not, indeed, form any obstacle to his marrying another wife, only it must not be in the same campan; and a man who is the happy possessor of several wives has no settled home at all, but lives now in one campan, now in another.

A man never refuses to take the bride offered to him; but he can, if he pleases, leave her the next day, and this is a right the bride does not possess; she can only make her objections before marriage, and, even in this case, if the bargain has been completed, she must purchase her release with a part of her movable goods, cattle, poultry, household utensils, or money.

A man can also divorce his wife at any subsequent period, without any other cause than his good pleasure, but a woman her husband only on proof of ill-treatment. Should the married pair repent of their separation, they may lawfully come together again without further ceremony within the space of forty days; but after that time they must be married again by the priest. A divorced wife can marry again in three months and ten days.*

When a wife dies the husband inherits only half of the goods belonging to her—except what she has expressly left him as a

* These laws concerning marriages, divorces, and reunions, are the same among all the Malays.

Digitized by Google

legacy; her children are her heirs, and, if she has none, the children of her sister or other female relative. The man can inherit from his own race only in the female line—from his mother or his female relatives; and his property goes not to his own children, but the children of his sister or nearest female relation.

To this singular law of inheritance the following occurrence is traditionally said to have given occasion, though it does not appear extremely clear what it should have to do with it.

A certain great prince, whose dominions lay far from the sea, dreamed for several successive nights that, in order to secure his fortune, it was necessary that he should build a great proa. The dream at the same time announced that his nearest blood relation would be easily able to launch it and send it to sea. The prince did as the dream commanded, and when the proa was finished, he sent to invite all his relations and the rajahs from all the country round to assist at the solemn launch. When all was ready, he called upon his eldest son, and ordered him to take the proa to sea; and the son exerted all his strength to push it off, but in vain; he could not move it from the spot; the prince called to one son after another, but no one of them had any better success. Wrathfully then did his now not *serene* highness summon to him the son of his sister; and behold, the nephew shoved off the boat without the least difficulty, and carried it to the place of its destination—and that is the whole story!

A peculiar kind of slavery exists in the Dutch settlements in Sumatra; it is limited to the period of ten years. The slaves all come from the island of Nias, and are either prisoners of war, debtors, or criminals, or it may be even free men who have been sold into slavery by the sultan of the island. Slaves, male and female, are sold at the fixed price of 100 rupees. The purchaser is compelled to feed and clothe them in a proper manner, and is not allowed to subject them to excessive labor. He must also give them a small sum every month for siri. In ten years' time they are free; but they seldom go back to their native country, for fear their illustrious sovereign should sell them over again. The Dutch government takes great care to prevent the ill-treatment of slaves. A short time before my arrival at Padang, a

Digitized by Google

woman who had ill-treated a slave, was sentenced to the well-deserved punishment of five years' imprisonment in the house of correction, and was moreover declared incapable of ever holding a slave again, while the injured slave was set at liberty. Would to God that things were managed in this way in all slave-holding countries!

In almost every house here you see these Nias islanders; they are not, in my opinion, as ugly as the Malays, but the women are excessively little.

In the district of *Agam* a great deal of coffee is grown; and in the country best adapted to it, every head of a family is bound, as in Java, to plant and tend 300 trees. He must also deliver the coffee in a pure state in the magazines, which often lie ten or twelve miles from the plantations. The planter receives only seven copper guilders for his coffee; and for its transport from the magazines to the sea-shore three doits, or a little more than a farthing, per mile. This business is usually farmed out.

In the year 1851, above 2,000,000 of pounds of coffee were produced here, which, considering the short time coffee has been cultivated, is very considerable. The government sells it by public auction, and it commonly brings about forty shillings the picul; and there is an export duty on it of twelve rupees for Holland, and six for other countries.

As Sumatra is much less known than Java, it may, perhaps, interest some of my readers to know what are the chief productions exported from this island, and about what prices they fetch. I will here mention what they were in 1851:

| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| Coffee | at | 20½ | rupees the picul. |
| Rice | " | 2½ | " |
| Benzoin, 1st quality | " | 250 | " |
| " 2d quality | " | 75 | " |
| Dragon's blood | " | 75 | " |
| Cassia | " | 10 | " |
| Black pepper | " | 14 | " |
| White " | " | 22 | " |
| Gutta Percha | " | 30 | " |
| India-rubber | " | 25 | " |
| Nutmegs | " | 90 | " |
| Gambir | " | 18 | " |

Digitized by Google

Of the coffee, 120,000 piculs were exported; of the rice, 50,000. The quantity of the other articles I did not exactly ascertain.

Of the finest kinds of camphor, not more than two or three piculs a year are obtained; and these bring as much as from 7000 to 10,000 rupees; but I shall have occasion to refer to this subject again.

On the 24th of July I continued my journey, and Mr. Van der Hardt was so good as to arrange the plan of my tour, and give me recommendations to the various authorities, as well as provide me with horses and a guide to *Palembayang*, twenty miles off.

A very little way from Fort de Koch the road leads through a small valley, which is celebrated for the peculiarity of its structure. It is surrounded by walls of sandstone about 200 feet high, as smooth and perpendicular as if they had been cut with the chisel: through a narrow cleft in these walls you enter the valley, and then you find yourself in the midst of luxuriant rice plantations, watered by a pretty little river; but at the opposite end you must make your exit by a path as steep and narrow as you came by, and by this you again ascend to a lofty table-land. This valley is called *Karbanwengat*.

From here to Palembayang the ground was so hilly that it resembled a stormy sea; but on the sides of some of the hills terraces were formed to lead the water from one rice plantation to another. The road ran frequently over the tops of the hills, and afforded beautiful prospects of the countless eminences and terraces set in the bright fresh green of the young rice that was standing about half a foot high.

*July 25th. Benyol*, thirteen miles. The first six or seven miles of the road lay through a valley so narrow that it might be called a ravine; and scarcely a hut was to be seen, and not a single rice-field. The murmur of the river Massang, and the cries of the apes, were the only sounds that met my ear. At the end of the ravine a bridge led across the Massang, whose banks consist of high, piled-up masses of rock entangled and overgrown with fresh evergreen climbing plants, and far below the river foams over its narrow rocky bed.



Digitized by Google

You soon leave the Massang, and come to the more considerable river, *Alakan-Banyang*, which is navigable for proas for a short distance from where it falls into the sea. Very few rivers on the western coast of Sumatra are accessible even to the smallest boats, as they have too short a course, and too rapid a fall from the rocks and mountains in which they rise.

The mountain chains which intersect Sumatra from south to north are never lost sight of in traveling through it, though they seem sometimes to recede and sometimes to advance. They vary much in form and height, some rise to 7000 feet, and the *Ophir* on the west coast reaches 9500.

*Benyol* lies in a deep hollow valley, only in part under cultivation, but containing a little fort. The women we met here wore a very curious head-dress made of a large cloth folded together, and laid upon their heads simply like a load.

*July 26th.* To *Lubus-Koping*, ten miles. The controller, at whose house I had alighted, as well as some of the officers, accompanied me a good part of the way; but when we came to the river *Alakan-Bayang* we found it so swollen that crossing it was out of the question, and we were obliged, therefore, to go back all the way to Benyol.

Within the distance of four or five degrees from the equator, north or south, the rainy seasons are not so regular, and it rains much more frequently than in a rather higher latitude. In Borneo I had almost incessant rainy weather; in Java few evenings passed entirely without rain; and I seemed likely to have the same grievance here in Sumatra. There is nothing more unpleasant to a traveler, especially where the roads are bad, and you have to cross rivers without bridges or force your way through forests; and a day seldom passed without my being soaked through.

In the afternoon news came that the river had fallen, and that it was possible to cross it; so I made haste to set forth again, and got over it safely in a small boat, the horses swimming after us.

This day I rode on horseback across the Equator. The roads, both yesterday and to-day, were in a bad state, for the rain had softened the clayey soil, and made it so slippery that it was both difficult and dangerous to climb the hills, which were often very

Digitized by Google

steep, with these unshod horses. Such horses they were! In no other part of the world have I ever met with such awkward beasts. They stumbled at every stone, tumbled into every hole, looked out on the bridges, seemingly, for the rotten places, on purpose to put their feet upon them, and made a point of being desperately frightened on all occasions—even at a large leaf, if it happened to be in the way. I am not giving these troublesome brutes a bad character without having had abundant means of forming an opinion, for I have ridden in Sumatra as few men have done; and as I had to be continually changing horses, I had a very extensive acquaintance among them.

*Lubus-Koping* lies in a fine spacious valley, where the mountains open and fall back, so as to afford a fine view of the Ophir, from the summit to the foot.

I noticed here a change of costume. The people wear hats made of palm-leaves, and from two to three feet in diameter, with a little peaked crown, about six inches high, and decorated with flowers or other ornaments.

*July 27th. Panty*, eighteen miles. Half the way lay through beautiful wooded valleys, and after that through jungle-grass; and we saw every where plenty of traces of elephants, and of the claws of tigers. Sumatra is very rich in tigers, and the men who carry letters through the island never go in the evening without a firebrand to scare them. It is very strange that neither natives nor Europeans ever think of having tiger-hunts, as they do in British India. The only way in which these formidable creatures are taken here is in snares by the natives; and the government gives a reward of ten rupees for every capture.

Panty lies in the midst of the most magnificent woods, and yet the huts of the people are diminutive and wretched, for they are actually too lazy to cut down the wood. Altogether, they live in a state of the utmost poverty, possess nothing but a few earthen pots and mats, go about half naked or clothed in mere rags, and are, as might be expected, extremely dirty; but for this destitution I believe they have their own indolence chiefly to blame. They certainly have often to labor for the government—but they have no taxes to pay. The men loiter about chewing siri and

Digitized by Google

gossiping, or they give themselves up to gambling and cock-fighting, or they get through their time with sleep, or a game played among us by children called, I think, "pitch-farthing," which consists in tossing small stones or copper coins into little holes. Should none of these exciting amusements be within reach, they can make themselves comfortable by doing absolutely nothing at all. Had our glorious Schiller but known these worthy gentlemen of Sumatra, he might not have thought the epithet of the "empty-headed, gossiping sex" exclusively applicable to us.

The women here certainly work much harder than the men. Among the people at work mending the roads I counted full three women to one man; and in the coffee-gardens, also, the fair sex were in a decided majority. They work in the rice-fields, cut the rice, thresh it in the rude manner practiced here, and carry it home. I saw many a woman with one load on her head, another under her arm, and a child on her back, while the lord of the creation walked by her side in a state of gentlemanly ease, carrying nothing but his own person. I do not know that the men do not work at all, but assuredly not half what the women do. Besides the labors I have mentioned, the latter plow the fields with buffaloes, and sow the seed—a rather severe kind of labor, for they have to stand up to their ankles in water. The government, indeed, has found it necessary to come to the assistance of the poor creatures, by ordering that women shall not be employed in making, though they may in mending, the roads; or in building bridges or houses—a really necessary measure of protection, in order to set some limits to their toils.

Rice in Sumatra is not cut blade by blade, as it is in Java, but with a sickle-shaped knife, and as much as the hand can grasp at a time. The ears are trodden out upon the harvest-field itself; and for this purpose little sheds of bamboo are erected nine feet high and five broad, with a floor raised about two feet from the ground and provided with small holes for the grains of rice to fall through. On this floor the ears are trampled by the feet, while a roof of leaves protects the laborer from the intense heat of the sun.

The rice harvest in Sumatra is not reckoned at more than from sixty to eighty fold, while in Java it is from one to two hundred.

Digitized by Google

*July 28th*, thirteen miles. A tolerably extensive campan, with some carved and painted wooden houses, and a small fort. The situation of this place is very unhealthy, and the people suffer much from a bad kind of ague, which frequently turns among the Europeans to dropsy and consumption.

Here begins the province of *Manhelling*, and the district of Ulu, called by the natives Luba, the inhabitants of which, Uluans or Lubuans, are regarded by many as a peculiar race, but by others only as Malays run wild. In this region also are found the first of the Battakers.

*July 29th. Muara-Sipongie*, ten miles. A most wearisome ride through sultry valleys overgrown with short jungle-grass; no human dwelling to be seen, no sound to be heard, all around as deadly still as in the sandy deserts of Africa.

I was now in the midst of the Battaker country, and of tribes who have now been for ten years subject to the Dutch government, and who have therefore been obliged to renounce their favorite table delicacy of human flesh.

At *Muara-Sipongie* I was very obligingly received by the controller, Mr. Schoppers, who even rode forward several miles to meet me. As I got in in good time, and there happened to be just then a large bazaar being held, I went with him to see it, for on such occasions there is a great gathering of the people. Mr. Schoppers said that they also bring to the bazaar for sale a good deal of gold found in the small river of the district. We asked after this gold, and found that the happy possessors were such ragged, miserable-looking creatures, that we should certainly never have guessed their wealth, or regarded them as the proprietors even of copper. They brought out their treasures to exhibit to us, and they were such large packages that I thought they must contain at least some pounds; but I found that the precious metal was done up in such countless wrappages, that when at last the little bag actually containing it did come out, there was a very small quantity; for the largest piece I saw they did not ask four guineas. It seems that in this country every one has a right to look for gold if he pleases, only he must give the half of what he finds to his Rajah.

Digitized by Google

Near the bazaar I noticed a space inclosed with palings, and sheltered by a roof thatched with leaves. This it seems was a place set apart for cock-fights, one of which edifying entertainments was now going on. A dense crowd of people was standing round it; several fights had already taken place, and betting was proceeding with great animation. To my astonishment, too, these wretched, destitute-looking creatures were not betting doits, but Spanish dollars; and I was told that the sums squandered in this way by men that you would really take for beggars, would be sufficient to keep them and their families in comfort and plenty. The preparations for the combat, and the manner in which the poor animals are excited to anger, are the same as in Java; but I noticed that here each proprietor of a cock kept making the most horrible grimaces and threatening movements with the hands and feet during the fight, and that one of them was continually blowing, which both spectators and bettors took much amiss, so that there arose a general murmur about it. In about a minute one of the cocks left the field of battle, and the other was declared the victor; but he fell down and died even before the vanquished one. Other cocks were immediately brought to replace these victims, and the sport proceeded. Half the day will these men, among whom were more Malays than Battakers, continue this brutal and disgusting kind of gambling, and lose at it, as I have said, sums that would be sufficient for their ample maintenance. Its great prevalence at this place may be accounted for from the number of Malays.

In the afternoon Mr. Schoppers had the kindness to send for the Regents from all the villages round, in order to speak with them concerning my journey into the country of the independent Battakers. He himself considered it as extremely dangerous, and cited in support of his opinion the terrible fate of the two missionaries; but he admitted that this murder had taken place partly in consequence of a misunderstanding. Some time before the arrival of the missionaries some Mohammedan priests had made their appearance in the country, accompanied by a band of armed men, and had forced them by fire and sword to accept their religion—very much as the Spaniards did formerly in Mexico and

Digitized by Google

Peru. When, therefore, the unfortunate Americans presented themselves as religious teachers, the Battakers imagined they were going to have a repetition of the same scenes, and resolving to be beforehand with their tormentors, they killed them and ate them up.

In the evening we sat in solemn conclave surrounded by regents, and by a great crowd of the people, for it had been noised abroad far and wide that here was a white woman who was about to venture into the dreaded country of the wild Battakers. Regents and people all concurred in advising me to renounce so perilous a project; but I had tolerably well made up my mind on this point, and I only wanted to be satisfied as to one thing, namely, whether it was true, as many travelers asserted, that the Battakers did not put their victims out of their pain at once, but tied them living to stakes, and, cutting pieces off them, consumed them by degrees with tobacco and salt. The idea of this slow torture did a little frighten me; but my hearers assured me, with one accord, that this was only done to those who were regarded as criminals of a deep dye, and who had been on that account condemned to death. Prisoners of war are tied to a tree and beheaded at once; but the blood is carefully preserved for drinking, and sometimes made into a kind of pudding with boiled rice. The body is then distributed; the ears, the nose, and the soles of the feet are the exclusive property of the Rajah, who has besides a claim on other portions. The palms of the hands, the soles of the feet, the flesh of the head, and the heart and liver, are reckoned peculiar delicacies, and the flesh in general is roasted and eaten with salt. The Regents assured me, with a certain air of relish, that it was very good food, and that they had not the least objection to eat it. The women are not allowed to take part in these grand public dinners. A kind of medicinal virtue is ascribed to the trees to which prisoners have been tied when they have been put to death, and the stem is usually cut into sticks five or six feet long, carved into figures or arabesques, and decorated with human hair; and these sticks are taken in the hand by people who go to visit the sick, or when any medicine is to be given.

The Battakers, like the Dyaks, appear to be destitute of any

Digitized by Google

kind of religion; they do not pray, and they have neither priests nor temples; yet they believe in good and bad spirits—a few, that is, of the former, and a very numerous assortment of the ill-disposed. When any one falls ill, they maintain that an evil spirit has possession of him, and it is common to attribute every kind of misfortune to this sort of demoniacal influence. Sometimes the evil spirit is said to take up his abode in a man without making him ill, and in that case his sayings are regarded as those of an oracle, and his behests faithfully obeyed, since to offend him would be to offend the evil spirit. The Rajah is often considered to be possessed by a demon, but rather in a complimentary sense; and he generally in such a case performs many extraordinary grimaces and contortions, and adopts a very wild style in his dancing, by which means he secures an amount of consideration among the people that enables him to have his wishes received as laws. Among the persons present on this occasion a boy was pointed out to me with great awe as the "Son of the Evil One," his father being supposed to be possessed by a spirit of this highly respected character.

There are no ceremonies at weddings or funerals, except when a Rajah of importance dies, and then all the neighboring Rajahs are invited to attend his obsequies. They come each attended by several men-at-arms, and bring a buffalo calf with them, which is slaughtered, and the meat divided among the assembly; and for days, often weeks together, there is nothing going on but eating and dancing and chewing siri.*

The form of government among these people must be classed, I think, among limited monarchies, since, though the Rajah is at the head of it, his commands are not always implicitly obeyed, and all his subjects, and even his slaves, treat him with great freedom, though at the same time not without respect. On important occasions many Rajahs meet together to deliberate.

Property is chiefly inherited by the eldest son, who, among other movables, comes in also for his father's wives, whom he is at liberty to convert into his own. In general, wives must be

* This siri is obtained from the Arenga palm, the juice of which also yields sugar.

Digitized by Google

bought like other chattels, and the price of a Rajah's daughter is often as high as forty piastres of gold and several buffaloes. Wives are often bought very young, to be brought up by their future husbands, who treat them in the interval as children; and should a man be too poor to afford himself a wife, he goes, in the old patriarchal fashion, to serve as a bondman in her family, till he has worked out her price. Few are so extravagant as to allow themselves more than one wife at a time.

The Battakers are in many respects much superior to other savages; they can read and write, for instance, and their laws are mostly good and well adapted to their condition; but for all this they are cannibals.

The Battakers subject to the Dutch government are, according to the information I received from Mr. Schoppers, mostly very exact in the fulfillment of their duties, as well as docile and trustworthy. Those among them who are employed as coolies may have any amount of money or goods confided to their care; and thefts, murders, or other great crimes are extremely rare. For a theft the whole community in which it occurs is considered responsible; it must replace the stolen goods, or deliver up the thief. Murders, it seems, commonly originate from jealousy. Criminals are not imprisoned, but delivered to the custody of their own family, who are answerable for them. The Battakers are judged according to their own laws, even when they are living under the Dutch rule; but these laws afford unfortunately great advantage to the rich, who can buy themselves free of any punishment, even that of death. Executions take place on the bazaar; and the condemned go to death not only with resignation and courage, but with every appearance of joy. They put on their best clothes, adorn themselves with garlands of flowers, and then proceed in company with their friends and relations, with an air of great jollity, to the spot where they are to die. This indifference or apparent indifference to death is found also among the Malays and many savage nations, and has often been attributed to insensibility and want of imagination.

*July* 30*th*. Eleven miles to *Kotto-Napau*. The country was constantly hilly, and the greater part of it covered with jungle-grass.



Digitized by Google

There was no deficiency of campans, but they were mostly wretched little places not more than fifteen feet square. The people were all crouching upon dirty torn mats, and had a feeble fire glimmering in a corner, by which stood at most one earthen pot, constituting, it seemed, the entire stock of household utensils. The inhabitants were clothed, if it could be called so, in dark blue rags; but the children were quite naked, and the women and girls frequently down to the waist. Two huts, very little larger than pigeon-houses, I saw suspended between the branches of a banana tree, and I was told that these also served as dwellings.

I passed many little brooks with muddy, dirty water, in which the people seek and find gold; and precisely here, where this source of wealth springs up, does the poverty appear to be the greatest. Does this metal always prove a curse instead of a blessing?

Four or five miles from Muara-Sipongie I saw, in a coffee plantation at the side of the road, some Battaker tombs. They were of a quadrangular form, three or four feet high, and built of stone or earth. On the top of each was a wood coffin, the corners of which were adorned with human figures, four feet high, cut out of wood, but exhibiting most deplorable caricatures of the "human face divine." Each grave was provided with a roof to shelter it, and surrounded by a wooden paling; but the coffin I found did not really contain the body, as that was buried underground.

*July* 31*st. Fort Elant*, or *Pangabangan*, eighteen miles. Coffee plantations and groups of trees and shrubs now relieved the mournful uniformity of the jungle-grass. Fort Elant lies in a large undulating valley, surrounded by beautiful mountains. It is the seat of an Assistant-Resident, to whose watchful superintendence and exertions is to be ascribed the appearance of well-being I noticed in the campans around, which were prettier and cleaner than any I had yet seen. The houses stand in regular rows, each a little apart from the others, and no filth is allowed to be thrown either in, under, or before them; the horned cattle, too, have their own separate residence outside the campan. This country was formerly very unhealthy, but since the people have

Digitized by Google

been induced to live in at least a comparatively cleanly manner, the maladies to which they were subject have much decreased. The bridges and roads also show signs of the care of the Assistant; the latter are very well kept, and at least twenty feet broad, a breadth that seemed to me somewhat superfluous in a country where there is as yet no wheeled carriage in use. The Dutch government, however, has them all made so, in case they should have to be used as military roads for the passage of troops.

This making of roads is a considerable hardship to the natives, as their tools are only very imperfectly adapted to such work. They have iron bars for breaking the rocks, but only painted wooden shovels the breadth of your hand to dig with, and only small knives to cut the jungle-grass, which is continually overgrowing every road that is not much used; and to carry away the earth they dig out, they have nothing but their hands. No less toilsome to them than the making the roads is the building the houses of the government officers and the coffee magazines. I often saw seven or eight men dragging at one team or a few planks.

Whenever I made any observations on the nature of the work, or the defective character of the tools, the answer I got was, "Oh! the people are used to it;" but I did not find that in other cases there was any hesitation about trying to make them alter their customs; and to making roads, building houses, and laying out coffee, sugar, and spice plantations they were certainly not accustomed before the arrival of the Europeans. But unfortunately in all countries, as far as I have seen, what the people are or are not accustomed to is only taken into consideration just so far as it may be convenient or otherwise to the government; concerning the welfare of the subjects themselves, they do not often give themselves much trouble: and so it is with the government here. The labor of making roads, bridges, and buildings must be got through, somehow or other, without costing the government any thing; and whether in any case fifty or a hundred men are employed is quite a matter of indifference to the governor. Another cause of oppression to the natives in whose vicinity official persons reside is, that they are expected to perform gratu-

Digitized by Google

itously a great number of small services—they must go on errands for the great man, work in his garden, etc.; and as the number of persons on whom he has claims of this kind is not at all fixed, many of the government officers abuse their privilege, and force many more persons to work for them than they have any claim on.

The present Governor General, Mr. Diemar Van Twist, is said to be exerting himself very zealously to do away with these abuses and causes of oppression; he has raised the price of the articles delivered by the natives and of daily wages, and is endeavoring to abolish forced labor altogether.

*August* 1*st*. *Sarumentingi*, twenty miles. Although the character of the country on the whole remained pretty much the same, I enjoyed some fine prospects and passed through some large and extremely well-kept campans, many rice plantations, and a grove of bamboos of extraordinary size and height—often as much as seventy or eighty feet. The canes are said to contain a great quantity of water.

At Sarumentingi I found a small simple bamboo-house, with no more furniture than was barely sufficient for the requirements of the civil and military officers, to whom it afforded an occasional shelter; and since I did not, like some luxurious European travelers, carry a whole *ménage* with me, but only as much luggage as I could in case of necessity carry myself, I should have been obliged on this day to have been content with an extremely humble meal and a hard couch, if Mr. Godoon had not been so kind and thoughtful as to send forward every thing that I could possibly require, as well as servants to wait on me. I found a most excellent meal, with tea and coffee, ready, and afterward a soft bed on which to recover from my fatigues.

*August* 2*d*. *Padang-Sidimpuang*, twenty miles. Continual hilly country, only now and then interrupted by a wide plain. The mountains constantly decreasing in height. *Padang-Sidimpuang* lies within the Ankola territory, and possesses a small fort. Here I met the last Europeans—some officers and a Controller, Mr. Hammers, at whose house I alighted.

During the last three days I had had to ride horses whose pace was so excessively hard that I was completely exhausted—so com-

Digitized by Google

pletely as to have not the slightest inclination to eat. At dinner I could hardly hold myself up on my seat, but my pride would not allow me to confess how greatly I was fatigued; and in order to appear as if I was eating, I privately conveyed some bits to the cats which surrounded the table, and proved powerful assistants. Most fortunately for me it is the custom here, as in Java, to take a siesta in the afternoon; and never did I so heartily approve the custom as to-day. I rather fell than lay down, and slept profoundly for two hours; then, however, I rose quite refreshed, and was able to make my appearance at tea, and even play a rubber of whist with the gentlemen in the evening.

I saw here a new example of the want of feeling in the Javanese. On the day of my arrival the captain of the garrison was buried. He left behind him four orphan children, and a person denominated a housekeeper, who was their mother. This woman had lived in comfort with him for several years; and now, when he, the father of her children, was carried to the grave, and she knew little what was likely to become of them or herself, she looked just as easy and pleasant as usual, and laughed and joked as if she were in no way concerned in what was going on.

I remained at Padang-Sidimpuang three days; and here also, when my intention to visit the Battaker country became known, people came to look at me, and warn me from it, and so much the more as it appeared that, only the year before, some disputes had arisen between the Battakers and the Dutch. The former had made an incursion into the Dutch territory, destroyed a campan, and carried off twenty-seven men with them. The Dutch had sent some troops, indeed, to punish the offenders; but as it often happens on such occasions, they found the village empty, the inhabitants having fled into the most inaccessible woods and ravines. The only revenge the pursuers could take was by burning down their huts. Mr. Hammers informed me that, scarcely two years ago, four men had been seized by the Battakers subject to the Dutch, and killed and *eaten*.

All this did not, however, deter me from my purpose; I was determined to penetrate, if possible, through the great valley of *Silingdon*, as far as the lake *Eier-Pau* (Great Water), which no Eu-

Digitized by Google

ropean had hitherto seen, and of whose existence there was no other testimony than the stories of the natives. Of its position and extent, and of the people living on its banks, the information hitherto obtained was very slight and imperfect. I could not, therefore, arrange the plan of my journey beforehand, but was forced to leave all to Providence, and hope for my hitherto unfailing good fortune. Mr. Hammers kindly provided me with letters for some of the Rajahs who were occasionally in communication with the Dutch, and also with a guide. I put in order some papers, that were to be sent to my family in case I should never come back, and then took a cordial farewell of perhaps the last Europeans whom in this world I was ever to see.

---

## CHAPTER VIII.

Continuation of the Travels in Sumatra.—Journey on Foot.—Night Bivouac in the primeval Forest.—First Meeting with the Cannibals.—Holy-Bonar.—Sacrifice of a Buffalo Calf.—The Valley of Silindong.—Hostile Reception.—Forced Return.—Repeated Wild Scenes.—Return to the Dutch Territory.—Paya Kombo.—Ascent of the Merapi.—Return to Padang.

On the 6th of August I set out on my rather dangerous journey, and traveled twenty miles to Sipirok. All was forest or jungle-grass, and from the top of a small chain of hills I looked over the wide undulating valley of Lawas, one of the largest in Sumatra. I had now passed through a great part of the island, and found it equal, or perhaps superior even, to Java in the beauty of its natural scenery. What a glorious country it might become! but, as yet, it is to a great extent unpeopled and uncultivated. A few plantations there are, but the vast forests of the interior are inhabited only by wild beasts, and the blood-thirsty tiger has his lair in the scorched jungle-grass.

Yet a great part of Sumatra must certainly be a splendid country for European emigrants. Near as it lies to the equator, the climate on the great table-lands, of which there are many, is ex-

Digitized by Google

tremely moderate, and the exuberant richness of vegetation in the thick forests, and the height of the jungle-grass, affords sufficient evidence of the fertility of the soil. Where nature unassisted is so bountiful, she would certainly perform wonders with the aid of cultivation. But the Dutch government does not encourage the settlement of Europeans—not even of its own subjects; and it declares, alas! with perfect truth, that the example of the whites tends to corrupt the natives. There is, nevertheless, I believe, another motive secretly influential in the case; namely, the fear that the whites might in time become too powerful for the little mother country to hold in check, and even perhaps unite with the natives to render themselves independent.

Sipirok lies in a small smooth valley. Here is the last coffee plantation under the superintendence of a native Writer. I happened to arrive just as the coffee was being delivered, and this gave me an opportunity of seeing a great number of the people. Their appearance was not prepossessing; their faces were of the same type as the Malays, but actually uglier, and the females excessively diminutive. In the elegant art, too, of filing and blackening their teeth they have obtained such proficiency, that they are able to do what might seem impossible—to render themselves more frightful than nature has made them. They were very scantily attired, extremely dirty, and all had their cheeks puffed out with the siri they were chewing, and were spitting right and left among, or at least close to, the coffee-beans that lay spread out. By way of amusing their leisure, too, they were occupying themselves with hunting for vermin on the heads and clothes of their children, who, covered as they were with horrid cutaneous eruptions, were playing and pelting each other with the coffee-beans.

After the coffee had been examined, put into sacks, and placed in the magazine, and when the people had received their money, the open space or square was transformed into a bazaar. From the apartments of the Writer various kinds of goods were brought out; and traders who had been for hours impatiently waiting for the clearing away of the coffee, began to unpack and exhibit colored stuffs, glass beads, brass rings, eatables, and so forth. With

Digitized by Google

eager glances did the fortunate possessors of money survey all these tempting wares, only distracted, poor creatures, by the difficulty of choosing among so many seductive articles, when their means of purchasing were so small. In the course of an hour the bazaar was over; that is to say, the people had spent all their money.

At Sipirok my traveling on horseback was to cease, and I should again, as in Borneo, have to renounce for a time all the conveniences of life, and recommence my wanderings on foot.

*August 6th.* Twelve miles to Donan. The way led through thick woods, and over steep hills and mountains, by terribly slippery paths. When I reached Donan, I was shown to a dilapidated hut, which contained two sleeping-places; and from this time I was, of course, at every Battaker village, or *Utta*, as they are called, surrounded by a crowd of curious gazers. Even at Muara Sipongie I had begun to find myself an attractive spectacle, as no European woman had ever before made her appearance in that country; but here I *drew*, as actors say, such very full houses—that is to say, my hut was so thronged—that I could not tell for a long time who were to be my fellow-lodgers; but at length I had the pleasure of discovering that the other inmates were a nearly dying man and—a murderer! The latter had killed one of his neighbors in a fit of jealousy, and was to be beheaded for it in two days in the bazaar. He lay on the ground naked, and fastened to a post, his feet being drawn through a block; and he was behaving almost like a madman—laughing, weeping, and screaming alternately, and dashing himself wildly from one side to the other. It was a horrible sight! The sick person was a youth of eighteen years of age, who also lay on the ground without mat or covering, though he appeared to be in the last stage of consumption, and had dreadful fits of coughing. Unfortunately I could do nothing for the poor fellow, having neither medicine nor any thing else with me.

I could not help observing on this occasion how much more sympathy appeared to be felt with the murderer than with the sick man. The women prepared his siri for him, brought him rice and dried fish for his meals, fed him, as his hands were bound,

Digitized by Google

like a little child, fanned the flies off him, etc.; and the men even unbound him and carried him to a neighboring river to take a bath. The poor fellow dying of consumption they took no notice of, but let him cough and groan, and gave him neither food nor drink; they could not have done less for him if he had been already dead. I could give him only rice and water, for this was all I had myself.

Diseases of the lungs are very prevalent in the highlands of Sumatra, and I heard many of the people coughing fearfully. Although the heat is great in the daytime, the nights are almost cold; it rains much; and the people go as scantily clothed as in regions of unvaried sunshine, and have nothing to cover themselves at night when they sleep, so the fact is not so very surprising.

As I was determined I would not, if I could help it, pass the night in the room with the murderer, I sent to beg the Rajah to find me some other place of shelter, and he had the complaisance to order both the criminal and the sick man to be removed; but the people were not to be hindered from thronging in to gaze at me; and even during the night I was not left for a moment alone. Until midnight the fires were kept burning, and they gossiped incessantly; then most of them lay down, pulled their sarangs closely about them, and were soon snoring one against the other.

The next day, also, I was obliged to pass in Donan, for the Rajah, who was nominally under the protection of the Dutch government, assured me that without his escort I could not venture into the country of the wild Battakers, now only a few miles off. He would go with me, he said, and use his personal influence with the Rajah, with whom he was acquainted, to secure my safety. In pursuance of this friendly resolution, he first slaughtered a buffalo-calf in my honor, to secure the patronage and favor of the evil spirits—who, if they were offended, might oppose insurmountable obstacles to our undertaking—to induce them to refrain from increasing the perils of our journey.

Early in the morning he paid me a visit, attended by some dozens of women and girls, mostly his relatives. They defiled before me in a profoundly humble attitude, bending down, and shading their faces with their hands—the mode of salutation, I

Digitized by Google

was told, for inferiors toward persons of rank. Then they sat down on the ground at the back of the hut, and took out of some pretty plaited baskets a quantity of siri that was intended for my delectation.

The girls wore from ten to fifteen leaden rings in their ears, and had also the upper part of the cartilage pierced and decorated with a button, or a string of glass beads; but when they marry I was told they have to lay aside all these trinkets. The girls have their bosoms covered, the married women mostly bare, and both women and girls twist their hair up into a knot, putting a straw cushion under it to increase its apparent mass. What is rather perplexing, too, the gentlemen wear it just as long, and twist it up in the same manner as the ladies; they have no beards, and they wear the sarang, their only garment, fastened round them mostly in the same manner. Fortunately they, for the most part, stick on a straw cap, or twist a handkerchief round their heads, and by this sign one may recognize the superior sex.

Many of the girls were of considerable *embonpoint*, and were only young ladies by courtesy, as they had, in fact, passed their youth, although, as it appeared, without entering the conjugal state; a circumstance to be accounted for from wives being purchasable articles here.

The purpose of the Rajah's visit was to invite me to the solemn slaughtering of the buffalo-calf, and I soon accompanied him and his ladies to his hut. The ceremony began with a wild dance, performed by the Rajah's son, a youth of eighteen; and as every one desired to witness the *pas seul* of the young chief, the hut soon became so full that there was no moving. It was whispered about, probably to flatter the young man, that he was possessed by an evil spirit; and, as if he wished to justify the opinion, his dancing became even more and more fast and furious, until at last he fairly fell down exhausted. Then another took his place; but this was an inferior performer, who did not enjoy the advantage of demoniacal possession, and he soon retired, for the Rajah's son sprung up again, and recommenced his mad exhibition to the accompaniment, as before, of a kind of uproarious music. A bowl filled with unboiled rice was then presented to

Digitized by Google

him, and he raised it several times above his head, as if he wished to offer the contents to the spirits, or beg their blessing upon it. Then he took a small portion and flung it into the air, and after that he rushed out of the hut, scattering the rice as he went, and at last poured the remainder over the buffalo-calf, which lay on a sort of scaffold, bound, and ready to be slaughtered.

After this the prince returned to the hut and continued his extraordinary *ballet d'action* until he could no longer stand, and fell exhausted into the arms of the much edified spectators. Thereupon the calf was slain, cut into many little bits, and for the most part distributed among the people; and the liver was politely put aside for me, and in the evening presented to me; but, unluckily, it had been roasted till it was as hard as a stone, and quite uneatable, so that I had again to content myself with rice and salt, although the calf had been killed expressly to do me honor.

*August 8th.* I left Donan with a suit of more than twenty persons, of whom, however, the greater part did not proceed farther than the frontier, about three miles off. At parting they took my hand and wished me a safe return, but accompanied their good wishes with a pantomine more expressive than agreeable—pointing to my throat, and giving me to understand by signs that the wild men would cut my head off, and eat me up. This was not very encouraging, but it never once entered my head to desist from my undertaking. My party consisted of the Rajah and five of his people, my guide, and two coolies—one for the guide and one for me.

The way led now into the untrodden wilderness, through all but impenetrable woods and jungle-grass six feet high. We saw no habitation, nor any trace of man, though many of wild beasts, especially tigers. We came to a river, and found that the only way of crossing it was by climbing a tree and scrambling along the branches that stretched over the water about twenty feet above it, and then on to those of a corresponding tree on the opposite bank, which extended its leafy arms across, so as to form, between the two, a kind of natural bridge.

From time to time we came to openings in the forest which afforded glimpses of wide, lonely valleys, watered by the innumera-

Digitized by Google

ble windings of the river Padang-Toru, and of a small lake glittering in the sunlight on one of the hills. The Padang-Toru, to which we often came quite close, is a fine broad stream, and its surface is as yet unruffled even by the smallest canoe: whichever way we looked, all was one vast solitude; it seemed as if we were the only inhabitants of the earth.

At this time of year it rains in Sumatra almost regularly every afternoon, and, unluckily, the rain always caught us on our road; for here, as in Borneo, it was impossible to get the people to start early. The bad weather was particularly disagreeable to me, as I had no opportunity of changing clothes or linen; in the first place, because the people never left me for a sufficient time, day or night; and, secondly, because I very often could not get at my small luggage, even had it been ever so necessary.

My guide, like the one I had at Sarawak, did just what he pleased, and always demanded the services of the first cooly that was to be got for his own benefit, leaving my carpet-bag to take its chance of being brought by any helping hand that might turn up, and often enough leaving it behind, with merely an order to send it on. This day the rain was beyond measure annoying, and we had, besides, to pass the night in the woods. The men put up, indeed, a little roof of large leaves, and spread some also on the ground; but when we arrived I was already drenched through and through, and, having had to walk through a morass, was up to my knees in mud.

I went down to the small stream near which we had encamped, and washed off the mud, and then came back dripping wet and shivering with cold (the evenings and mornings were very cold), and crept to the fire; but as we had no dry wood, this rather glimmered than burned. The people collected wood for the night, and caught some small fish in the river; they also brought some perfectly green bamboo canes, the use of which I could not at all understand, but presently I found they were to serve as cooking utensils. The men put some rice and water upon *bisang* leaves, made them up into long rolls, and pushed them into the canes. The fish they prepared in the same way; then laid the canes across the fire, and left them till they began to brown, which

Digitized by Google

was a considerable time, as they were extremely moist. They then split the canes, and took out what they had put in. The larger fish were done in a different way, being stuck on small pieces of wood, and roasted before the fire.

The meal thus prepared was neither very tempting nor very clean, for the rice had not been washed nor the fish gutted; but I had eaten nothing the whole day, and had also walked eighteen miles, so I was not inclined to be very critical, and was well content with it. Before we lay down for the night, I begged my attendants to make up a good fire, in order to keep the tigers from us; but the wood was too wet to burn well, and the men were soon fast asleep, and not to be waked by any calling of mine. We were involved in the thickest darkness, and I found it impossible to sleep a moment, for I was in constant dread of an attack of wild beasts, or of men little less savage.

As often as I saw the gleam of a diamond beetle I thought it was the glare of a tiger's eye, and every leaf that rattled appeared to me to indicate the approach of a serpent. Altogether it was a terrible night!

*August 9th. Sossor-Doluk*, seventeen miles. Worn out by this anxious and sleepless night, and still weak from fatigue and want of food, for the last night's meal had been a very slight one, I had to set off without taking any thing in the morning, and commenced what seemed likely to be a most toilsome march through the dense, dark forest, for we were obliged to force our way continually through the thick underwood and high jungle-grass. Marshes and rivers had not merely to be crossed, but to be waded through in their length, and the trees and bushes were still dripping from last night's rain. Steep hills arose before us as if to block our way, and they were dangerous to cross, being so excessively slippery that you could scarcely keep your feet a moment. To these annoyances was added a peculiar one from the tall reeds (*Saccharum Koenigri*), which grow to a height of four or five feet, and are so matted together at the top that they can not be separated, and you have to creep through them bent double.

The path in these places consisted of a kind of narrow gutter, so narrow that I could only just set one foot before the other;

Digitized by Google

and even this was interrupted by deep pits and holes full of mud. If I slipped into one of these holes, and tried to catch at a bush or a reed, the case became worse, for the reed was sure to break, and the bush to have large thorns, from which I drew back my hands torn and bleeding; not only hands and feet indeed, but often my entire person was covered with blood. The greater part of this journey through the wilderness I was compelled to walk barefoot, as it is impossible, when you have not only morasses, but also water to walk through, to find any kind of *chaussure* that will answer the purpose, and not be a positive obstacle to your progress; and in consequence of having to travel in this manner, I had my feet continually pierced with thorns and cut through by the sharp-edged jungle-grass. At the end of every day's journey I was obliged to get one of the natives to pull out the thorns, which they did in a very effectual, but rather painful manner, though their only instruments were their large and rather blunt parangs. Very often my feet were so sore, that I thought I could not possibly go on on the following morning, but when the time came I always did.

As we approached what may be considered as the termination of this wilderness, we were startled by a loud yell from many human voices. We stopped, and remained for a time perfectly still; then we crept cautiously and stealthily like thieves, toward the edge of the wood. Scarcely had we issued from it than we found ourselves on the banks of the river Palé, and saw the yellers, forty or fifty in number, standing in the water, in almost the complete state of nature, occupied in fishing. The Rajah told me to remain behind with the people, and, going out alone, he advanced toward the chief, and begged permission for me to enter his country. After many questions and explanations on one side and the other, he obtained the required consent, and we walked into the tolerably broad river, and over to the other side, where we landed under a magnificent tree, a noble specimen of the family of *Dilleniaceæ*, sometimes called *Colbertia*. This tree was coming into blossom, and had buds as big as a man's fist, which looked just like fruit; but when I broke open one, I found within a most beautiful flower. The buds, of course, open of themselves

Digitized by Google

when they are sufficiently advanced. With the exception of this species, few of the trees in the forests of Sumatra struck me much on account of their height or girth. I have seen some reaching to 100 or 120 feet, but certainly not to 200, as many travelers maintain. The wild flowers I had to seek for; they did not, as in Brazil, burst forth every where, and turn the forest into a gorgeous natural garden.

The worst part of the journey, as far as the mere traveling went, was now fortunately got over; but now began the far more dangerous contest, not with nature, but with man. We went on our way, through a country still hilly, and good open paths led us to the place where we were to pass the night, but we passed on the way some fearful clefts or chasms in the earth, so deep that it made me shudder to look down them.

When we arrived in Sossor-Doluk, a good deal of difficulty was made about receiving us, or rather me; but at length they permitted us to occupy a ruined and dilapidated hut, that appeared so tottering and all on one side that I expected every moment that it would fall upon us. The roof was like a sieve, and I could count the stars over my head as I lay; but, nevertheless, it afforded us excellent quarters in comparison with what we had had the night before in the wild dark forest, with nothing to keep off the tigers.

During the evening the Rajah of the place came to us, accompanied by the Rajah of *Segumpolang* (a place in the vicinity), who happened to be here. Both made vehement objections to my proceeding farther up the country; and when at last they reluctantly granted me the permission, it was evident that I had my sex to thank for the privilege. Had I been a man they would have taken me for a spy, and either sent me back, or, what is more likely, put me to death.

At this place there is a hot spring, but without any sulphureous smell, in which the people bathe, and which, indeed, they regard as a specific for every kind of malady.

*August* 10*th*. *Segumpolang*, five miles. Hali-Bonar, the Rajah of this utta, or village, who accompanied us on our way, was an old but powerful-looking man, six feet high. We crossed the riv-

Digitized by Google

er Patang-Toru by a suspension-bridge made of a single bamboo cane, at least seventy feet long, but scarcely six inches in diameter. Thin sticks, hung by the side of it, formed a kind of hand-rail; but as in the similar bridge in Borneo, were not adapted to afford the slightest support, but merely helped you to balance yourself. The simplicity of this kind of bridge building was doubtless admirable, and the bridge was certainly stronger than it looked, as it swung in the air with no other support than having the two ends fastened to trunks of trees. As I approached the middle it shook more and more, and I certainly thanked God when I found myself safe on the other side, especially as this single cane bore at the same time about a dozen other people. The landscape was charming—a beautiful undulating valley, varied with level spaces covered with plantations of rice. Hali-Bonar led me past his own utta, half a mile further on, to an open space where bazaars are held, in order to present me there to several other Rajahs, and to the people.* This he did with a view of securing me a friendly reception in case I should, in the course of my journey, pass through any of their villages. The Rajahs who were then in the bazaar came and sat round me on the ground, and their spear-bearers, of whom each had half a dozen, formed a circle round us—a very necessary precaution, it appeared, for the people came rushing toward us from all sides with wild cries. The dealers forsook their wares, and the customers forgot their purchases; all came running to stare at me; and those who could not get near, climbed upon the trees. There was a confusion—an uproar of which I can not give any idea. I could not understand a word of what they said, and I was entirely alone among these savages, for the Rajah of Donan, with his people and my guide, had remained behind in the utta.

Amidst the multitude that surrounded me I noticed many tall strong looking men, of at least six feet high, and the women also were more robust in appearance than any I had hitherto seen in Sumatra. Their faces were, as usual, frightful; the lower jaws

* In the Battaker country every utta has its own separate Rajah, and this makes one of the difficulties of traveling there, as you have every few miles to seek the protection of some new one.

Digitized by Google

enormously large and prominent, their complexions were not very dark, and they wore large brass plates or pieces of wood as ornaments for their ears, and had handkerchiefs folded and laid upon their heads. Both sexes were clothed in the sarang, and the men had large holes in the cartilages of their ears, as well as the women, but seldom more than one in each. The Rajahs wore heavy gold ear-rings, while the other men very often had a kind of straw cigar sticking through them; and another distinction of their superior rank consisted in large brazen tobacco-pipes, which were hung to heavy rings of the same metal. I remarked among the Battakers the same armlets made of white shells, and the same kind of drums, as among the Dyaks. When I had passed about an hour among these people, Hali-Bonar conducted me to his utta. The houses of the Battakers are built on piles like those of the Malays, but are incomparably larger, handsomer, and more substantial. They occupy a space of forty or fifty square feet, are built of wood, and have high roofs, projecting about five feet beyond the walls, terminating in a peak at each end, and thatched with the fibres of the arenga palm; many of them had the front walls painted and carved as tastefully as those of the campan near Fort de Koch. They have, however, neither windows nor doors; there is merely a wooden gallery carried round at the top, shaded by the projecting roof, in which there is an opening to the interior of the house, closed by a sort of portcullis. To the gallery you must ascend by a ladder. The inside of the house consists of one large apartment, in which three or four families live, each in a corner. It is, of course, perfectly dark, and when you first go in you can perceive nothing whatever but some air-holes near the roof, which serve also for the escape of the smoke of which the room is constantly full; since, however little the people have to cook, they keep their fires constantly burning.

In the space below the house, poultry, pigs, dogs, cows (always black), buffaloes, and a horse, have their abode. The pigs are of a peculiar species; they have sharply-pointed snouts, very short legs, few bristles, a fall in the back, and a thick short mane like a horse.

These people have great stores of cattle and rice, and are wealthy



Digitized by Google

compared with the Javanese or the Malays of Sumatra. They have quite a stock of household utensils, earthen and iron pots, plates, bowls, many mats and baskets, as well as wooden troughs, and even spinning-wheels. Opposite to almost every house is an open hut, or shed, called a soppo, where the rice is laid up in stacks and baskets, and where the people are mostly to be found during the day; where the women weave their sarangs, and the men assemble to carry on their chief occupations, namely, gossiping, or doing nothing whatever; for among the Battakers the women do almost all the work. In the evening the girls of marriageable age also meet here the young men, and in the soppo strangers are assigned their quarters for the night. Here, therefore, I had to take up my temporary abode. Hali-Bonar offered his services to accompany me as far as Silindong (the Great Toba), an offer which I accepted with so much the more satisfaction, as the Rajah of Donan and his attendants left me here. I had to wait a day, as I had done at Donan, while Hali-Bonar slaughtered a buffalo-calf, partly in my honor, and partly to propitiate any evil spirits who might be inclined to make themselves troublesome to us in the course of the journey; he then came in person to fetch me, and conducted me to a very neat soppo, carpeted with matting, which stood opposite his own house. The ceremony took place in the open air, and a full orchestra of musical instruments, drums, gongs, and a kind of bagpipe, were assembled on the occasion. The calf was slaughtered to the accompaniment of the whole band; the choicest portion, namely, the entrails, being carried into the Rajah's house, and certain bits politely set aside for the Rajah of Donan and his people.

After this a man came forward in a simple, yet picturesque costume; a handsome sarang reached from his hips to his feet, a white cloth was twisted like a wreath round his head, a black shawl edged with glass beads was wound round the upper part of his body, and fell in rich folds around him. He held in one hand a buffalo-horn, filled with water, and in the other a betel-leaf; and after a long speech, much like a prayer, he began a very graceful dance, in which he raised the horn and the leaf several times toward heaven, lifting up his eyes also as he did so, and

Digitized by Google

then poured out some of the water toward me, some toward the musicians, and the remainder over the betel-leaf. The horn was then filled again with water, and the same ceremony repeated, though this time he took a plate of rice, and, after making a speech, did the same with it as he had done with the water. The Rajah now came upon the stage, followed by a man who always kept close behind him, and appeared to be his immediate attendant, and gave us an exact *da capo* of the first dancer's performance, except that the second time he substituted for the horn a plate of rice-cakes, which he set down before me. In conclusion, the first dancer and the Rajah performed a very pretty movement together, in which they several times raised their hands, as if imploringly, toward heaven, and accompanied their pantomime with earnest and solemn looks; the servant all the while following his master in every step he took, and mimicking his every motion with the exactness of a shadow. Whoever had not known that all this was an invocation of evil spirits, a worship, in fact, of Satan, might certainly have taken it for a decorous and devout service to God. I do not remember to have seen among any people so venerable and imposing a form.

After these two chief performers had retired, others came forward and entertained the company with some very tedious displays in the Malay style. The women were not present at this festival, but they were not forgotten in the distribution of the meat. The banquet was cooked as well as eaten in the soppo where I had been lodged, the meat and entrails roasted on wooden spits, and a kind of pudding made of rice and buffalo-blood. A portion of every dish was given to me, and a particularly large piece of liver; and what I did not eat was brought to me again and again till I did. Many of the guests drank, after the meal, warm, and even hot water, which seemed intended, like our strong coffee, to help digestion.

In the afternoon I begged Hali-Bonar to let the people perform some of their dances. The sword-dance I found, to my surprise, to be exactly the same as that which I had seen among the Dyaks in Borneo. There was another called the knife-dance, the only difference of which consisted in sticking the knives in sheaths in

Digitized by Google

the girdles worn by the dancers, and drawing them out again, instead of laying them on the ground.

This dance was followed by a pugilistic combat that seemed to afford much diversion to the people, and in which the combatants hit at each other in an extremely cautious manner, and accompanied their blows with an extraordinary variety of grotesque attitudes and grimaces; but the most wild and animated exhibition was the one called "the devil's dance." These dances were all performed by men, one excepted, in which a woman took part; but she only made gesticulations with her hands, and from time to time crouched upon the ground, while the men danced about her. Both men and women kept their eyes fixed upon the ground.

I had now seen all the dances but one, namely, that which is performed when a man is to be killed and eaten. This they did not seem to wish to exhibit, but yielded at last to my entreaty, and, by way of prelude, bound to a stake a log of wood which was to represent the victim, and put on the top of it a straw cap. There was certainly no want of animation in this performance; the dancers lifted up their feet as high as they could, and darted their knives at the supposed victim in a most expressive manner. At length one of them gave him the first stroke, and this example was speedily followed by all the rest. They struck the head (the straw cap, namely) from the body, and laid it upon a mat spread out to receive it, taking care to preserve the blood. They then danced round it, uttering wild and joyful cries. Some raised the head in their hands and carried it to their lips, appearing to lick the blood from it; others flung themselves on the ground, and appeared to be lapping up the gore from the dripping head, or they dipped their fingers into it and sucked them; doing all this with the appearance of the greatest delight: the predominant expression, indeed, of their faces was that of pleasure rather than of cruelty. This, however, was only play; it might have been otherwise had they had a real victim before them.

Play as it was, though, I could not witness it without some shuddering, especially when I considered that I was entirely in the power of these wild cannibals. Long after I had returned to the suppo, I could not get rid of the painful impression; and

Digitized by Google

when at last I fell into an uneasy sleep, the same images haunted me still.

*August 12th. Si-Pigarajah*, twelve miles. The bright morning sun drove away these painful visions of the night, and I entered on my day's journey with renewed strength and courage. We had to cross a deep, swiftly-rushing stream, the *Patang-Toru*, and this was no easy matter for me, as I could not swim; but we managed it at last by two of the natives taking each one of my hands, and so towing me over, while I kept up my head as well as I could. The road, which was not bad, led across some low ranges of hills, and through some beautiful undulating valleys; and the principal mountain chain, of which we seldom lost sight, became lower and lower, and did not now exceed the height of from twelve to fifteen hundred feet. We saw few villages, but those were surrounded by earthen ramparts or wooden palisades, and we could not enter them without permission. I suffered much from the heat, as we were constantly in the sun, or in the glowing hot jungle-grass. The thermometer showed 121° Fahrenheit. In Si-Pigarajah I again passed the night in a soppo; and I could still not quite make up my mind whether this or the Rajah's house was the preferable residence. In the former I seemed to be regularly set up as a public show; the people were not content with collecting outside, but in the evening, when the fire was lit, they came in and staid gossiping till far into the night. Many stretched themselves out where they were, and staid till morning. No one seemed content to take the story at second-hand from his neighbors, but insisted on hearing, from the mouth of my guide himself, who I was, why I had come, where I came from, etc.; for the appearance of a European woman was so extraordinary, that they had never done wondering at it, and mostly did me the honor of ascribing to me some supernatural character. In the house of the Rajah I should have been somewhat more protected from the curiosity of the public, but I should have been exposed to that of his family circle, which was even more troublesome.

In the presence of the men the women showed much shyness, running away with their children the moment I approached them;

Digitized by Google

but when we were left alone, they became so familiar and importunate, that I found it impossible to keep my small possessions, or even the very clothes I wore, from their clutches. I did not know how to defend myself from them; for had I begun to give, that would have been the signal for them to begin to take. Sometimes I had to place my knapsack behind me, and push off the women by main force; and then they mostly drew back with threatening gestures, and uttering what were evidently abusive speeches, so that I always avoided, if I could, being alone with them. I was far safer with the men. They would stare at me, indeed, by the hour together, and gossip about me everlastingly, but they behaved otherwise with perfect propriety. One of the most unpleasant things in the houses was the almost total darkness during the day; and in the evening, when the four fires were burning, the smoke was so thick that I could hardly open my eyes. The dirt, too, was so excessively disgusting, that I could hardly bring myself to swallow the meals they prepared for me. Neither the rice nor the pot it was boiled in were ever washed; the people have no idea there is any occasion for it; and when they boil milk with herbs and leaves, to turn it into curd, they stir it up with their filthy hands, and shake the curd over the rice in the same manner. When they killed a fowl for me and the guide, they used to tear it into four pieces, and throw them fairly into the fire, where they became burned to perfect charcoal. They then took the entrails for themselves, and these they did wash a little. They will eat every creature that lives, including worms and beetles, and that not from hunger, for they have abundance of cattle, poultry, and rice, etc., but from an abominable kind of epicurism.

The women are here regarded as mere animals of burden; and, with the exception of tilling the ground and sowing the rice, almost all labor falls on them. They nurse their children, too, and carry them on their backs, an astonishing time. I have seen urchins of three years old taking the mother's breast, and fighting about it with younger claimants; and many a stout boy of about the same age would leave his play when he saw his mother, and jump up on her back, when she would tie him fast with an old

Digitized by Google

handkerchief or sarang, and then go about her work with this additional burden. In the morning the mothers would frequently awaken quite big children out of their sleep, tie them on their backs, and so set about their domestic labors.

*August 13th. Silindong (Great Toba)*, twelve miles. The first half of this journey, like that of yesterday, lay through thinly-peopled valleys, and then we came to a low mountain ridge, from the top of which the surprisingly beautiful Silindong valley lay spread out in all its extent at our feet. Throughout this journey I had seldom seen an open space of more than a few miles in extent; but here was a plain of at least twenty miles long, and eight broad. It was intersected and watered by many winding branches of the Patang Toru, and innumerable little groves lay scattered like bouquets over the broad, smooth, green surface. In each of these groves I was told a village lay concealed.

Before descending into this valley, Hali-Bonar warned me never to move away, but to remain always close behind him. The procession was opened by six of his men, armed with spears; then came he, then I and my guide, and after us some people from some of the villages we had passed. At the first utta we came to in the plain, there seemed to be great opposition made to my proceeding further. It had somehow become known to the inhabitants that I was there, and before each village the men stood assembled, armed with lances and parangs, to prevent my entrance. At last, however, Hali-Bonar prevailed on them to let me pass.

At one place, indeed, things looked more serious. More than eighty armed men stood in the pathway and barred our passage, and before we were aware of it, their spear-men had formed a circle round me and shut me in, looking the while indescribably terrible and savage. They were tall robust men, full six feet high; their features showed the most violent agitation, and their huge mouths and projecting teeth had really more resemblance to the jaws of a wild beast than to any thing human. They yelled and made a dreadful noise about me, and had I not been in some measure familiar with such scenes, I should have felt sure that my last hour was at hand. I was really uneasy, however: the scene was too frightful; but I never lost my presence of mind.

Digitized by Google

At first I sat down on a stone that lay near, endeavoring to look as composed and confidential as I could; but some Rajahs then came up to me with very threatening looks and gestures, and gave me clearly to understand that if I did not turn back they would kill and eat me. Their words, indeed, I did not comprehend, but their action left no manner of doubt, for they pointed with their knives to my throat, and gnashed their teeth at my arm, moving their jaws then, as if they already had them full of my flesh. Of course, when I thought of coming among the wild Battakers, I had anticipated something of this sort, and I had therefore studied a little speech in their language for such an occasion. I knew if I could say any thing that would amuse them, and perhaps make them laugh, I should have a great advantage over them, for savages are quite like children, and the merest trifle will often make them friends. I got up, therefore, and patting one of the most violent, who stood next me, upon the shoulder in a friendly manner, said, with a smiling face, in a jargon half Malay and half Battaker, "Why, you don't mean to say you would kill and eat a woman, especially such an old one as I am! I must be very hard and tough!" And I also gave them by signs and words to understand that I was not at all afraid of them, and was ready, if they liked, to send back my guide, and go with them alone, if they would only take me as far as the *Eier-Tau*. Fortunately for me, the doubtless very odd way in which I pronounced their language, and my pantomime, diverted them, and they began to laugh. Perhaps, also, the fearless confidence that I manifested made a good impression; they offered me their hands, the circle of spear-men opened, and, rejoicing not a little at having escaped this danger, I journeyed on, and reached in perfect safety a place called *Tugala*, where the Rajah received me into his house.

*August* 14*th*. A short march of only six miles, interrupted by wild and terrible scenes. It was only with the utmost difficulty I reached an utta where I was allowed to pass this and the following day in security. Long and vehement debates were, however, obviously taking place concerning me. Every moment some new Rajah came into the village, attended by his spear-men, till

Digitized by Google

it was entirely filled with them; and finally, it was, alas! determined in solemn council that I should not be allowed to proceed any farther. This was, indeed, hard! So near to the goal, and after so many toils and dangers, to be obliged to turn back! According to the accounts of the natives, I could not be now more than ten miles from Lake Eier-Tau; I had but to cross one low range of hills, and I should find myself on its shores. They told me that the "Great Water," as they called this lake, extended far and wide, and that the countries around it were very fruitful, and inhabited by a powerful people, under the rule of a female sovereign.

I repeated my proposal to leave my guide behind, and go alone with them, if they would allow one of their people to accompany me to the lake; but it was in vain. I tried to move them by entreaties to allow me, at least, to ascend to the summit of the hills, that I might obtain a glimpse of the Great Water, but my proposal was decidedly negatived. They replied that the Battakers were constantly at variance with the people of the lake country, and that no one of them would venture to go there with me. They assured me that no *Dutch* person—by which they mean any European—had ever come as far as I now was, without being treated in a hostile manner—*Anglicé*, killed and eaten.

I heard afterward that the queen of *Eier-Tau* had lately entered into a treaty of peace with the inhabitants of Silindong, under the condition of never allowing any strangers to come near her frontier; but whether this intelligence was true or false I had no means of ascertaining.

On the following day the concourse of people was greater than it had ever been before. It seemed as if all the warriors of the valley were crowding in. Whichever way I looked, I saw nothing but spears and parangs—many of the latter drawn—and there were even some long guns. It was a fine martial scene, that I should have regarded with pleasure had my own situation been rather less critical; but I saw by the looks and gestures of the heroes that this grand display was got up on my account, though not precisely in the way I might have wished; and I could not feel sure for a single moment that one or the other might not take



Digitized by Google

a fancy to murder me; for as a trifle may make a friend of a savage, so also there needs often but a small matter to turn him into a cruel enemy. The most uncomfortable idea was, that the people I was in the midst of were cannibals; and there were moments in which I could hardly understand how I had found courage enough to venture among them.

During the night a woman died in the house next the Rajah's, and I went to see what they were going to do with the body. It lay stretched out upon mats, and so enveloped in two sarangs as to leave only the face visible. Three women, the daughters, I was told, of the deceased, were moving about her, beating a regular measure with their feet on the ground, uttering some words at the same time, and pinching their bare bosoms till the blood came. Every moment, too, they stooped down and touched the body. The other female relations sat at the feet, and from time to time uttered a howl; the husband remained apart, and showed a very sorrowful countenance. Before the house stood the coffin—a hollowed-out trunk of a tree—but so narrow a one that the corpse had to be thrust in by main force. Bodies are usually buried under the trees at the edge of the forest, and I never but once saw a grave in a village near a house.

In striking contrast to the attention these people pay to the dead, is their utter neglect of the sick, and want of feeling for their sufferings. In many of the villages I saw poor half dying creatures, dragging themselves slowly and painfully along, and tottering down the house-ladder, to go and warm themselves in the sun, and no one offering a helping hand, or showing them the slightest attention.

*August 15th.* Toward noon I left the utta with my companions to commence my involuntary return journey, but not by the same road by which I had come. I was dragged about from one utta to another, till it almost seemed as if the Battakers were as unwilling to let me leave their country as they had been to let me enter it.

The uttas in this valley are all fortified with earthen walls eight feet high, and surrounded by bamboo plantations so high and thick that not a glimpse can be obtained from without of either walls or

Digitized by Google

houses. Some villages have a moat also; and there is never more than one entrance, and that a very narrow one, and closed by a door which is locked at night.

Although I had renounced my plan of penetrating still further into the country, and had set out on my return, as I was ordered, my life, it appeared, was not yet safe.

At the entrance of one of the uttas to-day, we were received by a tall, very ferocious fellow, surrounded by armed men, who immediately, as those of yesterday had done, formed a circle round me. The chief savage spoke with great violence, and hardly allowed the people with me to utter a word. I saw the yellow face of my guide turn deadly pale, and the words seemed to die upon his lips. The chief pushed me several times, and signified to me, in the most imperious manner, that I should follow him into his hut; but Hali-Bonar gave me a look that I understood not to do so, but to remain close to him. It was not till after a very long and fierce dispute that he obtained permission for me to pass, and it was evident my life was hanging by a hair.

As soon as we had passed through the utta, my faithful protector desired me to walk immediately before him; thinking, probably, that the blood-thirsty chief might come behind me and stab me in the back with his parang. He also recommended me to walk as fast as I possibly could; and we actually ran for five hours through jungle-grass and forest, until we came to an utta where the people were less hostile, and would have allowed us to pass the night; but Hali-Bonar evidently thought the distance was not yet sufficient, and we continued our toilsome march without interruption, by strange, circuitous, intricate paths. At a very late hour we reached an utta where he thought we might remain, but the name of it has escaped my memory. I could not venture to write down a word for fear of being taken for a spy.

*August 16th.* This morning I saw a girl rush screaming and crying out of one of the houses and fling herself on the ground, as if in a transport of sorrow. At the same time she took off, one after another, her ornaments from neck, arms, and ears, wrapped them all carefully up in a handkerchief, then sprang up, ran to the next house, and flung herself down with the same cries as be-

Digitized by Google

fore; then she got up again, and hurried back into the house whence she had first come.

I thought she must be insane, but my guide informed me that the young lady was only going to be married that evening, and would consequently have to bid farewell to her beads and brass rings. For these beloved trinkets she was weeping those bitter tears, though it was very unlikely she would shed one on leaving her parents' house.

We made very little progress this day, but went from one utta to another, or sometimes a great way round to avoid going into one, whose inhabitants Hali-Bonar had reason to think were ill-disposed toward us. I could never learn why we could not have gone back by the way by which we had come.

In the uttas where we spent a night we were hospitably received, and fed with rice and *ubi* (sweet potatoes), or perhaps a fowl, and in the morning had *tadi*, a sort of curdled milk already described. The fowls, ubi, and tadi, were given by the Rajahs, the rice by the community. In those villages, however, where they had no mind to receive us at all, they would hardly give us so much as a drop of water.

*August* 18*th*. All yesterday and the day before, being dragged from one utta to another, but receiving a more or less friendly reception, and at length we had left behind us the beautiful valley of Silindong, which had given me so much pleasure on the first view, but the passage through which had been accompanied by such terrible scenes. The danger, indeed, was by no means over yet; but at least it was much diminished.

In this my forced march through Silindong I counted more than fifty villages; and just as many, or even more, probably, lie farther up the valley. Many of them consisted of thirty or forty houses, and none had less than five or six. In the larger habitations I counted, in the four corners of the room, from twenty to twenty-five people, children included; but the houses are not all of the same size. At the very lowest calculation, however, we may take, as the average, 150 persons to each utta, and that will give for the entire valley of Silindong a population of 15,000, which is assuredly not too high an estimate. In no one of the

Digitized by Google

islands of this Archipelago, Java excepted, have I ever seen a country so thickly peopled, or so well cultivated. What a pity that so fine a district should be inhabited by ferocious cannibals! They are usually of large and powerful growth, especially the Rajahs, in the choice of whom personal strength and size is probably an important consideration. Their color is a light brown, or brownish-yellow. The men wear their hair in various ways, sometimes long and flowing, sometimes short, and occasionally sticking up all round like a brush. Both sexes are clothed in black sarangs, sometimes trimmed round with glass beads; but an ornamental affair of this kind costs from thirty-five to forty rupees. The weapons of the country—the lance and the parang—are scarcely ever laid aside by the men; they will hardly step outside their doors without them. Among the principal occupations of the Battakers may be counted chewing siri and smoking; their mouths, like those of ruminating animals, being scarcely ever at rest: and this is true of the women as well as the men—nay, even of children of five or six years old; and I really believe they only leave the mother's breast to take to cigars and the no-less-beloved siri. I used to see little brats of five with their straw bags, containing the ingredients of this delicate dainty, hanging over their shoulders.

With such habits as this it is not surprising to find these people dirty beyond description. Their sarangs are never either changed, or washed, or mended; but once put on, they are worn till they drop off, bit by bit, from their unclean bodies. They bathe, indeed, or rather pour water over their persons, as the Malays do, without either rubbing the dirt off their skins or drying themselves, so that they are not much the better for the operation. Neither their houses, their mats, nor their cooking utensils are ever cleaned at all: they put their hands into every thing they are cooking, and the children eat over the pots, and let bits fall into them out of their mouths; and sometimes a dog will come up and privately lick them out. All this, however, is nothing to what I have sometimes witnessed. I will mention one instance, to show that I do not calumniate the Battakers when I call them filthy, though my readers will wonder how I could write down such a thing.

Digitized by Google

I was sitting in a soppo, near a woman who was engaged in weaving, and had at the same time a child of ten months old tied on her back. The child began to cry, and the mother put it to the breast, but as it had been shortly before crammed quite full with rice, the mother's milk was too much for it. It became evident, in all sorts of ways, that the child's stomach was greatly overloaded: nature took measures of relief accordingly, and the state of the mother's lap I need not describe. But the lady was not in the least disturbed by these accidents; she sat still, without taking any notice, but presently called a dog, and induced him to afford his assistance, and also to lick the child's person a little, holding it to him in various positions for that purpose. She then tied it upon her back again, and went on with her work as if nothing had happened, and without making any further attempt at cleansing her sarang. And among these people I passed several weeks, and had to eat with them out of the same dish! Few will doubt that this was the heaviest price I ever paid for my love of traveling. Not all the toils, hardships, and dangers to which I was exposed were ever half so hard to bear. It taxed my powers of endurance to the utmost.

We passed the night about six miles from the valley of Silindong, at a village called *Kassan*.

*August* 19*th*. *Bolanahito*. Here I took leave of my true friend Hali-Bonar, to whose powerful protection I certainly more than once owed my life; and I had now again to traverse the forest and wilderness that form the natural frontier of the country of the wild Battakers, and the boundary line that separates it from the Dutch possessions. As a last friendly office, Hali-Bonar gave me four of his people to escort me as far as Donan.

*August* 20–21*st*. Accustomed as I was to the rain and the heat, and all the fatigues and hardships of this most wearisome march, I could not help feeling a kind of horror come over me when we arrived again at the borders of the forest, and I thought of the rugged paths, the tigers, the nights of sleepless terror that I had had to suffer from on my first passage through it. This time, however, it proved scarcely as bad as I had expected, and on the evening of the second day we arrived safely at Donan, where I

Digitized by Google

met with the most cordial reception. The people thronged round me, pressed my hands, and repeated with one accord that they never expected to see me come back.

During this journey I had often made inquiries concerning the camphor-tree, which I had been told grew in the north of Sumatra to a height of 120 feet, though the specimens I had seen never exceeded seventy. The camphor is found in a concrete state under the bark, and is swept down with long brooms; but this must be done with the greatest care, for if the broom goes too deep the tree is destroyed. Sometimes the people are improvident enough to cut the tree down in order to get more for the moment; but even by this method they can only get two pounds of camphor from a tree, and by the former never more than one. A picul of camphor is worth from 5,000 to 10,000 rupees, but all Sumatra does not yield more than two piculs a year. It is not used here as medicine, but is eagerly bought by the Chinese, and again from them by the people of Japan, who mix it with their own camphor, and use it in the preparation of their incomparable varnish. As medicine, the camphor of Sumatra is not superior to that of China or Japan itself.

Sago-palms I saw very frequently in the woods of Sumatra, but they are said to be less productive than those in the Moluccas, where their true home is.

I left my guide behind me at Donan without any regret, as he had become, if possible, more intolerable than the one I had in Sarawak. I wanted only a cooly to carry my small luggage, but they offered me a boy of ten years old, whom I declined, and refused to stir from the place till my guide had furnished me with a stronger assistant. Scarcely, however, had we proceeded a mile into the wood before the boy came running after us, and the grown bearer, setting down his package, disappeared with all speed, and I perceived that the arrangement had been preconcerted—indeed, the boy told me so. I mention this trifling circumstance to show how completely one is at the mercy of these people. When I got back I did not fail to complain to Mr. Hammers of the bad service this guide had rendered me; indeed, I have good reason to think that he was chiefly to blame for my

Digitized by Google

not being permitted to go on to the Eier-Tau, and that he had purposely thrown obstacles in the way, that he might be able to get home the sooner. My complaints, however, did not answer much purpose, for as long as I staid the culprit took care to keep out of the way; and when, long after I was gone, he made his appearance again, he declared he had been lying sick at Donan, of a malady brought on by the fatigues he had undergone in my service.

I walked this day to Sipirok, and there my pedestrian journey came to an end, after I had walked in the whole about 150 miles, which on good roads would have been no such great matter, but in such a country as I had gone through it was really a kind of Herculean labor.

*August* 23*d. Padang Sidimpuang.* At four o'clock in the afternoon I arrived here in safety, but almost starved, at the residence of Mr. Hammers. Since three o'clock the day before I had not tasted the smallest nourishment, and my first request was for a cup of coffee, which was given me, with some buffalo milk and a large slice of bread. I can not convey an idea of the delight I felt when I found myself once more in perfect safety, and seated at a cleanly table before good wholesome food, and afterward went to rest in an excellent bed. No one who has not undergone much fatigue, hardship, and privation can possibly estimate such blessings as they deserve.

I staid a few days at Mr. Hammers's, and also rested a day or two at various places on my way to Fort de Kock; but when I reached it, on the 9th of September, I was far from well, and immediately afterward was seized with a violent fever. Thanks, however, to the excellent care taken of me by the amiable wife of the Resident, to the medical assistance obtained for me, and my own almost indestructible constitution, I very soon recovered; but the fevers of Sumatra, nevertheless, are very malignant and obstinate, as indeed I had myself unfortunately cause to remember. They are of an intermittent kind, but will sometimes hang about you for years, and when they do not prove otherwise fatal, frequently terminate in consumption.

As soon as ever I was sufficiently restored, my thoughts began

Digitized by Google

to turn toward another excursion. Dr. Bauer, a German, distinguished for his medical and botanical attainments, happened to be stationed at Paya-Kombo, and I wished to become acquainted with him, and at the same time with a district of Sumatra which I understood to vary much in its character from those which I had seen.

On the 18th of August I was once more on horseback, and rode twenty-two miles to Paya-Kombo. The waving, hilly country was now giving place to wide plains and beautiful valleys, and in the distance rose a glorious mountain chain, from which stood out conspicuously the giant peaks of the *Merapi*, the *Singallang*, and the *Sago*—not so high, but very striking in its outline. The range is tolerably extensive, and varied by many rocky points and crags that form a beautiful contrast to the luxuriant woods that clothe the neighboring mountains.

Truly picturesque is the country about the Campan Titti. Isolated cliffs, and even whole masses of rocks, seem to have been flung about the plain, by what a mighty force may be imagined when we consider the distance of the mountain from which, in some great revolution, they must have been detached. Not far from the campan the *Pallang-Agam* rushes wildly, roaring and foaming down a narrow chasm in the rocks. A high stone bridge leads across it, and on the other side rises, like a throne, a stately group of rocks, all wreathed and draped with climbing plants.

I lingered long on the bridge, gazing at the wild beauty of the torrent, the tranquil landscape around me, and the mountain world that lay beyond.

The last few miles before reaching Paya-Kombo I passed through complete avenues of cocoa-palms, and saw numerous campans lying scattered around among the rice plantations. The whole district from Fort de Kock is richly cultivated, and full of animation; every object on which my eye fell was pleasant to look on, and the whole landscape was as if bathed in rosy light.

At Paya-Kombo I alighted at the house of Dr. Bauer, who fortunately had heard of me as I had of him, so that we were no strangers to each other, and the days that I passed in the com-

Digitized by Google

pany of this most highly cultivated man will never be effaced from my memory.

At Dr. Bauer's I also met another countryman of mine, Lieutenant Baron Von Bulow, who had come on a visit from Fort de Kapelle. We talked a great deal of the natural beauties of Sumatra; and, among other things, the conversation turned upon the Merapi mountain, its crater, and the splendid views from it. Baron Von Bulow had lately visited it, and gave us such a charming description of it that we immediately resolved to go together and make the ascent; and he rode back to Fort de Kapelle the same day, to beg the Assistant-Resident, Mr. Netscher, to let a rustic cottage that he has on the mountain be got ready for our reception.

I staid one more day at Dr. Bauer's, and then we set off and rode twenty miles to Fort de Kapelle, in the district of *Tanar-Data*. Mr. Netscher received us in the kindest way, and had the complaisance not only to order the cottage, situated half way up the mountain, to be prepared for us, but also to induce the Rajah of *Sangi-djamba* to have the paths leading up to it put into better order.

In the evening we took a walk into the campan *Pugger-ruijong*, where I saw several large stones, with inscriptions that no one has yet been able to decipher. They reminded me by their form of the Runic stones that I had seen in Norway and Iceland.

*August* 21*st*. From Fort de Kapelle we rode seven miles further, to the coffee plantations on the declivities of the Merapi, and on the way lingered for some time in the campan Sangi-djamba, which, like that of Kotto-Godong, is celebrated for its opulence. Here, as there, the houses are painted in gay oil colors, and decorated with wood carving; and among the inhabitants I noticed sarangs of rich heavy silk, head-kerchiefs embroidered with gold and many real jewels.

We partook of a slight refreshment at the house of the Rajah, and then went on to the coffee plantations, which, as well as the roads, seemed particularly well kept. From here the ascent had to be made on foot, and a beautiful path, improved in some measure for the occasion, led to the cottage which had been fitted up

Digitized by Google

for us, where every thing was made as convenient and complete as if we had been going to occupy it for months, instead of for a few days. More than seventy men had been at work, yesterday and to-day, at the cottage and the path, and they were still hard at it when we arrived. A small sleeping-room was, however, ready for each of us, and Baron Von Bulow had sent forward servants, a cook, and provisions, etc., so that refreshments were prepared for us as soon as we got there.

We did not intend to travel any further that day, but we did not therefore allow ourselves any rest, but set out on a ramble in search of flowers and insects, and favorable points from which to view the landscape around. The triple mountain chain, which intersects Sumatra from north to south, lay before us in all the wildly picturesque variety of its jagged peaks, and crags, and hollows, in the midst of which glittered, like a silver mirror, the smooth surface of the lake Sinkarra;* wide fertile valleys lay unfolded to our view, and far away the blue ocean met the cloudless sky.

For a long time we could not tear ourselves from the contemplation of this panorama, but remained absorbed in delighted admiration of the beautiful world of God.

It seemed almost like presumption to speak; the words in which we tried to express our thoughts died upon our lips. No sound met our ear, no breath of air stirred, and we lingered till the last beams of the sun faded—too soon for us—from one object after another, and gave way to the rapidly advancing twilight.

As soon as the night had closed in a signal fire was kindled on the mountain, to announce to Mr. Netscher our safe arrival there, and after a short interval an answering flame blazed up in the distance.

*August 22d.* To-day we only climbed 3000 or 4000 feet—an easy task, had the path been continued, but in two days' work this was not possible, and so we had to scramble over stones and up the towering mountain walls as well as we could. The first crater we came to must have belonged to a volcano long extinct, as

* This lake is fifteen miles long and five broad, and lies 1300 feet above the level of the sea.

Digitized by Google

its depths were hidden beneath a tranquil pool. Dr. Bauer discovered some flowers at the edge of the water, and wished to go down to fetch them, but the sides were excessively steep, and covered with loose rolling stones, and the guide declared that without ropes and a ladder a descent into the crater was out of the question.

Another crater lay at some distance, of considerable extent, but not very deep; and though its fires also had been long quenched, there was evidence enough in the masses of stones thrown up from it, and the distance to which they had been flung, of what the power of the volcano had formerly been. No flower, nor even a blade of grass, had yet ventured to take root in this burnt-out laboratory of nature.

At length, at a height of 8500 feet, we reached the great crater. I had seen many, especially in Iceland, but such a regular, perfect funnel as nature has here produced I never saw any where else. The present depth of this crater is about 400 feet —the diameter at the top, 300. Thick black columns of smoke were rising from two openings when we reached it, and an incessant hiss and roar gave warning of the activity of the fires beneath. Descending into this crater was not to be thought of, and we were obliged to content ourselves with contemplating the grand scene from the brink.

We did not return to our tabernacle till a late hour, and determined therefore to pass another night in it, announcing our presence on the mountain to our friends in Fort de Kapelle, as yesterday, by kindling a great fire.*

* Dr. Bauer was so good as to allow me to extract from his journal the following account of the vegetation of the Merapi:

"As you begin to ascend you find the cocoa-palm replaced by the *Areng* species, from which the *Suri* (brown sugar) is obtained. Fig-trees, which are very numerous at a lower level, begin to decrease in number, and the commencement of the actual mountain vegetation is marked by the full-leaved *Terastromiaceæ* (*Sauraga*); further up, the white nettle, *Urticu nivea*, Bl.; still further, splendid red and yellow balsams. The parasitical orchidaceæ are rarer than in Java. At the height of from 2500 to 4000 feet, many oaks and chestnuts appear, the fruit of which more or less resembles those of Europe. Laurels and *Rubiaceæ* are as numerous as in Java; but the beautiful Rosamala (*Liquidambar Altingiana*), which is native to that island,

Digitized by Google

On the 23d of August we betook ourselves in good time in the morning to Fort de Kapelle, and the following day I rode straight to Fort de Kock, without going near Paya-Kombo. On my way I witnessed a singular natural phenomenon, said to be peculiar to Sumatra. An impenetrably thick white vapor lay over a large tract of country, and covered it so completely that not the smallest trace of any object was visible through it. So calm and still and silver-white lay the mist, so sharply was its outline defined, that you might have sworn you had the sea before you. I knew that it was only a sea of vapor, and yet, until I rode into it, I could hardly persuade myself that it really was so. It remained quite motionless for many hours.

On the 30th of August I left Fort de Kock, in order to return to Padong, but altered my plan on the way, and made an excursion to *Priamam* and *Tiku*, on the lake, in hopes of increasing my still very insignificant collection of fish. Five miles from Priamam I came to a covered bridge 360 feet long, the longest in Sumatra, leading across the river *Mangin*.

At Priamam I alighted at the house of the Assistant-Resident, Mr. Godin, but rode the following day twenty-four miles further, to Tiku, in the hope of making a rich harvest. But unluckily, the incessant rain frustrated my hopes, and indeed spoiled my whole excursion, which, had the weather been fine, would certainly have afforded me great pleasure, for the country I traversed was very pretty, the roads good, and shaded by avenues of cocoa-nut trees, and the landscape was animated by many neat campans. The valley of Silindong excepted, I saw no part of Sumatra that was as thickly peopled as the shores of this lake.

The hideous custom of making great holes in the women's ears is carried here to great excess. I was always glad when the unsightly aperture was covered by a brass plate, or even a piece of

is here not to be found. The *Aroideæ*, *Acanthaceæ*, *Araliaceæ*, *Sapindaceæ*, *Scitamineæ*, *Meliaceæ*, *Terebinthaceæ*, and *Leguminosæ*, are very abundantly represented. At a height of about 6800 feet begins an Alpine Flora, strongly resembling that of Java. Especially striking is the elegant *Rhododendron retusum*, as well as many fine species of Gentiana *Thibaudia* or *Agapetis*, etc. *Graphalium*, and various new kinds of *Synantherea*, are found up to a great height."

Digitized by Google

wood, but unfortunately the ladies have to renounce these ornaments on their marriage.

Two days I waited in vain for better weather, and then set off on another rainy day to ride to Priamam; but I remained only two days, for it was now time for me to think of my return to Padang, if I did not mean to miss the steamer which goes once a month to Batavia. During my stay, however, Mr. Godin sacrificed his own comfort to my wishes so far as to accompany me, during a violent and continued rain, to a small island lying opposite Priamam. For several hours we were busily engaged among the rocks and coral reefs of the lake, seeking for fish, crustaceæ, etc., and we came home dripping wet, and shivering with cold, but richly laden. I felt rather unwell in the evening, but this did not hinder me from repeating the next day my visit to the island which had so greatly enriched my collection.*

On the 7th of October I arrived at Padang, but I had been attacked on the road by a violent fever, and accepted with gratitude the invitation of Mr. Van Genepp to stop at his house, where the kind and careful attendance which I received from this amiable family, and good medical advice, stayed the further progress of the disease; and when, eight days afterward, the steamer sailed for Batavia, I was sufficiently recovered to go on board.

I had traveled in Sumatra 700 miles on horseback, and 150 on foot, and in the course of these peregrinations I had invariably met with the most courteous and hospitable reception from the Dutch government authorities and officers. Whether I came with or without letters of introduction, they gave me every assistance, furnished me with horses and guides, and every thing else of which I stood in need; and the magnificent scenery I beheld, the adventures I went through, and the very obliging reception I met with from the Europeans, will always render recollection of this journey in the highest degree pleasurable.

* In my former stay in Batavia, I had had the pleasure of making the acquaintance of Dr. Blecher, certainly one of the first Ichthyologists of the day. His collection is extremely rich, though his observations have been principally confined to India. I was so fortunate as to be able to bring him some new specimens from Borneo, Sumatra, and the Moluccas; and he presented me with some very valuable contributions of fish from Java and other places.

Digitized by Google

## CHAPTER IX.

Java.—Samarang.—The Mud Springs of Grobogan.—Visit to the free Principalities of Djogokarta and Surakarta.—The Temple of Boro-Budoo.—The sacred Turtles.—An Audience of the Sultan of Solo.—Princely Funeral.—An Audience of the Susuhunan.—Return to Samarang.—Journey to Surabaya.

On my return to Batavia, not wishing to trespass too far on the kindness of Mr. Van Rees, the Resident, I took up my abode with the family of Colonel Steuerwald; but I had no intention of making a long stay, for, encouraged by the good reception I had met with in Java and Sumatra, and the readiness every where shown to afford me help, I desired now to travel into the interior of Java, as well as to visit the Moluccas, Celebes, etc.

There are in Batavia two steamboat companies, whose vessels visit all the islands and important points of the Dutch possessions, and to the directors of these, Messrs. Courtes de Vries and Freese, I went, in order to try and make some agreement, on moderate terms, for my passage; but, to my very agreeable surprise, these gentlemen immediately offered me the use of all their steamers, to go whither I would without any charge.

On the 26th of November I left Batavia by the *Queen of the Netherlands* (Captain Chevallier), bound for Samarang, on the west coast of Java, a distance of 210 miles. We had splendid weather, and made the passage in thirty-seven hours. We seldom lost sight of land, but saw it stretching like an immeasurable plain along the edge of the sea; but it was not till we came near Samarang that mountains became once more visible, and among them the *Ungarang*, 5000 feet high.

At Samarang I met with a most cordial reception from Dr. Schmitz. He and his wife were both Germans, and, although personally unknown, had written to me at Batavia to invite me to their house, in case I should find my way to Samarang. His wife I had heard mentioned in Batavia as a most distinguished singer.

Digitized by Google

Samarang lies in a very fertile plain, and is surrounded by magnificent avenues of tamarind-trees, which attain an unusual height and luxuriance. The Europeans here, as in Batavia, live mostly outside the town. The most remarkable building is the house of the Resident, the palace of the governor, when there was one, on the east coast of Java; it is surrounded by beautiful gardens. The house formerly occupied by the Resident, and now used for a hospital, is the next worthy of notice. I visited the hospital, as I always did in all the Dutch settlements, and found them, even in the smallest places, admirably arranged. I might repeat of all these fine institutions what I said of the first; and I believe that in this respect the Dutch are in advance of every other nation in the world.

In the Samarang hospital, the insane were especially well cared for; they were in spacious, lofty apartments, not more than five or six together, and when I came into that department I had really no notion that I was in the company of madmen. Formerly these unfortunate creatures were tied down during their paroxysms, but, under the management of Dr. Schmitz, this mode of treatment has been abandoned. He punishes them merely like naughty children, by limiting their table indulgences for a day or two, and always finds this method effectual.

The most remarkable things to be seen in the neighborhood of Samarang are the boiling mud-springs in the district of Grobogan. Their distance from here is sixty miles, but the Resident, Mr. Potter, gave me post-horses, and Madame Schmitz afforded me the pleasure of her company.

It would have been very easy to reach Grobogan the same day, but as there was, at the distance of thirty-six miles, a considerable tobacco factory, with the proprietor of which my companion was well acquainted, we went the first day only so far. The whole establishment was shown to us. Tobacco in Java is not a complete monopoly; people are not obliged, that is, to deliver it to the Government at a certain fixed price; but the land is hired from the Government for twenty years, and with the land the right to a certain number of laborers at fixed wages. Mr. Klein, the proprietor of these works, has on his lands eight great drying-houses,

Digitized by Google

750 feet long, 106 broad, and 42 high. The tobacco leaves are not plucked, but the plant is cut off at the stalk, and so hung up. When the leaves are quite dry, they are taken down, thrown into great heaps, and left till they begin to ferment from their own heat. The preparation of the cigars is extremely simple. The fine large leaves are smeared with a little rice paste, the smaller leaves rolled inside, the cigar cut to a certain measure at top and bottom, dried once more, and packed up.

On the 23d of November we went on to the districts of Damok and Grobogan, as far as the mud-springs. Both yesterday and to-day the way lay through a boundless plain, whose monotony became very tedious; but far in the interior we could distinguish the mountains *Unarang* and the *Merbabu*, and along the sea-coast the low promontories of *Sumbing* and *Suidoro*.

This district is renowned for its fertility, so much so as to be called the granary of Java, and yet in the year 1849 it was visited by a dreadful famine. The rice harvest had failed, and thousands of people died of starvation in consequence. Eye-witnesses have told me that the dreadful scenes that took place can hardly be imagined. In almost every hut lay the dying and the dead, and bodies already putrified, all together; for the living had not strength enough to perform for their friends the last service of burial. Every where you met starving children who had lost their parents, wandering about and crying for bread. Men and women fell down in the street and expired. The cocoa-palms were robbed of their crown leaves, that they might be boiled and eaten, and yet so great was the patience and faith of these poor people, that they would stand by the full sacks of rice that lay piled up near the merchants' doors without touching them, and sometimes even sink exhausted from hunger, with the exclamation, "God has commanded that we should suffer this fate." No single shop was plundered.

Several private persons sent accounts to the Government, and even to the Governor General (not Mr. Deimar Van Twist, who was not appointed till 1851); but the Government would receive intelligence only from its own officers, and required an official report from the then Resident of Samarang, a Mr. Beuskens. Will



Digitized by Google

it be believed that this man had the cruelty to declare that the reports were untrue, and to demand the names of those who had furnished them, in order to have them punished?*

When at last the Government discovered where the falsehood lay, it was, for thousands of its unfortunate subjects, too late.† Many were now so weak that they could no longer take food when it was offered them. The villages and the houses were full of corpses, and malignant pestilence broke out in consequence. In thirteen months, from September, 1849, to October, 1850, 120,000 people perished; about 20,000 emigrated.

And what punishments were awarded by the Government to the servants who had so shamefully neglected their duty and abused their trust? These! The Resident was pensioned with a handsome yearly salary; the Assistant-Resident received an appointment as *Resident* to another province.

In the district of Grobogan, where the distress was greatest, melancholy traces of it are to be seen to this day. Although inexhaustible nature has covered with her green mantle the fields of unburied corpses, she has not been able to restore the crowns of the palm-trees, or keep the abandoned huts from falling to decay. Jungle-grass and bushes are growing all over the once cultivated grounds, and serve as a rendezvous for droves of wild pigs. In a few years, indeed, all will be smiling as before: the fugitives are returning to their abodes; the soil, after its long rest, will bring forth in two-fold abundance; and the traveler will cross the fruitful plain with little idea of the scenes it once presented. I wonder whether they will have escaped the memory of Mr. Beuskens?

The boiling up of the mud-springs can be seen some miles off, and the appearance of it greatly resembles the surf on the seashore—the mud rising like a wave, and the white steam representing the foam on its crest. We drove to within half a mile of

* Could not a confidential agent have been immediately sent to ascertain the truth? But there were only human lives to save! Had any thing so important as the arrears of taxes been in question it would probably have been done.

† Of course I write this only from the statements furnished to me, but they were on the most indubitable authority.

Digitized by Google

the springs, and there found that the Assistant-Resident had provided sedan-chairs for us, in which we were carried to the spot; and boards were laid across, so that we could advance to the brink. The basin is about 100 feet in diameter, and the whole is filled with mud, but only a small part in the centre is boiling and rising in waves; the remainder is half hardened. This part is about fifteen feet in diameter, and the wave rises four feet, and after long-continued rains, even some feet higher. A fainter boiling up of the mud may be seen in various parts of the basin, and bubbles of air or gas are rising all over it. A second much smaller mud-basin, only six or seven feet in diameter, lies not far from the large one. You can get quite close to this; and the mud, which does not rise more than a foot, is merely lukewarm. We put in a very long bamboo cane, but it was immediately raised by the subterranean force, and flung over the brink. The large spring is much hotter than the small one, and the mud has a very salt taste; so much so, indeed, that the people in the neighborhood sometimes carry it home and manage to extract the salt from it. These springs are certainly well worthy of a visit; but they did not strike me as much as they might have done many others, since I had already seen much more wonderful things of the same kind in Iceland.

In the neighborhood of the mud-springs are springs, or, rather, wells of salt, to which you descend by a square opening, four feet wide and forty deep. In the dry season they have a temperature of 133° Fahrenheit, and in the wet, 120°. The openings are lined with boards to prevent the sides from falling in; the water is drawn out into great basins, where it remains till a small quantity of mud which it brings with it is precipitated; it is then allowed to run into very shallow gutters, raised about three feet from the ground, from which the watery particles evaporate in the sun, and the salt is left behind in small white crystals, which are scraped up with shells.

There are many salt-springs in the neighborhood, from which, in the course of a year, 10,000 piculs are obtained; but I could not learn how much per cent. the water yields.

We returned with the Assistant-Resident to Grobogan, and

Digitized by Google

gladly accepted his friendly invitation to pass the night at his house.

On the 24th of November we set about our preparations for a more considerable journey into the interior of the country. Mr. Resident Potter allowed me post-horses for the whole district over which his authority extended, and assured me that the other Residents would do the same. He advised me particularly to visit the magnificent heathen temple and the free principalities of *Djogokarta* and *Surakarta*, and Dr. Schmitz and his wife undertook to accompany me.

We left Samarang on the 26th of November, and traveled only forty-eight miles to Magelang, in the residency of *Kadu*, but for this forty-eight miles we required nine hours; for we had to cross mountains of 2000 feet high—indeed, one of 4550; and though we had six horses to our carriage, we were continually obliged to take buffaloes also. This slow progress was nevertheless very agreeable, for the prospects were exceedingly rich and varied. A wide extent of mountains, hills, and valleys lay around us, and the sea, with its boundless mirror, beyond. To the west, the prospect was bounded by the *Sumbing*, 10,770 feet high; to the east by the Merapi, above 8000. Northward lay the *Mirbabu*, the *Telo-mayor*, and *Tambu;* southward, the *Minore* range. Among the valleys the most beautiful was the *Ambarawa*, with its exquisite green carpet sprinkled over with groves of trees; but alas! this beauty is in part deceitful, for the greater part of the valley is covered by a treacherous swamp, said to be in some places of unfathomable depth. Some miles before we had passed a small fort called Unarang, which is considered so healthy on account of its high position, that many sick soldiers are sent there for recovery, and a hotel has been erected for the convenience of private persons. In the valley of Ambarawa lies "Fort William the First," the largest in Java, and built in a regular quadrangle.

At three o'clock in the afternoon we came to Magelang, a place situated at a height of 1200 feet above the sea. The Resident, Mr. Gaillard, was so good as to receive me, and Dr. Schmitz and his wife staid with some friends. The residence is one of the handsomest buildings in the country, and in one of the most charm-

Digitized by Google

ing situations, commanding a grand panorama of superb mountain scenery. The gardens belonging to it might rather be called a park, and are most tastefully laid out and adorned with many antiquities from the heathen temples, among which the sacred ox is, of course, not wanting.

Quite close to Magelang lies a solitary hill, which, the inhabitants say, marks the exact middle of the island, and which, on that account, they denominate the Navel of Java.

In Magelang I had the pleasure of becoming acquainted with my dear countryman, Mr. Wilsen, whose works I had seen and admired in Batavia. He had been commissioned by the Dutch government to make exact drawings of the Hindoo monuments, and especially the interior and exterior of the temple of Boro-Budoo; and this colossal task he had now just finished, and intended returning to Batavia in a few days.

The morning after our arrival, however, he was so kind as to accompany us to the above-mentioned temple, and serve as our guide and cicerone.

There is nothing very remarkable in the architecture of the temple. It consists of four stone walls, raised on a small hill, which they entirely cover; they form a quadrangle of 362 feet in diameter, and rise in five galleries, or terraces, one above another; and from these again by three more, to the top, where the building is crowned by something like a great bell, beneath which is seated an image of Buddha, purposely left unfinished, because the Holy One can not be completed by human hands. The first five terraces reach to a height of about ninety feet; but the entire temple, measured from the summit, to 120 feet. On the highest terrace stand twenty-four bells of stone filagree work; on the second, twenty-eight; on the third, thirty-two; and each has a sitting image of Buddha. In the entire temple are 505 great statues of Buddha, and 4000 bas-reliefs cut on the internal and external surfaces of the galleries. Not a single vacant spot is to be seen on the walls, which are entirely covered with human figures or arabesques.

For the drawing this enormous number of statues, reliefs, arabesques, etc., Mr. Wilsen only took four years. The entire tem-

Digitized by Google

ple, with all its details, he has drawn with a pen upon four hundred sheets of vellum, and these will be preserved for posterity when the temple itself shall have fallen entirely to ruins. On the bas-reliefs may be found the entire Hindoo history of the creation: the formation of the first man, the progressive sanctification of Buddha, etc. In many points the history strikingly resembles our own.

The sculptures here, both figures and bas-reliefs, appear to me much more accurate and tasteful in their execution than those I saw at the temples of Elora, Adjunta, and others in British India; but the arabesques, bells, etc., are finer there, as well as more colossal in size. The architecture of the building itself can certainly not be compared with that of the grander specimens in Hindostan. In the mode of building without mortar, and the formation of a kind of arch by the projection of one stone beyond another, they appear to be the same.

The temple of Boro-Budoo, and the other Hindoo temples in Java, are not supposed to be of earlier date than the eighth century of the Christian era. How must artists have abounded at that time, to have completed so many gigantic works! Although the Hindoo worship was expelled from Java by the Mohammedan in the fifteenth century, and the Javanese have all since then professedly followed the faith of Islam, thousands of them still come at certain times of the year to offer up their prayers in the Hindoo temples. The Buddhas in that of Boro-Budoo are especially in favor with the female sex, and brides come to them to prefer their private requests, and mothers to secure favor for their offspring; so that something of the ancient faith seems to have passed over into the newer one, and to have become amalgamated with it.

The temple of Boro-Budoo is unfortunately falling fast to decay, and a single shock of an earthquake might easily convert it into a heap of ruins. Many of the stones seem to hang so loosely in their places that one can not stand on them, or even go past them, without some feeling of anxiety. In some places it seems as if a puff of wind might bring them down. Only the enthusiasm of an artist could have enabled Mr. Wilsen to spend years in such

Digitized by Google

a place, forgetful of all danger. Very frequently, he said, stones fell out of their places near him without a touch, and lately, on the occurrence of a slight earthquake, a whole mass came down. He had also much to suffer from the intense heat, which between the walls was alleviated by no cool breeze.

About a mile from this temple stands the small but elegant one of *Mendut*. It is not more than twenty feet in diameter, and fifty in height, terminating in a cupola. The stones seem to retain themselves in their places by their own weight, as in the bells of Boro-Budoo. Connoisseurs admire this little temple particularly for the elegance of the arabesques and of the three sitting figures. In the roundness of their outline, the correct proportions of the limbs, and the noble character of the faces, these statues are said to excel every work of Hindoo sculpture hitherto known. The central figure represents Buddha, the two others kings.

At this gem of Indian art we took leave of Mr. Wilsen, and drove eighteen miles further to Djogokarta, the capital of the so-called *free* principality of the same name.

These two territories, Djogokarta and Surakarta, formed, about a hundred years ago, one powerful nation, under the name of Mataran, but at that time the succession was disputed by two brothers, who carried on a war with each other for fifteen years. In 1752 they came to an agreement, and divided the kingdom between them. Both were to be under the *protection* of the Dutch government, but were to enjoy much more freedom than they do now. But in 1825 the Prince of Djogokarta, partly from ambition, and partly because he had been offended by the arrogant behavior of the Dutch, revolted, and entangled both principalities in a war with them. It lasted five years, and cost the lives of 6000 men, and millions of money, and the result to the native princes was that the Dutch took a great part of their territory, and brought them entirely into subjection. They still bear, indeed, the title of independent princes, but they are favored with the assistance of a Dutch Resident, who keeps as tight a hand on them as the English Residents in India do on their *independent* sovereigns. They scarcely dare receive a visit or a letter, nay, hardly leave their own palaces, without his permission; but, as the price

Digitized by Google

of their freedom, they receive from the Dutch a large yearly pension. The Sultan of Djogokarta gets 480,000 rupees; the *Susuhunan* of Surakarta (a higher title than Sultan) 648,000.

In accordance with his obliging invitation, I stopped at Djogokarta at the house of the Resident, Mr. Hasselman, and a more splendid residence, excepting perhaps that of Samarang, I have never seen. Very likely it has been built in this grand style expressly to inspire respect for the Europeans, especially as the Sultan comes several times a year to pay the Resident a ceremonial visit, and on these occasions brings with him a suite of three or four hundred persons, one hundred of whom sit down to table.

Besides these state visits, the Sultan often pays private ones, both to the Resident and to other European houses, and even to the club, where he likes to take part in a game of cards or billiards, and indeed in any European amusement that may be going on. When he invites Europeans to his palace, not only is there often dancing, but his wife and daughters are not excluded from the entertainment. Probably this is the only place in the world where you may see the wife and daughters of a Mohammedan Sultan waltzing in the arms of European gentlemen and officers. The Sultana is said also to have no objection whatever to a game of whist.

*November 29th.* We passed the whole day in visits and sight-seeing. Madame Parvé, the mother-in-law of Mr. Hasselman, still a very lively and pleasing lady, undertook to show us the lions of Djogokarta. We began with a pleasure palace of the Sultan's, called, as all his palaces are, the *Craton*. It is surrounded by high walls, which inclose gardens, baths, and all possible offices: sometimes a whole campan is found within the inclosure. This mansion is also named *Tamansari*, or the Water Palace, because it can be laid under water as far as the first story. It was built by Portuguese architects in 1754, and is less distinguished for large handsome rooms than for its bold and solid arches and passages, that look as if they would last forever. They are, nevertheless, in many places showing signs of decay; for the palace is no longer inhabited, and the Malays, like other Orientals, never repair an uninhabited house. The only furniture I saw in

Digitized by Google

it was an old wooden bedstead, which we were warned not to touch, as those who did touch it were sure to die soon. Perhaps this may only be a polite way of protecting from the curiosity of Europeans what is regarded as a kind of sacred relic, as the first sultan who reigned over this kingdom slept in it.

From the Tamansari we went to the Gedé, the burial-place of the Sultan, as well as of the most distinguished persons of the kingdom. This place, like the Craton, is surrounded by high walls. The graves are covered by simple stone slabs, at the ends of which are perpendicular ones two or three feet high, and many of them have long wooden huts built over them, perhaps to protect the stones from the weather.

The graves of the Sultans are inside a large wooden house, and many of them have canopies and white curtains. In one of the neighboring courts a very remarkable animal is kept—a white turtle, which the natives regard as sacred. It is so tame, that it will come when it is called to receive a gift from your hand—at least, when it is hungry. Of course we tried our fortune, that we might see the turtle; and when we called, it appeared twice on the surface of the water, but did not touch the food, though it was held close to its mouth. The guides and some natives who accompanied us, and who had heard from Madame Parvé that I had been in Stambul and other places interesting to them, looked at me, and said I must be a very wonderful person for the turtle to come to me twice when it was not hungry; exactly, they said, as if it wanted to see me and be seen by me. I relate trifles of this kind because they are characteristic of the people.

The turtle was about two feet in length, and nearly white, its eyes red, and its shell looking rather like leather than horn. It had several young ones, also white, one of which, by the special intervention of Madame Parvé, I obtained, and immediately preserved in spirits.

It has been asserted that these animals are white only because the piece of water in which they are kept is protected from the sun. This question might easily be set at rest by putting in some dark-colored turtle; but I believe their descendants would be found of the same color as themselves.



Digitized by Google

A second princely burial-place, where the Susuhunans of Surakarta and their families repose, lies about three miles off. It is called *Imo-Giri*. The graves extend some hundred feet up a hill, and are placed higher up or lower down according to the degree of relationship to the sovereign of the occupants.

On our return home, we drove across the great square on which bazars are held, and which are celebrated over the whole country on account of the many beautiful articles in copper which are made in the neighborhood and brought here for sale.

In the afternoon we were received by the Sultan in his palace, where we passed through three courts, in which were some wretched-looking wooden huts, stables, and dilapidated-looking houses.

The palace of a Javanese prince or sultan consists, first, of a hall completely open, called a pendapo, from which a few steps lead, and which has a high arched roof. This is set apart for public occasions, and contains merely tables and chairs. Opposite the pendapo is the dalem, also a large hall, but very dark, as it is only open in front, and has but a few windows, and those very low and small. This is the drawing-room of the Sultan—the palace where he receives his guests; and it is almost overfurnished, for besides chairs and tables, it has sofas, looking-glasses, clocks, pictures, etc. Several doors at the back of this apartment lead to the *probojekso*, the private apartments of the sovereign and of his wives and family. It contains a saloon and several small chambers, all close and gloomy; and some bedsteads, mats, cushions, and pillows, constitute the entire stock of furniture. Every princely palace that I saw in Java was built of wood, and was not to be compared for wealth and splendor with the abodes of the native princes of India.

The Sultan advanced some steps out of the dalem to meet us, took the hand of each, led us into the hall, and assigned us seats near himself. He was of a middle size, with a handsome face, rather full in person, and about thirty-two years of age. He had on a garment that looked like a dressing-gown, over this a sarang, both of silk; and for jewels, a brooch and some diamond rings. I was much surprised to find in the dalem only female attendants,

Digitized by Google

dozens of whom were crouching about the floor half naked, for they had nothing on but a sarang, and that did not cover half the bosom. In the interior of their apartments, it is well known that the Mohammedan princes are only served by women or eunuchs, but to bring them into public reception-rooms I thought was an unheard-of thing.

After the Sultan had conversed with us a little while, he led us into the probojekso; for he is so liberal as to allow European gentlemen to enter this sanctuary. We were presented to his wife, a girl of nineteen, and the most beautiful creature that I ever saw among either the Malays or Javanese. Her mouth was rather small, her teeth dazzlingly white, and finely formed, her nose very pretty, her eyes large and brilliant, and only the somewhat broad and prominent cheek-bones could remind you of her Javanese birth. The Sultan, it seems, forbids his family to file or stain their teeth, or to chew siri.

Besides this young Sultana, we saw two daughters of the Sultan by a former marriage—handsome girls, between the ages of twelve and seventeen. The present Sultana has no children, and she did me the honor to have so high an opinion of me—(probably the story of the turtle had reached her ears)—that she several times requested me to pray for her, that she might be so fortunate as to become a mother. I promised it, and kept my promise, and I hope with some good result.

The ladies were all dressed in the costume of the country, with the sarang and jacket, and wore many hair ornaments, earrings, rings, and the like, which glittered with diamonds. The Sultana, I noticed, spoke with her husband without casting her eyes to the ground, or raising clasped hands, as if imploringly, to her forehead.

When we had had tea, the Sultan showed us his jewels and weapons, and the lady displayed her gold-embroidered robes. On his bed lay beautiful specimens of the Malay weapon called a *kriss*, a knife of a serpentine shape, from ten to fifteen inches long; and near the head of the bed stood a bust of the King of Holland. What profound regard must this Sultan feel for his royal brother!

The higher officers and attendants of this, as well as of other

Digitized by Google

Javanese princes, are distinguished by a peculiar head-dress, namely, a cap ten inches high, of plaited straw, silk, or cloth of gold, according to the rank of the wearer.

On the 30th of November we went to Solo, the capital of Surakarta, a distance of forty miles, and on our way passed near the "thousand temples," which lie near the village of Bambarang. They form a considerable group, but concerning the exact number there is much difference of opinion. Some make it 170, others 700, and, at any rate, there are certainly much less than 1000. They are small, a good deal in the style of that of Mendut, and the chief one is said to have been sixty-seven feet high, but it is now nearly in ruins. We climbed, nevertheless, to the upper zone, from which we could look into the interior, and we saw there a statue of Buddha, and several arabesques, in a vaulted hall. None of the other temples are more than twenty-four feet high, but each has its image of Buddha.

At Solo the Resident, Mr. Butschkens, could not receive me, as he was just then having his somewhat dilapidated mansion repaired; but I found an asylum in the house of Mr. Gorebé, a missionary and translator of the Bible, and a most amiable and benevolent man, who does credit to the choice of the Missionary Society. I was especially struck with his tolerant spirit, for it is, alas! not very common to find a clergyman estimating men more by their actions than by the creed that they profess.

The situation of Solo is not so picturesque as that of Djogokarta; the plain is too extensive, and the mountains too far off, the lofty Lawas excepted, the outlines of which are distinctly visible, and which rise to the height of 10,400 feet.

The land is extremely well cultivated in these principalities, perhaps because the princes let out the land, and the farmers must be industrious, in order to pay their high rents. Much indigo is raised in both, and the clothing and dwellings of the inhabitants are fully equal to what they are in any other part of Java. Many travelers maintain that the land is much better cultivated in the Dutch territory, but I always state what appears to me to be true, and endeavor to keep my judgment free from any prepossession. The roads and bridges are also very well kept in the principalities,

Digitized by Google

but this is attended to by the Dutch, as they have important forts in the two principal towns of these *free* states. A great difference is said to exist between the ordinary Malays and the people of the interior of Java, especially the inhabitants of these small principalities. They are, according to all accounts, of better character, and more capable of attachment, as well as much handsomer, or rather much less ugly. I had, however, accidentally an opportunity of seeing a good deal of the people, as a bazar was held during my stay at Djogokarta, and here in Solo two public festivals took place; and I must honestly confess that the good folks did not appear to me at all less frightful than their brethren in Batavia. People talk of their small hands and feet, but the beauty of hands and feet does not consist in smallness alone. Their hands are so meagre that every bone seems to start out of them, the points of the fingers turn up, the feet are very flat, and the toes stand wide apart, and they have a way of twisting and distorting fingers, hands, and arms that is quite unpleasant to look at.

This laxity of limb and muscle is also to be observed in the Europeans born and brought up in this country.

Among the high born, in the harems of the princes, and among their servants, there are certainly handsome people and pretty children to be seen, but these are exceptional instances, and it seems as if all the beauty to be found in the country was collected in the houses of the great.

Javanese parents usually regard it as an honor to have one of their daughters in the harem of a prince; but if they do not desire this, they have two ways to avoid it: either they must get her married at an extremely early age, or they must make a public dancer of her; in which position, singularly enough, she is protected from the advances of every man whom she does not herself favor. So far is this idea of the sacredness of a dancer carried, that if a woman wishes to be separated from her husband against his consent, she has only to become a public dancer, and he has no longer any right over her.

In no other country have I ever seen so many blind and lame people as in Surakarta; and there are also many lepers, for whom

Digitized by Google

a particular hospital has been erected. The last reigning Susuhunan, I was told, took a very expeditious method of freeing his dominions from this reproach. A European lady, who was traveling through them, and was presented to the Sovereign at Solo, on being asked how she liked the country, answered, "Extremely well, except for the numbers of blind, lame, and leprous persons I have noticed." Thereupon his Highness exclaimed that no one in future should make this complaint in his country; and having had a number of boats got ready, with a special contrivance for the purpose, he ordered them to be laden with these unfortunate creatures and taken to the middle of the river, where the water was let in, and the miserable passengers all drowned.

The present Sovereign has the reputation of being a remarkably just and noble-minded person, who, like Titus, regards a day as lost in which he has not performed any good action. Among his vassals, the Prince *Manghu-Negoro* is particularly distinguished, and called "the independent," because he enjoys such an amount of freedom as to be able to leave his palace without the permission of the Resident. He also maintains a force of 400 horse and 800 infantry—a greater number than the Sovereign himself. He is honorary aid-de-camp of the Governor General, and a colonel in the Dutch service, receiving, besides his pay, a certain contribution toward the maintenance of his military force, in return for which he is expected to have his troops always ready for service. All these distinctions have been granted him for his fidelity to the Dutch in the last war, when his well-disciplined soldiers were of great use. Good native troops are generally found far more serviceable than Europeans, as the climate agrees with them; they are content with little pay and poor food, and they bear the marches and fatigues much better.

Our first request to the Resident was to be presented to the Susuhunan and some of his principal subjects, and we received the promise of an audience for the following day. But it unfortunately happened that hardly an hour before the appointed time the only sister of the Prince, to whom he was much attached, died, and of course the interview could not take place. We witnessed, nevertheless, some solemnities of the court during the few days

Digitized by Google

we were at Solo. The first consisted in the presentation of a letter from the Sultan of Djogokarta to the Susuhunan of Surakarta. After the Resident had first made himself acquainted with the contents, the letter was wrapped in beautiful silk stuff, and laid upon a silver plate. It was then taken by the first aide-de-camp of the Susuhunan, and carried in a coach and six to the Sovereign, followed by the Resident in another carriage, and thirteen guns were fired the while in honor of the ceremony.

The second solemnity was the carrying the body of the deceased sister of the Prince to the place of burial, Imo-Giri. The color of mourning is here, as among the Chinese, white; and every thing belonging to the procession—carriages, horses, etc.—was hung with white cotton-stuff, and all the persons who accompanied it had a white head-dress, sarang, apron, or some white rag or other upon them.

The procession was opened by a number of bearers laden with planks, beams, poles, etc., intended for the erection of a canopy or roof over the coffin of the deceased at each station of the journey. After them came horse-soldiers,* with white scarfs and aprons; and these were followed by the state carriage of the Susuhunan, empty, the horse of the deceased lady, the canopy for her coffin, and lastly the coffin itself, covered with white drapery embroidered with gold. The coffin was borne to the outer gate of the Craton by the Princes themselves; then it was taken by the ministers; and after them by persons of less dignity, down to the servants. Many spearmen, the points of whose spears were wrapped round with white cambric, surrounded the coffin, and large parasols, from which fluttered white handkerchiefs, were held over it, as well as over the heads of the Princes. Behind the body came a large square chest, containing eatables, destined to be in the evening, according to custom, placed on the coffin of the deceased, and a great crowd of the people closed the procession. The husband of the deceased lady, her children, relations, and the Susuhunan himself, had gone

* The troops of the Independent Princes wear the Dutch uniform, except that the men wear no shoes, and have the customary headkerchief of the country under their helmets, and sometimes long hair twisted into a knot behind.

Digitized by Google

on before to the first station. The funeral would take three days, I was told, to reach Imo-Giri, which is about forty miles off.

I was very well pleased to see this ceremony, but I would rather have made acquaintance with the good and venerable Sovereign, of which I had now, I thought, no chance, since we were to take our departure the next morning; but to my great surprise, Mr. Gorebé came to announce to me that the Prince would receive us this very evening—a favor for which we were indebted solely to the good missionary, a highly esteemed friend of the Susuhunan, who had granted it on his special request. Before we set off, we went to pay two other visits to princes, and first to the above-mentioned Prince Manghu-Negoro, with the dignity and refinement of whose behavior I was much struck; it was equal to that of the most cultivated European. His countenance was intelligent and acute, though amiable; he made many inquiries about my travels that showed a considerable amount of knowledge, and he thought proper to compare me to "a light hovering cloud." Our second visit was made to the Prince Ngabchi, the illegitimate brother of the Susuhunan, who, as the sovereign has no son, is generally regarded as the Crown Prince. We did not, however, find his Highness at home, as he had not yet returned from the funeral.

We were to make our appearance at court at half past seven o'clock, and as etiquette is here much stricter than at Djogokarta, the gentlemen of our party held their watches in their hands, in order not to come a minute too soon or too late.

At the entrance of the innermost court we were received by two ladies of the royal household, who announced that the Susuhunan was ready to see us. In the dalem the sovereign rose and advanced two steps to meet us, presented us his hand, and invited us to be seated. Both the dalem and the pendapo were illuminated; and European military music, tolerably well executed by natives, resounded through the apartments on our entrance, and was several times renewed during our stay. A few paces behind the Prince there sat, stiff and motionless as statues, and clothed only in the sarang, three ladies of the court, holding a sword, shield, and sceptre, the insignia of sovereignty. Numbers of other

Digitized by Google

women were crouching about, and among them were two nephews of the Susuhunan—lads of fourteen or fifteen, whom I took at first for two very pretty girls. There was little in their costume to correct my mistake, as they wore the simple sarang, like the ladies, and had their hair long, and fastened up in a knot at the back of the head.

Scarcely had we taken our places, before a woman, probably also one of the court ladies, came shuffling along upon her knees, and repeated a long speech that I took for a prayer, but which I afterward found to be an account of the funeral procession. It was mentioned herein that *the Princess* had proceeded to such and such a place, had reposed so long under the shade of a canopy, and had then continued her journey to a certain other place, where she proposed to pass the night, etc.

It is, it seems, the fashion to speak of the bodies of persons of high rank, as long as they remain unburied, as if they were still living, and, moreover, to show the same attention in supplying all their personal wants. Every one who approached the Susuhunan came upon his knees, and continued in that attitude as long as they were in his sight; at least I looked after them as long as I could see them myself, and they never rose.

The face of the Prince quite corresponded with the account I had heard of him, and I have not often seen a more venerable and engaging physiognomy. The only thing that surprised me was, that he showed no signs of grief for the severe loss he had just met with, but listened to the report concerning the funeral with as perfectly unmoved tranquillity as if it had been concerning a matter of complete indifference. After he had conversed with us for a short time, he proposed to Madame Schmitz and myself to come and pay a visit to his wife. We found her a young woman of not more than twenty-five, sitting in a rather dimly-lighted room on a chair, while her step-daughter, a girl of eighteen, sat by her on the ground. Neither of them was as handsome as the royal lady of Djogokarta, though certainly very good looking for Java women. Their apartments appeared to be small and scantily furnished.

In about half an hour we returned to the dalem and prepared

Digitized by Google

to take leave, whereupon the Susuhunan made us a long speech, during which he took my hand, and at the end of it drew a ring from his finger and put it on mine. Unfortunately, I was little the wiser for the speech, for the monarch spoke in the Bugis language, which I did not understand, and Mr. Gorebé happened to be sitting too far off to be able to interpret for me. The visit altogether lasted two hours. The Prince wore two orders set in brilliants, but otherwise his costume and that of his family was extremely simple.

On the 3d of December we drove back to Samarang by a short way across the Salatiga (sixty-six miles), and I passed the night in the house of the kind friends who had accompanied me. On the following day, at one o'clock, I found myself once more on board the steamer on my way to Surabaya, a passage of 180 miles. On my coming on board, I was saluted by the captain with great cordiality as an old acquaintance. It appeared I had gone with him from Batavia to Sumatra, but he had lately exchanged the command of the *Macassar* for that of the *Amboyna*. In traveling, it is always pleasant to meet with acquaintances when you expect strangers, and all the more when they are such amiable and obliging persons as Mr. Bergnan.

There is not much to be said of the passage. We kept pretty close to the coast of Java, which appeared alternately level and mountainous, and we noticed four hills, called, from their singular outline, the Coffins, standing apart from one another in the midst of a plain. Twelve miles from Surabaya appeared the little town of Grisée, lying near a pleasant range of hills opposite which the non-European ships usually come to anchor.

We came to anchor in the roads of Surabaya on the morning of the 6th of December. All the other anchoring-places that I had seen in Java lie three or four miles off the town, and you have to be rowed up the stream in boats; but at Surabaya you can drive in a carriage from the mouth of the river to the town.

Mr. Resident Van Perez received me most courteously, and had even sent a carriage to meet me as far as Grisée, understanding that I was going to anchor there.

The residence, a magnificent building (though unfortunately

Digitized by Google

with a very small garden), lies three miles from the town, and has a fine meadow before it, at the end of which is a statue of some heathen god that is greatly revered by the natives.

I remained in Surabaya for eight days, but without seeing any thing, for the rainy season had set in and frustrated all my projects. I had therefore no choice for the present but to continue my travels to Celebes and the Moluccas, and console myself with the hope of putting my plans in execution at some future day.

---

## CHAPTER X.

Macassar.—Banda.—Earthquake.—Nutmeg Plantations.—Amboyna.—Excursion to the Negeri-Emma.—Saparua.—Ceram.—Traveling on foot through the Interior of Ceram.—Arrival at Wahai.—The Alfores.—Return to Amboyna.—Ternate.—Visit to the Sultan.

On the 14th of December I took my departure by the steamer *Banda* for Macassar, the chief settlement of the Dutch on Celebes, a voyage of 440 miles. There was little worthy of note till we came in sight of the coast of Celebes. The vessel was very small, the sea stormy, and though I had been a traveler for many years, and had sailed and steamed thousands of miles without having to pay tribute, I suffered as much this time from sea-sickness as if I had been a mere novice. On the morning of the third day I came upon deck to greet the shores of Celebes, a monotonous plain, bounded in the background by mountains.

Macassar (Udjang-Pandang), the seat of the Dutch government in Celebes, is a small, almost European-looking town with a fort. The Government-house is small and insignificant, and the Europeans live in poor-looking little stone houses, lying close together, along the side of a beautiful piece of meadow-land called *Hendrik's-pad*. The Protestant clergyman, Domine Mathes, hospitably took me in; but here, also, I was unlucky enough to hit on the rainy season, and could go no further than to visit the bazar, where I saw a great number of the people assembled. The natives of Celebes, though belonging, like the people of Java, to the Malay race,

Digitized by Google

are less ugly; their features are better, their skins of a lighter color, and their figures tall and well formed.

Since no excursion into the interior could be thought of on account of the rain, and I heard that the steamer *Amboyna* was going in a few days to Banda, one of the Moluccas, I resolved to take the opportunity of paying it a visit, hoping on my return to be able to see more of Celebes.

On the 21st I found myself again on board with my good friend Captain Bergnan, and in three days and a half we reached the island of Banda, without having seen any thing more on the way than some small mountainous islands. The Goonong-Api, the highest mountain of Banda (1800 feet), soon came in sight, columns of smoke rising, as they constantly do, from its northwestern side. At one o'clock in the morning we entered the bay in a superb moonlight; on one side lay the volcano, on the other a pleasant range of hills, covered with nutmeg-trees. The small town of Banda lies in a somewhat perilous position on the declivity of the volcano, an eruption from which would infallibly destroy it; but, strangely enough, though it smokes constantly, no eruption ever takes place. One can hardly suppose, however, that much reliance is to be placed on its peaceable intentions.

We had got in so late that the captain went on shore with the mail-bag alone, and we passengers lingered on the deck, talking and thinking much of friends far away, and of the home joys and recreations that were then going on in our respective domestic circles (for it was Christmas eve), of the games, the presents, the joyful surprises of the little ones, when all on a sudden, quite unexpectedly, an Arab made his appearance on board.

Rather astonished at this late visit, we all gathered round him to learn the motive of his coming. Ah! our pleasant talk was soon changed into expressions of sorrow and alarm, for he informed us that a tremendous earthquake had taken place on the island, on the 26th of November, by which many houses had been entirely destroyed, and all so much injured as to have become uninhabitable. Fortunately, it had happened at eight o'clock in the morning, when the inhabitants could fly instantly from the scene of danger, so that no human lives had been lost; but all kinds of

Digitized by Google

fragile goods—crockery, glass, lamps, cooking utensils, wines, and bottled liquors of all kinds, had been totally destroyed. While people were still under the impression of this unpleasant occurrence, a second earthquake took place at half past eight the next morning. The water in the bay was suddenly driven back, and then forward again, with irresistible violence, toward the shore, rising, at the same time, four-and-twenty feet. Twice the bottom of the sea was laid bare, while all the boats and small vessels were hurled upon the coast, and eighty persons were drowned. A large ship that lay at anchor was driven on shore, and only saved from instant destruction by the great presence of mind of the captain; but he could not save her from considerable damage, and she was still in the bay undergoing repair. This second shock had not only thrown down many more buildings, but destroyed thousands of the nutmeg-trees, from the dashing of the salt water over them.

When the captain returned on board he confirmed every word of this melancholy narrative, and the story made such an impression on some of the passengers, that they could not sleep all night for fear of another earth—or rather *sea-quake*.*

In the morning we went ashore, and I can bear personal testimony to the desolation. Several houses lay still in ruins; all were more or less injured, and the furniture either broken to pieces or lying in heaps in the open air, the owners living opposite to it in little bamboo huts that had been hastily run up for the occasion. The barracks and dwellings of the officers, situated about a hundred yards from the town, were almost the only habitations that remained uninjured. These are built of wood, while, strangely enough, in a place so liable to earthquakes, it is customary to build houses of stone.

The Resident, from the damaged state of his house, could not receive me; but Dr. Krause, the military surgeon, a German, was kind enough to afford me shelter in his wooden cottage.

I took a walk the same day toward the volcano Goonong-Api,

* Stories seldom lose by repetition. On my return to Java, I read in the papers an account of this earthquake, wherein it was stated that one half of the Molucca islands had been destroyed.

Digitized by Google

and wished to ascend it, but Dr. Krause, who had been up it several times on botanizing expeditions, strongly advised me against making the attempt, and said it was really not worth the trouble. The mountain terminated, he said, in a closed cone, and had several clefts in its sides, from which strongly-sulphureous vapors proceeded.

On the following day I visited the great nutmeg plantations of Mr. Meyer, which contain 15,000 trees. The native name for the nutmeg is *perkin*, and the proprietor of them is called a *perkenir*.* A plantation of this kind is a perfect wood; the trees, which are not planted in rows, are of considerable girth, and from forty to fifty feet high.

A tree called the nanarin-tree, belonging to the canary family, which does not strike deep root, is planted to protect the nutmegs from the violence of the wind; and it produces itself a rich nut, from which is extracted a large quantity of oil, much superior to cocoa-nut oil, and which can be made use of in cookery.

The island of Banda is the actual native home of the nutmeg, which here requires no care, and grows much taller and stronger than at Singapore.

The tree does not begin to bear fruit till it is from ten to fifteen years old, but it lives full eighty years. In the year before its death it is said to bear an extraordinarily large crop. On an average every tree produces about 2500 nuts a year, but there are some that yield as many as 4000. The harvest lasts the whole year round. People go in the morning into the plantations and pluck the ripe nuts, loosen the mace which completely envelops it, and leave both nuts and mace to dry in the sun. The nuts that fall off of themselves are not worth half as much as those that are plucked. About a hundred nutmegs with the mace go to a pound, and five pounds of nuts yield one pound of mace. The nutmegs are a monopoly at Banda and the small adjacent islands. The land is given for nothing, but the perkenir receives from the Dutch government for one pound of mace and four pounds of nuts only *one copper guilder*. He may farm out his plantations, but he must not cut down a single tree without the

* This appellation is sometimes corrupted into *park-keeper*.

Digitized by Google

permission of the Government inspector, who visits his plantations every year, points out the trees that are to be rooted out, and determines the number of new ones to be planted. In order to induce people to attend to this occupation in spite of these disadvantages, the Government, besides giving the land, supplies the planters with convict labor, from criminals brought here from Java and other places, and who are let out by the month at a low rate.

The steamer was to leave Banda again on the 27th, as there was little to do here; and since, if I declined going by her, I might have months to wait for another vessel, I had to make up my mind to do so. We left in the afternoon to go 144 miles to another little island—Amboyna; and, as the weather was very favorable, arrived there the next day.

The bay of Amboyna is sixteen miles long and about six broad at the opening, though at Amboyna, which lies half way up it, not more than one. It is encircled by low hills and mountains, the highest points of which—the *Lytham* and *Sirigmoko*—are estimated at 3000 or 4000 feet. The hills are richly clothed with vegetation, woods alternate with meadows and spice plantations, from which the beautiful feathery sago-palm, the slender areka, and the cocoa-nut palm rose far above the wide-spreading foliage of other trees.

I have heard it asserted that the entrance to Banda, and still more that to Amboyna, may vie with that to Rio de Janeiro; but though the bay of Banda is very pretty, and that of Amboyna perhaps still prettier, I do not think either can be compared with that of the Brazilian river. If there is to be a comparison, it should be rather with that of Santos, 400 miles from Rio de Janeiro. Amboyna, which is the seat of the Government of the Moluccas, counts about 1500 inhabitants, and looks like a mere village, though it is protected by a fort, called Fort Victoria. The Governor's house is about a mile from the town, and is an insignificant little abode, built of bamboo. From the very limited accommodation at his disposal, there being in his house but one spare room, which was already occupied, I had to be lodged with Mr. Roshof, the director of the institution for training teachers for

Digitized by Google

the people's schools. In the year 1835, the Dutch government sent Mr. Roshof to establish this institution, intended for the reception of twelve native young men, who were to receive board, lodging, and instruction. The sum assigned for the purpose was placed in the hands of Mr. Roshof, without the Government requiring any account to be given of it; and at the end of the first year, he declared that the money given him was sufficient for eighteen young men, instead of twelve, and desired that six more might be sent to him. Besides these regular pupils, Mr. Roshof allows from ten to fifteen pupils to take part in the instruction, and from them he selects those of the best capacity to be received entirely into the house. The pupils are instructed in religion, in the accurate knowledge and writing of their native Malay language, in geography, arithmetic, and psalmody.

The natives of Amboyna and the neighboring little islands are Christians, and at present Protestants, though formerly, under the Portuguese, they were Catholics. In every village of tolerable size a schoolmaster is appointed, who at the same time performs the office of clergyman, and leads the public worship, prayers, singing, etc. Some of the villages are large enough for the schoolmaster to have as many as 250 children under his care. In my excursions in Amboyna, Saparua, and Ceram, I visited several of the schools, whose masters had been pupils of Mr. Roshof, and I found that the children wrote nicely, appeared to have an accurate knowledge of arithmetic, and sang the Psalms very well. I could not help wishing that all our village children in Europe were as well taught as these Malay boys. The labors of Mr. Roshof have not been in vain, but have hitherto at least borne good fruit.

As Banda is the native country of the nutmeg, so is Amboyna that of the clove; and the plantation of it is a great object with the Government, which holds a monopoly of it; and every head of a family is obliged to plant and maintain from thirty to eighty trees, according to the nature of the ground. In former days, the nutmeg was kept exclusively to Banda, and the clove to Amboyna and Saparua, and these trees were rooted out from the other islands. Now, however, they may be planted upon any of them, and are only a Government monopoly upon these two.

Digitized by Google

The clove-tree lives 100 years, and begins to bear at twelve or fifteen; the harvest-time is from November to January; the produce unequal—a tree yielding variously from one to twenty pounds. The cloves are dried in the shade. The planter receives now thirty doits a pound, though formerly he had to content himself with twenty-four, and even for this little increase in price he is indebted to the present Governor General, Mr. Deimar Van Twist.

The natives of the island know how to manufacture baskets, vases, ships, and a number of pretty toys, with cloves; but they have to buy their material from the Government at an immoderately high price, namely, two rupees a pound, though even in Holland cloves can be bought for a fourth of that sum; and besides this, there is a high export duty on their little manufactures.

The nutmeg-tree is now planted pretty often at Amboyna, and does very well; and the cacao-tree, whose fruit sells for sixty rupees (£6) the picul, flourishes extremely. The most important tree to the natives, however, not only at Amboyna, but in all the Moluccas, is the sago-palm, which affords the inhabitants their chief nourishment; it is to them what rice is to the Indians and Chinese, and corn to the nations of Europe. The sago-palm comes to perfection at about fifteen years old; it is then cut down and split, and the farinaceous pith or pulp taken out with a simple instrument of bamboo. Almost the entire stem consists of pulp, there being only a covering of about an inch thick round it. This pulp is then put into a kind of trough, made of the hollowed bark of the tree itself, and, by washing and kneading, the farinaceous part is made to separate from the fibrous. The water is then strained off, but, that nothing may be lost, into a second trough, where any remaining farinaceous particles may deposit themselves; and when the water is poured off from that, the work is ended. The flour or pith is then packed, quite wet, into baskets holding five-and-twenty or thirty pounds each, which are immediately rolled in the green leaves of the tree itself. One peculiarity of the sago in this state is, that it must never be allowed to get dry, and, in order to prevent this, the baskets are put from time to time into water.



Digitized by Google

From this flour a kind of bread is prepared. For this purpose the natives make use of an iron or earthen vessel, which they allow to get quite hot; a little water is then poured in, it is filled with the sago flour, covered with leaves, kept in their places with a little piece of board with a stone on it, and this is left on the fire till a steam begins to rise, when the mess is considered done.

The preparation of another kind of food, called *papeta*, is still more simple. Some cold water is poured on the flour, and it is stirred to a thick dough; a sufficient quantity of hot water is afterward poured on it to reduce it to a fluid state. It is then left to get cold, and is fit for use; that is to say, transformed into thick paste. Neither of these dishes, when eaten as usual, without any kind of condiment, can be considered as a very agreeable and piquant kind of diet; but it will be evident that if people can live upon such food as this, they can maintain themselves without much labor. Families that possess no sago-trees of their own can procure several hundred pounds of it with very little labor. It is common in such a case for the poor man to go to the owner of a fine tree, and offer to cut it down and get the sago, for half the produce; the offer is seldom refused, and the workman also receives his food during the three or four days which he is engaged on the work.

As the sago-palm and the Pisang (Banana) grow without any culture, and the sea abounds in fish, it will not appear surprising that the people of the Moluccas are idler than in most other places. When you arrive in the steamer, you find the landing-place covered with lazy, loitering fellows, no one of whom, even for good payment, will trouble himself to carry your luggage to the town: you must first go to the house where you intend to stop, and there look about for porters. I went one afternoon into a dozen huts one after another, wishing to buy some of the little toys made out of cloves; but in every one of these habitations I found the people either asleep or playing at cards.

On New Year's Day, 1853, we set off on our excursion to the neighboring waterfall, *Batoo-Gantung*, which is hardly worth going to see, any more than the grotto by the side of it; but we had a

Digitized by Google

walk through some fine woods, and a cold bath in the river; so that we were paid for our trouble.

In order to make myself well acquainted with the island, I walked through it from north to south; proceeding first to the village of *Emma*, eight miles off. It is customary here to make use of a kind of sedan-chair, as the roads are tolerable, for either riding or driving, for a few miles round the town. I at first declined this method, for nothing is more intolerable to me than making use of human creatures as animals of burden; but I was assured that the mountains were too steep for any European to cross on foot. I therefore compromised the matter by agreeing to take a sedan with me as a precautionary measure, and determining in my own mind to walk mostly by the side of it. The mountains certainly are steep enough; one ought to be little liable to giddiness to attempt to climb them; but I had had worse difficulties than that in Borneo and Sumatra, and in three hours I was in the village of Emma.

The whole country between here and Amboyna consists of deep narrow valleys and funnel-shaped hollows, which you have to be constantly climbing up and down; and there are also narrow rocky ledges to scramble along. All was covered with fine woods or luxuriant shrubs; plantations and gardens full of clove-trees, and in the woods were abundance of sago-palms; while from the heights we beheld the sea on both sides of the island. The mountains consist mostly of a kind of sandstone, which is very easily worked and brought down.

The villages, or *Negeris*, as they are called here, lie on the sides of the ravines, or on the tops of the mountains; so that the people who inhabit them can scarcely take two steps on level ground. Their smallest children would put to shame the best grown-up climber from the plain country; they really jump and leap about like Chamois goats.

I remained two days at Emma looking for insects. The heat was very oppressive, but I bore it as well as if I had passed my whole life under the equator.

My next excursion was a longer one, namely, to Saparua and the island of Ceram, one of the largest of the Moluccas, and which

Digitized by Google

I particularly desired to visit, on account of its native inhabitants, the wild Alforas.

On the 11th of January I went by sea in the night to a small village called Passeo, lying eastward from the town of Amboyna, on the isthmus, scarcely a hundred yards wide, which divides the island into two parts. I arrived at two o'clock in the morning, and at flood tide the proas were dragged over the isthmus, and the voyage continued in good time in the morning as far as *Thamahao*, a distance of thirty-five miles. From there I walked seven miles to Saparooa, where there is a small fort, which is the seat of an Assistant-Resident.

A lovelier walk than this from Thamahao to Saparooa can hardly be imagined. The entire little island is like a pleasant garden; the path is excellent, and leads through groves of fruit trees and large villages, in which the houses stand in regular rows, but separated from each other by grassy lawns and trees, and inclosed by living hedges; and from time to time you get from some high ground an indescribably beautiful view over Amboyna, Harauka, Ceram, and many other beautiful islands; and see the ocean, now land-locked as a bay or lake—now as a broad channel, and then again spreading out its boundless surface as far as the eye can reach. The view sometimes reminded me of the Cyclades in Greece, except that the plantations and exuberance of vegetation make this incomparably the more beautiful.

At Saparooa I met the governor, Mr. Vischer, who had come in a ship of war from Amboyna, on account of an insurrection of the natives being apprehended. In these distant colonies they are often exposed to much hardship and oppression from the arbitrary rule of selfish officials, and really driven into revolt: this appeared to be the case here, and the governor had determined to investigate the matter personally.

I have already mentioned, in speaking of the famine in the district of Samarang, that even when official persons are known to have neglected their duty, and abused their authority, they need have but small fear of punishment. In disputes between them and the natives, it somehow always happens that the man in office is in the right; and for the smallest irregularity the people are

Digitized by Google

reprimanded and punished as if for a serious offense. I recollect myself once seeing a native bound to a stake and about to receive fifty lashes on his naked back; and when I inquired what crime he had committed, I received a very evasive answer; from which I thought I might reasonably infer that it was not quite commensurate with the punishment.

I have heard, on the best authority, that a hundred lashes are often given, though by law the highest number to be inflicted is thirty-nine. The poor people often tremble so, when they are called before any government officer, that they can hardly speak; and I have noticed the same thing in British India. Should not persons appointed to authority in these remote outposts, where their doings or their neglect can not well be watched over, be subject to much greater penalty when found to have violated their duty, than the natives on whom the laws of Europe have been forced at the sword's point? But so it is all the world over; the poor and ignorant, who break laws of which they know almost nothing, are called to a strict account for the smallest offense, while a *gentleman* guilty of a crime is treated with all possible consideration and mildness, though his education and position really aggravate his fault.

One very disagreeable thing for travelers among these Dutch settlements (though it certainly reminded me of my dear native country of Austria) is, that you have to be everlastingly showing your passport.

At Batavia I had mine made out for the Moluccas; in Samarang, however, the operation had to be repeated, and again at Amboyna; and so on at almost every place where any official person resided. In some places this passport torment is carried so far that a poor fisherman can not go out to fish without one. Of course the system is a mere pretense for extortion.

At Amboyna I had requested the governor to authorize my journey to Wahay, on the northeast coast of Ceram, as I wished to visit the interior of this island, which is inhabited by the wild Alforas, more enthusiastic collectors of human heads, I understood, than even the Dyaks. Hitherto only two Europeans had ever ventured among them, and one of these had taken 150 men

Digitized by Google

with him for his protection. It is necessary to obtain some assistance of this kind from the Dutch government, as among the Alforas themselves one tribe is afraid of another, and the people will not accompany you. I would have contented myself with four companions, but the governor assured me I must have at least twenty, since, unless the party were as strong as that, no one would go. He added that when it was necessary to send a message to Wahay by land, twenty men are always dispatched. The usual communication is by sea.

Furnished with letters to the government officers residing at Ceram, who do not hold much higher rank than a village bailiff, and carrying with me abundance of cordial good wishes, I commenced my journey on foot, on the afternoon of the 17th of January, but went then only seven miles, to a village called Noloth; and the next day I crossed the sea in a proa to Mahariki, on the island of Ceram (thirty-two miles), where I arrived so late that I had to pass the night in my proa.

I could not go on the next day, as the twenty men who were to form my escort had to be collected, and when they were got together they wanted the rest of the day to get ready some provisions. We took nothing with us, however, but sago-bread, pisang, and some little dried fish.

On the morning of the 20th of January I began the difficult and dangerous part of my journey, with an escort consisting partly of Malays and partly of Alforas. The people in Mahariki gave me a terrific account of the road, and said I should have to be continually walking over loose rolling stones, wading through water, or climbing steep mountains, and they prophesied that I should pretty soon turn back.

We had scarcely been traveling an hour before we came to an obstacle that, for me, at least, was of the most formidable kind, namely, a broad, deep, and rather rapid river, to be swum over. I got across, however, as I had done at Sumatra, with the help of two natives, who gave me each a hand and pulled me over after them.

During this first day's journey we did not quit the plain, but our progress was not therefore less toilsome. The path led us con-

Digitized by Google

stantly along the nearly dry bed of a usually broad stream, that now, in the dry season, had shrunk to a narrow and shallow one; and we had to walk among loose stones, and to wade through the river in its windings a countless number of times. Sometimes for a considerable tract we had not to cross, but to walk along its channel. Full one third of the day's journey of eighteen miles lay through water, and yet I suffered greatly from the heat, for we had to keep the middle of the way, and the woods through which the river ran did not extend their cool shade quite so far. Being always in woods and ravines too, we got no prospects.

In the afternoon, at four o'clock, we made a halt.* Our bivouac for the night was to be in a dry place in the bed of the river, and the Alforas soon put up three leafy bowers, in which we distributed our party, and made good blazing fires; though, alas! we had nothing to cook at them. The dark forest around, the outline of which looked still blacker when the moon rose, was certainly rather awful; but there are no dangerous wild beasts on this island, and I had no fear of an attack of the Alforas, but laid myself quietly down on my stone couch, and was soon lulled by the murmur of the stream into delightful dreams.

*January* 21*st* (19 miles). This day we had to cross the first mountain range, *Nothlong-Batai*, but the passage was not longer than nine hundred feet, and though we had to make our way through woods, the path was not a very bad one. The underwood was light, and easy to break through, and the mountains were not so steep and rugged as those of Amboyna. I could not help admiring the skill with which the natives made their way through the labyrinth of trees with as much confidence and security as if we had been walking on a high road. From a rising ground I saw here and there little groups of native huts, consisting of nothing more than a roof of leaves, with a kind of bedstead about a foot high beneath them. Their former occupants had probably eaten up all the sago to be found in the neighborhood, and betaken themselves to a new residence in a more productive region.

* In regions near the equator you are obliged to halt early, as the sun sets at six, and no twilight intervenes between daylight and darkness.

Digitized by Google

After we had crossed the mountains, our way again led through narrow ravines, and the stony beds of rivers, or often the rivers themselves, so that our feet were constantly wet. At noon we rested for half an hour, and took our scanty meal. The hard sago-bread had to be softened in water before it was possible to eat it; and when this was done, and a few bananas were added to it, the breakfast, dinner, or supper, as the case might be, was ready. My appetite, however, was always so good from the great exertions I underwent, that I did not at all feel the want of better fare.

The island appears to be rich in deer and wild hogs; for we saw many traces of the first, and still more of the latter. Some of my people had guns, but they did not fire them; and I saw on this occasion how the natives manage to make the swiftest deer, in his most rapid flight, stop and hesitate. The creatures would stand and gaze at them as if rooted to the spot. The plan was to open suddenly and wave before them a scarlet cloth; but although at such moments the animal offers, of course, an excellent mark, we had at this time to renounce all hopes of venison, for the good-for-nothing guns constantly missed fire. One of my Alforas, however, caught a wild hog, and a *kussuf*, or wild cat: the first he fairly outran; the latter he got by climbing a tree at least a hundred feet high. It was not hard to catch when the hunter once got near it; for it does not see in the daytime, and sat quite still till he gave it a blow on the head and threw it down; but the agility with which its pursuer climbed from bough to bough up to the very top of the tree, was admirable, though it almost frightened me to look at him.

Neither yesterday nor to-day did we meet a single living soul, and our couch for the night was once more spread in the bed of a river. This time our fires did not blaze in vain, for though the wild hog was spared for the present—reserved for a handsome roast, to celebrate our entrance into Wahay—poor puss was sacrificed. The people opened it, took out the entrails and washed them, laid it on the fire to burn off the hair, then put the entrails in again, stuck it on a wooden spit, and roasted it all, without any salt to flavor it, as we did not carry any with us. They brought

Digitized by Google

me a large piece, and I took a morsel of it to do honor to their gift. It had a very strong smell, but did not taste badly, though the Malays objected so much to the odor that they would not taste it.

*January* 22*d* (18 miles). This day we had two ranges of hills to cross; the first, the *Gorolekuway*, about 1500 feet high; the second, the *Hurali*, not more than 500. The woods in Ceram are distinguished for the girth and height of the trees, and I often stood still to gaze in astonished admiration at the stately growth of these vegetable giants. Many of their trunks were wreathed about with climbing and orchidaceous plants, but I saw no flowers. There was, however, a very curious kind of fungus that I had never seen before. It was not very large—of a sort of bell shape, and the inner edge *trimmed* all round with a beautiful dazzlingly white network, resembling the finest lace. I could never find a second specimen.

From the heights of the Gorolehuway I obtained a good view of the country, which is mostly very mountainous, the valleys long and narrow, with dark woods all over them, and not a trace of a hut or of human habitation.

The passage across the Hurali was far more precipitous and dangerous than that over the higher range. In many places that we had to pass, the wall of rock fell so perpendicularly to the sea that we had scarcely room to set our feet, and if I had been liable to giddiness, I should, in all probability, have found my grave in the waters below.

On the Hurali I saw the first Alfora village, said to be the largest they have, and containing above thirty huts. I thought it must be deserted, for I neither saw nor heard any thing of an inhabitant; but my companions informed me that the village was fully inhabited, and the people all at home, but that they are so shy and fearful of human approach that at the sound of a voice or a footstep they rush into their huts and fasten the doors.

A heavy rain came on just as we got to this place, and we sought for shelter beneath the huts, which are built on stakes. We knocked and called on the inhabitants; but no answer came, no door was opened, and no living soul was to be found, though



Digitized by Google

we spent above an hour in the village; so the gratification of my curiosity had to be deferred to my return journey, when I hoped to bring with me some Rajah who might have influence enough with these people to induce them to show themselves.

When we had crossed the Hurali, and were come to the seashore, I thought we had got over the worst of our difficulties; but this was a great mistake. The mountains and hills of Ceram frequently fall like walls sheer down to the water, and for a whole mile we had literally to walk through the surf over rocks and crags, and the waves beating upon us so violently that it was as much as we could do to keep our ground against them, especially as the rocks and stones were slippery from the constant washing. The end of our journey was therefore more troublesome than the beginning. Even this, however, was happily got over at last, and the last mile lay through a pretty meadow that brought us to the village of *Passanea*.

I am afraid I shall be suspected of boasting when I say this journey of fifty miles on foot had not, on the whole, fatigued me in the least. There had been so much to see all the way, and every object that met my eyes, even the most seemingly insignificant, had such interest for me, that I really forgot my toils, though I did sometimes admire the iron strength of my own constitution that could enable me to get through them. I lived all the while only on sago-bread and bananas, slept on the hardest of beds, and walked on an average eighteen or nineteen miles a day, which on good roads, perhaps, would not have been so much, but on these steep stony mountain paths were wearisome enough.

Passanea is inhabited by Malays, who usually occupy the seacoast of the island, and the Alforas the mountains. I spent the night here at the house of the chief official man, and the next day embarked in an exceedingly small proa for Wahay. We had forty miles to go, but the sea was perfectly tranquil, and I got in quite safe at eight in the evening.

Wahay is the only settlement the Dutch have on the island; and there is here a small fort and a garrison of thirty men.

I remained in the proa while I dispatched my letter of introduction from Mr. Vischer to the Commandant Kern, who would

Digitized by Google

not believe my messenger when he informed him that a European woman had made the journey overland, and repeatedly assured me afterward that "he should not have been more surprised if the sky had fallen."

I remained six days at Wahay, during which I obtained some valuable contributions to my collection of insects; but I never caught sight of one of the wild Alforas, as they live at a considerable distance from there. The Commandant, however, promised to accompany me on my return as far as *Saway*, a place near Passanea, and thence to pay a visit to two of their villages. Mr. Kern had already lived two years at Wahay, and he had seen and heard a good deal of the manners and customs of the Alforas, and gave me an account that agreed so much with what I had observed among the Dyaks, that I feel convinced the Alforas may be classed as their descendants or collateral relatives.

The Alforas have, as I have said, like the Dyaks, a passion for collecting human heads, and esteem these valuables above every other booty that can be offered them. The most acceptable present that a lover can bring to his fair one is a fancy article of this kind; and if he can not get a whole one, she will modestly content herself with a portion thereof. Five or six young men will frequently form a company to go on a head-hunt, and divide among them any specimen they may procure. The huts in which they keep these trophies are called Baileo; and when one goes to decay and another is built, it remains without a roof until a new head has been obtained to place in it. Then the roof is put on, and the store of heads brought from the old Baileo.

An Alfora who goes along on a head-hunt conceals himself, as the Dyak does, among trees or shrubs, laying himself flat on the earth, and covering himself with leaves and branches, and he will lie in wait thus for his victim for days together without food or water.

From this ambush he flings his sharp-pointed spear with unerring aim at any unfortunate creature who comes in his way, and then, springing upon him from behind, cuts off the desired head. He afterward conceals the body with all possible care in some solitary spot, in order to prevent the discovery of the murder.

Digitized by Google

When a whole tribe, or the inhabitants of a village, go out together on one of these expeditions, and attack another village, they generally choose the time when the men are engaged elsewhere with their field-work, as they have no kind of chivalrous objection to taking the heads of women and children.

Returning home with their prizes, they announce their good fortune, from afar, by a loud piercing whistle, produced with a shell; and the women and children hasten out to see the conquering heroes come, greet them with all due exultation, and lead them in triumph to the Baileo. The heads are then given over to the boys and girls who have passed their tenth year, and they eagerly suck away every drop of blood that may yet be clinging to them—a proceeding which, in the opinion of their parents, tends to inspire them with valor. After this the trophies are slightly roasted, cleared of the flesh, and hung up in the Baileo. The Alforas are not cannibals, and in these feasts, which last several days, they consume several wild hogs and deer.

The jaw-bones of these animals are then hung up in the Baileo, as well as the human heads. It is on these festive occasions that the boys and girls who have reached the age of ten years receive their first piece of clothing, if it can be called so. The boys have only a strip of stuff of about a hand-breadth given them, and the girls a kind of incipient petticoat, scarcely a foot long.

Both these articles are called *Tijdaks*.

When a man has once made a conquest of a head, he obtains the privilege of adorning his Tijdak with paintings, and his smooth wooden shield with shells. The paintings may be considered, therefore, as a sort of military order, to be conferred only on those whose hands have dripped with human blood; like the military orders of Europe, in short—the reward of deeds of glory.

The religion of the Alforas admits of many gods and spirits. Some tribes have priests, and a hut set apart as a temple, not indeed for any sort of religious service, but merely for the ceremony of tattooing, which is performed on all children of ten years old. They are first intoxicated with *Sagower*, a kind of palm wine, and in this state brought into the temple, where they are tattooed on the breast and arms; and when they come to their senses they

Digitized by Google

are told the Good Spirit has done it. This tattooing hut must never be entered by any one but the priest and the Rajah; and the tribes that do not tattoo have neither temple nor priest.

The Alforas may have several wives if they like, but usually content themselves with one—perhaps partly because they can divorce them without the slightest difficulty. Wives, as usual among these races, are purchasable articles, not to be had without value received in rice and tobacco. Money does not exist among them.

The Alforas kill their sick when they have no hopes of their recovery. They bind the arms of the unfortunate creatures down between their knees, and in this position leave them till death comes to release them from their sufferings. When dead, they are either burned or carried to the top of some high steep rock.

The various tribes of the Alforas form a sort of confederation, and have one king for the whole island, and a Rajah for every village. They are said to have some good laws, and to show much respect to their persons in authority, though they do not allow them much real power. On the whole, the Alforas are represented as a good and honest people, of very fair morals, and the only ones in Ceram who practice some little agriculture. They raise rice, tobacco, ubi, and maize, which they exchange with the lazy Malays for cocoa-nuts, bananas, colored handkerchiefs, and glass beads.

During my stay at Wahay news came to the Commandant that some of the Alforas had attacked a village belonging to another of their tribes, and carried off five heads. The Dutch government seldom takes any notice when they make free with heads in this way among themselves, and but little when they take possession of a few belonging to the Malays; it is too feeble on this island to interfere with any effect, and even were a stronger force at the command of the Dutch it would be very difficult to bring these mountain tribes to obedience, for at the slightest pursuit they withdraw into inaccessible spots in the mountains; and they can find food every where, for the sago-palm grows in such quantities that much more is wasted than consumed. There is no want of game either, as there are no fierce wild beasts that might prevent its increase.

Digitized by Google

A short time before I arrived at Wahay three Malays had been killed by Alforas, and the Dutch authorities had taken prisoners two of the Rajahs belonging to the offending tribe. But they could not be brought to understand our view of the case; and at last it was thought best to leave them to be judged by their own laws, which condemn the culprits to pay to the relations of the murdered man certain damages in rice, tobacco, and earthen pots and pans.

The Dutch government does not derive the smallest benefit from the island of Ceram—no spice is raised there, and no taxes are paid. The fort at Wahay merely serves to secure them a footing on the island, and to enable them to rank it among Dutch possessions.

On the 30th of January I left Wahay, accompanied by the Commandant, Mr. Kern; but we had scarcely got a quarter of a mile from the shore when there arose such a gale of wind that we were obliged to endeavor to run in again. This, however, was no very easy matter, for the coast is every where covered with rocks, reefs, and abruptly rising cliffs—so that it was not without both toil and danger that we were enabled to get into a little bay, where we remained the whole of the day and night, and did not get into Saway till the following morning. Thence we visited, as we had planned to do, two Alfora villages, called *Massitulan* and *Opin*, which lie near Saway, upon small but almost perpendicular hills.

The huts of the Alforas are small, and built, like those of the Malays, on piles. The walls are made of the ribs of the sago leaves, and the roofs of the leaves themselves. In the interior you find only a few mats and earthen pots, a parang, bows and arrows, a lance, and a wooden shield four feet long and six or eight inches thick.

The Alforas are not so ugly as the Malays, and I have even seen some well-formed faces among them. Their figures are slender and well proportioned, and among the girls there are really some pretty creatures. Their complexion is light brown; they have fine black eyes, white teeth, and thick black hair that is never cut. The men do up their hair in a kind of club in the

Digitized by Google

front, increasing the size of the knot by putting a bunch of rice straw under it, and they then pass a handkerchief round their heads in such a neat and clever manner that the bunch of hair remains sticking out at the top like a cockade. A man who has taken two heads may also decorate his head-dress with shells. The men do not all wear the handkerchief or the hair cockade; they sometimes leave it to hang down loosely, which gives them a very wild aspect. Their thick, long, and somewhat ragged *chevelure* falls over their faces and flies about with every movement. But though their hair is so abundant, their beards are very scanty, but it does not appear that they pluck them out as the Malays do; indeed, I saw some who appeared to be cherishing a kind of mustache, and to take no little pride in it too. The women twist their hair into a knot behind.

Both sexes go as nearly as possible in the state of nature; for they have nothing more than the narrow strip of stuff for the men, and the foot long petticoat for the women, which I have already spoken of under the name of Tijdak; and when they marry, even the Tijdak is thrown off, and they have not so much as this apology for a garment.

There were few heads (without bodies) to be seen in these two Alfora villages; and in one the Baileo stood without a roof for want of this indispensable decoration.

The Rajah of this village is much attached to the Dutch government, and will not, therefore, allow his people to seek for heads among the Malays; nay, he even desires to do away with the custom altogether, but has not hitherto been able to bring over his countrymen to his opinion. He received, however, from the Commandant a present of some old European clothes and other trifles, as an acknowledgment of his good intentions. As he had been informed of our coming, he had managed to hang all this finery upon him. He had an ancient pair of breeches that reached nearly down to his ankles, and a waistcoat and coat that he could have wrapped twice round him. On the latter he had managed to fasten some bits of colored cord and gold lace, and on his head he had mounted a little peaked cap, with a white cock's feather. Altogether his appearance was very comical, and he

Digitized by Google

assumes this state costume, I was told, whenever he comes before the Commandant. His every-day dress is none at all. The women and girls, too, a few of whom showed themselves on the persuasion of the Rajah, had managed to hang on a few handkerchiefs and other scanty articles of attire; but when I afterward saw them at Hurali, they were all stark naked.

In the afternoon we went to Passaneo, where the Commandant left me to return to Wahay, and I set out on my foot journey to Wahhariki; but before his departure, he induced the Rajah of this place to accompany me to Hurali, in order to get the Alforas out of their huts and procure me an opportunity of making acquaintance with this wild and shy people.

At Passaneo I again met my Alfora guides, who had waited there for me; and now that I knew the meaning of the shells and paintings that adorned them, I saw that there were among them some famous sportsmen for their peculiar kind of game.

When we came to Hurali there was again not a creature to be seen, and the Rajah was obliged almost to drag the people by main force out of their huts. I went into several of these habitations, expecting, as Hurali is considered the chief place of the Alforas, to find something more of opulence than at Opin and Massitulan; but the simplicity, or rather destitution, was equally striking. Their excessive fear, too, was painful to witness. The children ran from me screaming as if for their lives; and it was as much as the Rajah could do to induce the grown-up girls to stay and hold out their hands to me. The constant danger they are exposed to of an attack from some hostile tribe is doubtless the cause of this immoderate timidity and distrust. They seem to dread the sight of a human face.

They led me into the Baileo, which, compared with the size of the neighboring huts, has the dimensions of a palace, for it is sixty feet long and forty broad; and here I counted, shuddering, a long garland of 136 skulls that have been collected, of course during many years. On the walls were hanging innumerable jaw-bones of wild hogs, deer, etc., that had been consumed in the various banquets held in honor of the victories. These heads and jaw-bones, and the fire-places where the heads are roasted, are all

Digitized by Google

that is to be seen in the Baileo. The hut of the Rajah was also tastefully fitted up with a decoration of human skulls.

I wished much to see the festive dance which the Alforas perform on these occasions, and the young men were not disinclined to gratify me. They were soon ready with musical instruments, consisting of shells and a drum; and they had begun to beat on the latter, and to draw from the shells some piercing tones, when the elder people, and especially the Rajah, interfered. They seemed to think that if this dance should be performed in jest, some one would soon fall victim in earnest.

To make me amends for the disappointment, the Rajah undertook to show me himself the way to attack an enemy. He armed himself with shield, parang, and lance, and holding the two former in his left hand and the lance in his right, he hid himself with great caution behind a tree, having first looked about on all sides. Then he lay down on the ground, covered himself with leaves and branches, and put his ear to the ground. After a while he raised himself a little, as if he perceived the approach of his prey, drew back again for a moment, and then suddenly flung his spear, rushing forward immediately afterward, and making a stroke with his parang, as if to perform the decapitation. He then picked up the imaginary head, which this time was a stone, and presented it to me.

I begged the Rajah to introduce to me the most renowned *headsmen* of his tribe, and he pointed out some of the men who were sitting round me; and told me this one had conquered two heads; that one three; but *he himself only one.* My astonishment when I heard of this fact, and looked at the mild, good-natured face of this man, can hardly be expressed. The other heroes, too, looked as modest and complacent when their deeds were alluded to, as if the most amiable and praiseworthy actions had been in question. The cutting off a head is, in their eyes, what the winning a battle is in that of a European general, or sabring his enemy in that of a soldier. Is there, in fact, much difference?

I took a cordial leave of these people, who, this one propensity excepted, may be accounted good and inoffensive, and set forward again on our journey; but scarcely had we, in the evening, lain

Digitized by Google

down to rest, when we were awakened by the man who had been set to keep watch. He pointed to the forest, in which, to our terror, we saw a faint light glimmer.

My people sprang up directly and seized their weapons, but there soon appeared before us some half dozen Alforas, with pieces of burning wood in their hands, who told us that they had seen a large party going out, probably to cut sago-trees, and, recommending us to be cautious, they went away. The guide, who had been given to us at Saparooa, and who was the worthiest and best Malay I ever met, immediately had our still glimmering fire put entirely out, ordered three men to keep watch on each side of me, and the rest to lie down at a very short distance. We were, however, all so thoroughly worn out with our day's journey—for we had crossed both mountain chains—that, in spite of all dangers, the whole party, sentinels included, was soon fast asleep. The night passed quietly, however, but the return journey was made with such rapidity, I do not know whether from fear or from any other cause, that at eleven o'clock in the morning on the third day we arrived at Mahariki. The last six or eight miles we came by a different route from that we had followed on setting out, through woods entirely of sago-palms.

I rested one day at Mahariki, and on the following day returned to Noloth, in Saparooa.

On the 6th of February I got to Saparooa itself, where I met the Governor, who received me with joyful astonishment. The first question was, "Have you then really been to Wahay?"

"Here is what will convince you," said I, smiling, and handed him the letter from the commandant of the fort.

There was a grand banquet this evening in Saparooa, for the Governor was to leave the island the following morning, and had invited all the regents and schoolmasters. These people were all natives, but they appeared in black European costume, with the exception of three, who wore military uniforms, as belonging to the burgher militia.

I could not but admire the deportment of these men in their stiff foreign dress, as well as the propriety of their behavior at table. They handled the knives and forks as cleverly as if they

Digitized by Google

had been accustomed to them all their lives; and there was really little but their brown skins and Malay cast of face to remind you that you were not in European company.

On the following morning a great number of the people had assembled at an early hour before the house to entertain the Governor with a dance, in order to express their thanks for his visit to the island. There were abundance of dancers, both male and female, and the latter were so covered with finery that it was evident they had scraped together for the occasion every ornament they could possibly muster. They had on their heads crowns of brass plates adorned with fringes and flowers, and bits of colored stuff figured as aprons; but they performed only the sleepy, monotonous Malay dance—the end of which, I think, no mortal patience could ever wait for. The gentlemen were, if possible, still more oddly *got up*. They had brass helmets, with monstrously high feathers, colored aprons, little round wooden shields, with bits of white paper pasted on them, and wooden parangs decorated with flowers.

The dance they performed was somewhat more animated than that of the ladies. The garrison of the fort, consisting of fifty men, was also drawn up, and the regents and schoolmasters surrounded the Governor, and the whole body accompanied him with dancing and music to the sea-shore.

He was to go afterward to visit other islands; and I also left Saparooa the same evening, and the following day greeted once more the amiable family of Roskolt.

I had now enjoyed abundant opportunities of seeing the people of the Moluccas, and I may therefore assert that they are superior in personal appearance to the Malays of Java, Borneo, and Sumatra. They are of a light-brown color, their eyes dark blue or black, and their figures well-formed, as, indeed, figures mostly are among nations who do not distort them by unnatural dress. The odious custom of blackening and filing their teeth does not exist among them; the chewing siri is not carried on with so much enthusiasm as among others of the Malay race, and I never saw their women smoke.

I had read and heard that the Christians among the natives of

Digitized by Google

Amboyna dressed in a most absurd manner—in a kind of mock European costume, and that the men were especially addicted to the round black hat. But this is not the case, as far as my observations have gone. The gentlemen do sometimes wear the garment commonly considered most indispensable, but generally no hat at all; and the women are chiefly distinguished by a somewhat longer kabay. Travelers are anxious to find something remarkable, and are often overhasty in their generalizations from one or two instances.

The food of the natives of the Moluccas is not very varied or abundant. They have a little poultry, a few pigs, but no horned cattle—those which are on the islands belonging to the Dutch. Besides their sago, they have little more than fish, some fruits, and red pepper.

A short time ago a sago manufactury was established at Amboyna, where the finest sago flour, as well as the pearl sago, was made; but it was found that these articles could not be produced here as cheaply as at Singapore, although the sago grows wild in the island, and at Singapore has to be imported.

The reason probably is that at Singapore there are plenty of industrious Chinese workmen, while here the lazy Malays can only be tempted to work by exorbitant payment.

On the 3d of March I left Amboyna, and once more by the steamer of the same name, to go by the way of Ternate to Kema on Celebes. The passage of 260 miles we made in fifty-four hours, passing many islands and islets, upon some of which I noticed steep, spherical-shaped mountains, sometimes rising sheer out of the sea. Many stood quite apart from any other, reminding me of those I had seen at Sarawak.

The entrance to Ternate is very picturesque; the bay is encircled by mountains more than 5000 feet high—among them the Tidore and the Ternate; the latter a volcano that is frequently smoking. At the foot of this rather dangerous neighbor lies the little town of the same name.

The Dutch have a fort here and a Resident, but, like the island of Ceram, it is a mere burden to them, and only retained out of political considerations. There is also a native sultan on the

Digitized by Google

island, whom they have hitherto left in peaceable possession of his country, and paid him a pension of 10,800 rupees into the bargain.

We remained at Ternate a day and a half, which I spent in the most agreeable manner in the house of Mr. Goldenau the Resident. In the evening we paid the Sultan a visit, and he sent a convenient European carriage to fetch us, which he had formerly received as a present from the King of Holland; but, as there are no horses on the island (a deficiency that had not been remembered in Holland), the only way for the Sultan to make use of the equipage is to harness men in place of the customary quadrupeds. To my great astonishment, the carriage was, at the appointed hour, driven and pushed up to the door by more than twenty of the Sultan's subjects. We took our seats, and went along at such a good pace, that I should never have guessed to what kind of locomotives we were indebted, had I not seen them.

The Sultan's house is built of stone, in the European style; and he himself wore a complete European costume, except that he had a turban instead of a hat.

He came out on the staircase to receive us, offered me his arm, and led me, with much decorum, to the saloon of reception. Here he had to leave me, as he could not, according to etiquette, place a woman by his side. His daughters, however, took his place (as the Sultana, his wife, was ill), and led me to the end of the room, the gentlemen being seated opposite to us at the other end. Tea and sweetmeats were presented, and then two dances were performed in our honor.

The first, the Menaré, was danced by twelve prettily-dressed girls, who wore loose pink silk robes, broad white collars, and pink and green scarfs and aprons. They had broad golden girdles round their waists, and a gold plate on the bosom, besides armlets of the same metal. On their heads they had a kind of narrow coronet with many peaks and points; and a gold plate hung down behind over their hair, which was decorated with flowers. They had also fans sticking in their girdles.

The dance was tolerable lively for a Malay one. It had figures

Digitized by Google

something like those of a quadrille, and the dancers made use in it of their aprons and fans. But all was done with constantly downcast eyes, without much grace, and to the accompaniment of a screeching song, two tambourins, and a fife. The musicians were women.

The other dance, the *Tjakalele*, dates from the Portuguese time, though it has undergone some alterations. It is performed, along with a kind of prelude, by ten dancers, and is pretty enough to be compared with some of our best ballet-dances. The costume of the performers consisted of orange-colored trowsers and caftans, the latter open at the four sides, colored ribbons and scarfs, and three-cornered felt hats, with white plumes. Each dancer held a wooden sword in his hand, and had a colored silk handkerchief fastened to each arm.

The dancer who figured in the introductory part had a pink caftan instead of an orange-colored one, and, instead of one scarf, two; as well as two plumes upon his hat, and two handkerchiefs to each arm. The dancers made very skillful and complicated figures and groups, stamped from time to time upon the ground, and made strokes at each other with their wooden swords, as if representing a combat. In the conclusion they formed with them a kind of litter, upon which the first dancer sprang, and was borne in triumph from the scene. The music consisted of two violins and a fife, played by men.

The servility of deportment at this court is by no means so great as at Surakarta; the people did not kneel down till the Sultan came quite near them, and he was not served by women but by men, who stood upright behind him.

When I took my leave, the Sultan's daughter accompanied me to the door of the drawing-room, and there the Sultan himself again offered me his arm, and led me to the carriage.

I saw with astonishment that the roads were lighted up, although I had not noticed in coming any such luxury as lanterns, but when we came near the lights the riddle was solved. There were no lanterns, but, instead of them, living candelabras, namely, men, who stood all along on each side holding torches.

The people of Ternate live much on sago, though rice and

Digitized by Google

maize are also raised. The country is fertile, but little cultivated, and in all places of this kind the articles of diet to which we Europeans are accustomed are of course immoderately dear. Little or no vegetables are raised, and very few of the people trouble themselves about breeding poultry, pigs, or cattle. A pound of beef would cost sixty doits, and a bottle of milk forty. Servants' wages are also very high, and they mostly have to be sent for from Java.

We left Ternate on the evening of the 7th of March, and reached Kema in Celebes on the following morning. The distance is 94 miles.

---

## CHAPTER XI.

Celebes.—Manado.—Journey to the Highlands.—The Dutch Missionaries.—Macassar.—Journey into the Interior of Celebes.—Maros.—The Choice of a Regent.—Tanette Barru.—Festival of Teeth Filing.—Paré-Paré.—The learned Malay King.

Celebes is a large island, lying across the equator from 2° north latitude to 6° south, and divided into long peninsulas by the incursions of the sea. Kema lies at the northeastern point in the Residence of Merehatta, though the seat of the Resident is twenty miles off, at Manado, where the ships go to during the eastern monsoon. In the western they come to anchor at Kema.

It is a very insignificant little place, and I found here only one official person and one missionary; the first I had met with before in the Dutch settlements. He was a German (a Mr. Hardy), and he invited me immediately to his house, where I remained two days, and then rode quite alone to Manado. The way led me through beautiful broad valleys, planted with rice, coffee, and maize, and fine mountains rose round me, among which were the *Klabat* twins, of 5000 feet high. The sago-palm grows wild here too; but this liberality of Nature does not seem to render the people quite so idle as those of the Moluccas, and they live chiefly on rice and maize. With the coffee there is more trouble than

Digitized by Google

elsewhere, and every head of a family must plant and maintain 500 trees. They get, indeed, ten copper guilders for the picul of coffee, but twenty-five doits of this go to the Regent and the Inspector. Every native must also pay six florins a year for his hut to the Government, and two to the Regent. It must be confessed Holland has acted in a very step-mother fashion to the people of this island.

I had an invitation for Manado from the Resident, Mr. Andriesen, but as Manahassa is renowned for its fine scenery, I wished to see something of that also, and therefore undertook a little journey to the Highlands, having an ascent to make of about 2300 feet to reach the Lake Tondeno.

On the 14th of March I rode, in company with the missionary Mr. Schwarz, a German, by *Latho-Tomohan* and *Lahendon* to *Sonder*, a distance of twenty-three miles. From Latho the road began to rise, and some wonderful views over land and sea to present themselves. The finest point is on the height near Lahendon. A large fertile valley lies at your feet, girdled by mountains, and among them is an active volcano, the Saputan, and the Lohore, of 5000 feet high. Cultivated hills, woods, and groves, with rich fields of rice and maize, and large handsome villages, are scattered among them on all sides, and beyond lies the lovely little lake of Lahendon, glittering like a diamond in its green setting.

At Tomohan we stopped to dinner at the house of the missionary, Mr. Wilkin, also a German, and in the afternoon made a little excursion to visit the lake, which is about a mile in diameter. Some mud springs lie on the opposite side, and I got myself put across the lake in a little canoe made of the hollow trunk of a tree, in order to see them; but the mud was quite dry. There was not even the smallest puff of vapor to announce the presence of a spring. The springs are said, nevertheless, to be, in rainy weather, tolerably active; though by no means so much so as ten years ago. At that time an Italian count who was here paid the forfeit of his life for his visit to these springs. He ventured, notwithstanding the warnings of his guide, too near, sank above the ankles in the boiling mud, and died in a few months of the wounds

Digitized by Google

thus occasioned. Besides these mud springs, there is a small hot sulphur spring to be seen close to the lake.

At Sonder I remained at the house of the missionary, Mr. Graafland, as Mr. Schwarz wished to go eleven miles further to Langowang, where he resided. I went there afterward with Mr. Schwarz, and again saw, about a hundred yards from the road, sulphur springs, which have formed several basins, the largest of which is about twenty feet in diameter. Here the mud is constantly boiling up; and near Langowang are some sulphur springs of equally high temperature. The water is as clear as crystal, and you can look far down into its rocky basin. The smell of sulphur is stronger in it than the taste; and the people in the neighborhood make use of it both for drinking and cooking, though they say that it gives pain in the stomach to those who are not accustomed to it.

At Langowang I found an asylum in the abode of the kind and excellent Mr. Schwarz.

On the 17th of March I rode to Romboken, on the beautiful Lake Tondano, eight miles from Langowang. The lake is nine miles long and four broad, and obtains its supply of water from thirty little rivers and a spring in its centre, at which spot, it is said, no bottom can be found with the lead. It is prettily *set* in hills and mountains, decked with never-fading green.

At Romboken the missionary, Mr. Noe, was waiting for me with a boat, in order to take me to his house at Tondano, four miles off; and on the way thither we were overtaken by a truly tropical rain, accompanied by an extremely cold wind. I was seized with a violent shivering, and after that the malignant Sumatra fever came on me for the seventh time (I had had it also at Amboyna). I had longed intensely to get to Tondano, and on my arrival went straight from the boat to my bed. Toward evening I felt better, and went to pay a visit to Mr. Riedl, another German missionary settled here.

As this fever is of the intermittent kind, I was able the next day to undertake a walk to the waterfall of Tondano, about two miles off.

The environs are wildly romantic. The river rushes over a



Digitized by Google

rock eighty feet high, and plunges down into a caldron from which the rocks rise perpendicularly on all sides, and which is altogether inaccessible. The fall can only be viewed from above, where an open wooden hut has been erected for curious visitors. There is a second less considerable fall; and about a hundred feet from the latter a bridge is carried across the river, whence you obtain a good view of both. The river is hemmed in between rocky walls, and the power of the water in this rapid fall has worn in them great openings, through which it rushes as through sluices.

In the afternoon I rowed along the whole length of the lake as far as Kakas, whence I returned on foot to Langowang. This was my last excursion during my stay in the Residence of Manahassa. I should have done more, but the fever attacked me repeatedly. All that I saw of the country pleased me extremely: it is rich in natural beauty, has a moderate climate, and a good productive soil. The villages are handsome and cleanly, the houses, though built on stakes, spacious, and as well kept as I have ever seen in these countries. Many of the native houses, though built only of the ribs of sago leaves, were so large and neat, that I took them for the habitations of Europeans. Some of the villages contain 2000 or 3000 inhabitants; the houses stand in rows, and are separated by trees and hedges—the most beautiful hedges of roses, which run along the whole length of the rows of houses. Good broad paths lead in all directions to seventeen villages, in each of which there is a *Logee House*, as it is called; that is, one built for the Resident, who comes into this country very frequently to visit the coffee plantations.

The natives are partly Christian and partly heathen. They are called Alforas, but I found in them little resemblance to the Alforas of Ceram. They have no taste for collecting heads either, and they are by no means so ugly as the Malays, as they leave their teeth unfiled and unstained; and though they do chew *betel*, they are not immoderately addicted to the indulgence. The character of these people I heard every where praised as honest and trustworthy; they perform their labor for the Government willingly, and their morals in other respects are very pure. In

Digitized by Google

costume they do not differ from their brethren on Ceram; nor do the Christians among them from the other Christians of the Moluccas.

Manahassa has a population of 110,000 souls, of whom about one third have, during the last twenty years, become Christians. Even in the time of the Portuguese there were many; but, for want of priests to continue their instruction, they fell back afterward to heathenism. The first missionaries, Messrs. Schwarz and Riedl, were sent here from the Missionary Society of Holland in the year 1831; and Mr. Schwarz alone has had the satisfaction, during the twenty-one years of his labors, of baptizing 9000 persons.

The mode of life of the missionaries here appeared to me incomparably better suited to the object they have in view than that of the American and English missionaries I have known in India, Persia, and China. They establish themselves permanently in one place, and do not go running about, a hundred or two hundred miles, to preach to people who have had no previous instruction, and therefore understand scarcely any thing of the long discourses addressed to them. When their sphere of action has become so much extended that they can no longer fulfill all its duties, they request the Society to send them an assistant; and thus the work goes on, step by step. It was begun by the two gentlemen I have mentioned, and now ten missionaries are found scarcely sufficient.

Dutch missionaries receive a very moderate salary from the Society, and live in very modest style, without any of the grandeur and luxury of the American and English preachers of the Gospel to the heathen; but their flocks draw toward them with so much the more confidence, as there is not so strongly marked a difference in their external position. There was a Sunday among the days that I spent at the house of Mr. Schwarz; and in the afternoon, after divine service, the natives came to pay visits to the family, and talked in the most confiding manner for hours, quite as if they belonged to it.

Every missionary has five or six of the young men, and as many girls, in his house; the former are educated as schoolmasters, the

Digitized by Google

latter instructed in all useful domestic employments, those only excepted which, though useful elsewhere, might not be so here. These young people live constantly with the family of the missionary, and are treated as his own children; though care is taken that they shall not be unfitted for their future position by the enjoyment of too many of the conveniences of civilized life, to which they have of course not been accustomed.

The missionaries here do not hold meetings once or twice a week, but once or twice a year, and they do not think it necessary to carry wife and children and their entire domestic establishment with them. The gentlemen meet, and spend two or three days together in the discussion of the affairs of their missions, and then each rides home again. They do not always think it beneath their dignity even to marry well-brought-up native young women. Madame Schwarz has not the good fortune to be of European descent, but she fulfills all the duties of her position as well, or perhaps better, than the wives of other missionaries; and neither she nor her children find it necessary to have change of air and take voyages to Europe for the benefit of their health—a vast saving to the Missionary Society, for the perpetual travelings of the wives and children of missionaries constitute an important item in their expenditure.

I saw the wives of the missionaries here visiting the sick, dressing the most disgusting wounds and tumors, and performing similar offices of Christian charity; and after my visit to this country I began to feel much more real respect for missionaries than I had ever done before. I began to see what an infinite amount of real good they can effect when they devote themselves to the office from pure and conscientious motives, and not, as is too often the case, from the desire to obtain a handsome income by a very easy mode of life.

The government of Manahassa concerns itself, I am sorry to say, very little about the education of the people; the schoolmasters receive their salaries from the Missionary Society, and are not even exempted from the house-tax for the cottages they occupy. Yet the salaries are so extremely small, that they could not be found very burdensome to the government, being only for

Digitized by Google

the first class ten rupees a month, and for the subordinate seven, or even four.

After spending five days with this dear, amiable family, I set out on the 23d of March on my return journey to Manado, Mr. Schwarz accompanying me ten miles on my way; and then we parted, and took as kind a farewell as if we had been friends for years.

I dined at the house of Mr. Wilkins, who had formerly invited me, and in the evening I reached Manado (thirty-four miles). I was received by the German missionary, Mr. Linemann, with whom I was to visit the other stations, and we were just ready to set off when we were informed that the steamer for Macassar would be here some time during the month; so that I had to remain and wait for it, and give up the excursions from which I had promised myself so much pleasure—a circumstance the more vexatious, as day after day passed and no steamer made her appearance. She did not come till the 9th of April, and I went on board the following morning.

The six hundred miles' voyage to Macassar we made in three days; and on landing I was received with open arms by Dr. Schmitz and his wife. I had previously heard that he had been appointed to the office of director of the hospital there. I remained with them, however, only a few days; for, as I had previously visited Macassar, my object in coming again was to make myself acquainted with the interior of the island.

The part of Celebes which is independent of the Dutch is divided into three states, *Bonni*, *Goa*, and *Sidenring*, and these are again subdivided into many smaller ones, whose kings or rajahs are subject to the rulers of the larger.

The sultans or kings of these states are allies of the Dutch, but permit neither resident nor fort in their territories, and have hitherto maintained a complete independence. I purposed to visit them, as well as the mountain district Dari, whose wild inhabitants are said to live in caves, and to occupy the very lowest grade of civilization.

Without the permission of the Dutch authorities, however, you are not allowed to enter either their own dominions or those of

Digitized by Google

their allies; so I solicited the requisite credentials from Governor Bick, who was immediately ready to afford them for Goa and Sidenring, but Bonni he excepted, as his government was not just then on the best terms with this Sultan—the most powerful of the three, and who can bring into the field a force of 40,000 effective soldiers.

Provided with letters from the Governor to sundry rajahs and kings, I set off, accompanied by an interpreter and a native of Celebes, and rode as far as Maros (17 miles). Maros and Macassar lie on the same plain, which is covered with a boundless extent of rice-fields. I was the more surprised at this extensive cultivation, as I had seen very little rice planted in the villages, and so large an amount of human labor is requisite to get in the harvest; for here, as in Java, every ear is cut singly.

The rivers *Tello* and *Maros* intersect this plain, and, as there are no bridges any where, we had to cross on boats, and let the horses swim through.

At Maros I alighted at the house of the Assistant-Resident, Count Bentheim, who lives in a very handsome edifice, of which he has been himself the architect and builder. It has a handsome colonnade, and fine lofty apartments, and far exceeds in beauty the residence of the Governors of Macassar and Amboyna.

The continual rain detained me at Maros six days—a longer time than I meant to have passed there; and it was very fortunate that this bad weather overtook me while I was enjoying the society of this charming family, and could therefore so well reconcile myself to the misfortune, and not when I was dependent on the hospitality of a Malay king or rajah. So far was I from regretting my stay, that I could not help some feeling of the kind when the reappearance of the sun gave the signal for me to continue my journey. During my stay at Maros I visited a grotto, lying three miles off, at *Bulu-Sysong*. The rock containing this grotto stands as isolated in the beautiful plain as if it had fallen from heaven. It is about 80 feet high, and 300 in circumference; and when the English had possession of the country they used it as a fortress, turned the grotto into a barrack, and mounted their guns on the top of it. The roof of the grotto is supported by ir-

Digitized by Google

regular columns of stalactite, and many crags of various shapes. It is very pretty; but now serves only as the abode of innumerable bats and other "birds of night."

An election for the office of Rajah took place while I was in the house of the Count. One of the Rajahs wished to obtain, as well from his government as from his people, the assurance that after his death his title and office would pass to his son, and on that account desired to have him elected during his own lifetime.

The Regent, and the elders of the entire district, assembled, therefore, for this purpose in the house of Count Bentheim; every one was asked separately for his opinion and his vote, and the Rajah's son was unanimously chosen. He had sat apart while the negotiation was going on, and when the happy result was announced to him, he drew his kriss, and took the oath of fidelity.

The people are not much oppressed by the government here; they have the tenth part of the produce of their harvest to pay in kind, but they are not required to work gratuitously, either at roads, bridges, or houses. Coffee, sugar, and spice plantations are free, but nothing is to be seen of any of these productions. The natives want nothing but rice, and cultivate nothing else, for they greatly prefer their ease to their profit. This seems to afford a presumption that, if the government gave up the monopoly system, and no longer compelled the people to labor, the effect would not be, as is sometimes imagined, that production would be increased and prices diminished, but, on the contrary, on all the islands, Java not excepted, most of the plantations would in all probability speedily go to ruin.

As to the monopoly system in general, and the good and evil of the Dutch mode of government—as a woman, and with a very insufficient amount of knowledge on such subjects—I will not venture to pronounce any opinion; but, without reference to this special case, I am inclined to think that constraint of any kind on a people is a species of injustice; but where is the government in the world that does not employ any? I am afraid no one has ever yet been carried on with the purely philanthropic view of making the people happy. The question with respect to colonies always has been, and is, What advantage can we get out of the

Digitized by Google

country and its inhabitants? England endeavors to obtain as much as possible from her colonial possessions, so do the French and the Spaniards; and it is not surprising that the Dutch form no exception to the general rule.

Why so much should have been said of the severity of the Dutch government in India I can not at all understand, for it seemed to me much less severe than the governments in many other countries. In British India, for example, every single fruit-tree is taxed, and the farming system is very oppressive to the smaller farmers. In the Dutch Indian possessions the natives have certainly also much to suffer; but their contributions are mostly in labor, which is less burdensome to them than a demand for money payments would be. It must, too, not be forgotten that of late years much has been done for the improvement of the condition of the natives. In many provinces the peasant is the proprietor of his cottage and land, and can sell them if he pleases; in others the ground is cultivated at the expense of government, and the harvest divided. In districts where neither coffee, tea, sugar, nor spice can be cultivated, or where they are not monopolies, the fifth of the harvest, or sometimes only the tenth, and that in kind, is delivered to the government. Where these articles are monopolies, the government claims from the peasant a very small tax on his own possessions, or frequently none at all; but he is required to work on the government lands, or on the plantations hired from the government, for which he receives a trifling compensation.

The heaviest burden on the people is the labor in the coffee plantations, on the roads and bridges, and at the magazines and residences of official persons, and so forth. In the former they have to remain, for two or three months in the year, fifteen or twenty miles from their homes; but the government pays them a small fixed sum for every picul of coffee delivered. The building work has hitherto had to be performed altogether gratuitously, and only the foremen of the work, masons, carpenters, smiths, etc., receive suitable payment. As I have already mentioned, the present Governor General has long been exerting himself to obtain fair wages for all the laborers employed by the government, and

Digitized by Google

this benevolent purpose was at the time of my departure advancing rapidly toward its fulfillment.

The inhabitants of towns are free from all burdens of this nature; they have no forced labor to perform, and nothing to pay but a small yearly land-tax; and every peasant may become a citizen as soon as he has performed military service for twelve years. It is especially concerning this class of people that so great an outcry has been raised; but they really are extremely idle, and in many districts, that of Amboyna especially, terribly devoted to card-playing.

The slaves are well treated in the Dutch territory, and when ill used by their masters are protected by the government; they are at liberty to lay any complaint, and the laws in their favor are not merely a dead letter, as they are in some countries. I must add, nevertheless, that, from all I have seen, not merely of Dutch India, but of all distant countries under European rule, I can not but think those nations happier who have never fallen under the dominion of the whites. They have their sufferings indeed, and are often oppressed, but their case is seldom so bad as when they are subjected to the yoke of the covetous European.

On the 23d of August I set out in prosecution of my journey, and with a rather numerous train; for Count Bentheim, notwithstanding my refusal, persisted in giving me another interpreter, who, besides the language of the country, spoke Dutch, of which I had managed to cram enough into my ancient head to render myself intelligible. Each of my interpreters had two coolies and a servant for himself, though I myself had but one cooly; and altogether we made a party of ten persons. This was far more than I desired, for there is more trouble in keeping such a train in order, and more difficulty every where in procuring horses.

We rode on sixteen miles to Padkadjene, constantly through a great plain, and between plantations of rice; indeed, the two districts of Maros and Macassar may be considered the granaries of the island. The plain of Maros particularly is of most exuberant fertility, for which the inhabitants have in a great measure to thank Count Bentheim, since he has made several aqueducts, which afford the fields a sufficient amount of irrigation.



Digitized by Google

Count Bentheim had prepared me to find bad roads, but they really exceeded my expectations; there was, in fact, no road at all; and we had to make our way as we could through the rice-fields, which are artificially kept under water. These fields are separated by narrow dikes, from which your horse may easily slip, as he has scarcely room to set one foot before the other, so that you must be every moment prepared for a fall. The animal may also find the dike break under him, for it merely consists of soft earth. When we were not on these narrow earthen dikes we were in puddles or morasses, where our horses sometimes sunk in up to the breast, and had great difficulty in struggling out again, and, of course, on such occasions, you are bespattered with mire from head to foot. The government authorities always choose the month of August for traveling in this country, as the rice harvest is then over, and the fields dry.

A small mountain chain, extending about fifteen miles, soon came in sight, and a higher range rose beyond it. The peculiar feature of the nearer one consisted of a long, perpendicular ridge like a wall, with a cleft here and there, through which lovely glimpses of scenery appeared. The highest point of the further range is the Maros, which rises almost perpendicularly 4800 feet.

*April 24th.* We rode to Mendalli, twenty-eight miles, and crossed the River *Padkadjene* in a boat. Another river, the Segeri, we had to walk through, and the water came up to the horses' breasts, so that they could hardly keep the ground. The greatest danger, however, was that of being attacked by caymans, of which there are plenty in the rivers of this island.

From the village of Segeri alone nineteen men were last year seized and devoured by these monsters; but these accidents do not at all prevent the people from swimming and bathing in the river. They say that, if it is your fate to be seized by a cayman, you will be, even if you should never go near the river at all.

At Segeri we dined at the house of the Regent, where we had neither forks nor spoons, but fingers afforded tolerable substitutes. In this district the frightful custom of filing and staining the teeth black begins again; and it is also fashionable to dye the nails on the hands and feet red-brown. The costume of the natives was

Digitized by Google

pretty much the same as hitherto. The men wore short trowsers, reaching only to the middle of the thigh, and over them a sarang; the upper part of the body remained uncovered, and their heads had the customary handkerchief. No man, however, will take a step from his hut without his parang, besides a large bag containing the ingredients for siri and the implements for smoking. These are all worn under the sarang, and give the figure a very odd, angular appearance. Many of the men are armed with a lance, as well as a parang.

The ladies wear their sarangs of a more decorous length than I have seen them elsewhere, and sometimes draw them up quite over their heads. They more frequently, however, throw them quite loosely round the body, leaving a long piece hanging down; and it is not possible to manage this garment in a more inconvenient manner, for they must always keep one hand at liberty to hold it together. Besides the sarang, they wear a short upper robe, which reaches to the hips, and which the girls have made of quite transparent stuff; the older women of something thicker.

After dinner we set off again, and the Regent of Segeri accompanied us; and as noble a figure was this Macassar* chief, on his stately gray horse, as one could have wished to see. He was six feet high, most powerfully built, and with earnest, expressive features. He wore a dazzlingly white sarang, most picturesquely draped about his brown body, and a white handkerchief twisted round his head. The horse had no saddle, merely a small bridle, and yet the rider sat and rode with the most perfect security and grace.

The men in Celebes are all excellent riders; you may see children of ten years old galloping about on horseback in the most undaunted manner, and without any saddle. They just put a bit of a bridle into the mouth of the steed, and away they go, without requiring any other help. When they ride slowly, they generally put up one foot against the side of the horse, which has a very odd

* The inhabitants of Celebes are in the south mostly Macassars, and in the north Alforas; but the former are found scattered over the whole island.

Digitized by Google

effect. There are many studs in Celebes, as the horses from this island are frequently exported, and are famous over all India for their size and good qualities. The price of a fine one is as high as 300 rupees.

We rode to-day through many rice-fields, as well as maize, ubi, and pisang plantations; then came great tracts of *alung-alung*, or jungle-grass; and here and there little patches of forest, all in large valleys, for the mountain range lay some miles to the side.

*April 25th.* Our journey to-day was short, only seven miles, but very disagreeable. The roads about Mendalli had become absolutely impassable, through the frequent rains, and we were obliged to get down upon the sea-shore, and sometimes ride into the sea itself; and then, on account of the numerous coral-reefs, we could not even always remain near the land, but had to ride out several hundred yards.* The surf was very strong, the water so troubled that we could not see the bottom; and I thanked God when I found myself once more out of the power of the hostile element, and that my horse had good dry land under his hoofs again.

In the afternoon we reached *Tannette*, an independent principality or kingdom on the eastern coast of Celebes, and since 1840 a faithful ally of Holland.

The village of Tannette lies in a pleasant plain, and a large bamboo cottage in the midst of rice-fields was pointed out to me as the palace of the Queen. It is customary at Celebes not to go at once to the residence of one of these *reigning sovereigns*, but to have yourself announced, and formal permission requested for a presentation. I dispatched, therefore, a messenger to court; the invitation followed, and I prepared for its immediate acceptance. Tannette is at present ruled by a feminine monarch, who received me, on my presentation, very cordially, and led me directly to her daughter, who did not come into the reception-room. The princess was turned of nineteen years old, though not yet married. She was indeed engaged, but the alliance was postponed for another year. It is not, it appears, the custom among the higher classes here for

* The four peninsulas of which Celebes consists are so long and narrow, that you continually find yourself on the sea-coast.

Digitized by Google

girls to marry before twenty, though among the lower they become wives at eleven or twelve.

The Queen and her daughters were dressed exactly like their attendants, and the suite of girls and women kept as closely behind them as their shadows. Two of these ladies of the household bore the royal insignia, consisting of a parang, cymbals, and a sceptre. One of them had the cymbals round her neck, and struck them from time to time. The palace was about seventy feet long and thirty broad, and built, like all houses in Celebes, upon piles.

The interior was divided into three chambers and a kitchen. The first, a tolerably large room, represented the drawing-room, for receiving guests. It contained a table and some chairs, and the walls and ceiling had been covered, in honor of me, with colored calico. This work of decoration was carried on while I was paying my visit to the princesses. The two smaller rooms served the royal family and a part of the suite, who lay down any where, for sleeping and sitting rooms. They were in a most deplorable state of litter and confusion; all sorts of household utensils lay scattered about among provisions of various kinds, and parts of a beautiful tea or dinner service, cut glasses and decanters, and other fine things, such as these allies of the King of Holland frequently receive from him as presents. Baskets and boxes were piled up all round, and several clambus hung up, so that there seemed to be no room at all left for the inhabitants; and yet here these people sit, from morning till evening, doing scarcely any one thing but chewing siri and gossiping.

The only kind of work that a queen or princess ever does is the weaving a sort of ribbon, with which the men attach the kriss or parang to their waists. Her Majesty showed me one on which she was then engaged, and it was very tasteful, both in color and pattern.

She was just on the point of going to Barru, a neighboring kingdom, where she had been invited to a festival; and, as my way also lay in that direction, I went with her. We went fourteen miles on the River Tannette to the sea, on which the journey was to be continued till we came to the mouth of the River Barru; but, as the wind was much against us, we turned into a little bay,

Digitized by Google

and came to anchor for the night, the Queen and part of her people going ashore.

She had with her a suite as numerous as would have sufficed for half a dozen queens of Europe, and more than thirty girls and women, the latter attended in their turn by their husbands. These ladies all represented women of the bed-chamber, maids of honor, etc.; but many of them were so ragged, and so extremely dirty, that I did not like them to come near me, as I thought if they did I should make some disagreeable acquisitions. The illustrious company had with them such a quantity of luggage, that it seemed as if they were about to emigrate instead of making merely a visit of a few days. The whole large boat was full of boxes, bags, and baskets, great and little; as well as of mats, cushions, and pots and pans; so that we could hardly find room to sit down, but were packed like herrings. It was a most unpleasant journey.

The girls were employed the whole way in making siri, which is here done up into the form of a cigar. A betel leaf is smeared with a little lime (made from shells), a piece of areca nut, and some gambir placed on it, and it is then rolled up and tied with a fibre of the leaf. When a leaf was too damp, the court lady took up her sarang and squeezed out the superfluous moisture against her thigh.

It is the custom when a young lady receives favorable declarations of love, for her to present the swain with a siri cigar. If she does not make him this present, he may consider himself rejected.

The whole courtly company went on chewing and spitting without ceasing into little brass pans, which they carry with them for this delicate purpose, and politely hand to one another; and the Queen, at the same time, had the vermin taken out of her head, while her ladies amused themselves by performing this friendly office for each other. Considering how excessively dirty they all were, I was rather amused at the extreme care taken of the drinking-cups of the Queen. Not only had she a peculiar vessel, from which she alone was allowed to drink, but a particular one, also, to draw the water with (though it was taken from the common tub), and, moreover, a particular stand to put this particular ves-

Digitized by Google

sel upon, which is carried with her even in traveling, and has a special bag to travel in.

*August 26th.* We set off on our journey in good time, and, soon reaching the mouth of the River Barru, went six or eight miles up the stream to the neighborhood of the court we were to visit, which lies a mile from the river. The distance from Tannette is thirty-five miles. The Queen and her ladies employed the time, while the messenger was dispatched to announce our arrival, in bathing; but as they did not rub themselves in the least, they came out as dirty as they went in. To make amends for dirt, however, they smoked themselves with some sweet-smelling resin, melted in a little pan that they always carry with them, and over which they held their faces and hands—her Majesty of course taking precedence.

There was a female sovereign reigning also at Barru, and to this great personage I dispatched the Governor's letter wrapped in yellow satin.

The messenger returned with an envoy from the Queen, some attendants, and a sedan-chair, in which they carried me to the palace, *videlicet*, a bamboo-hut; where I was received by the first minister, and presented to the sovereign. The drawing-room was forty feet broad and ninety in length, but had a very gloomy and oppressive appearance: it was very low, the roof supported on many trunks of trees, and the holes that represented windows small and few in number; but both walls and ceiling were hung with colored cambric. In the background sat the Queen (who was only eighteen years old, and still unmarried), in a kind of open box, with a very fat duenna by her side engaged in fanning her. At each side of her box were two large wooden images of birds, decorated with abundance of flowers.

The Queen invited me in a friendly manner to a place at her side. She was dressed in a dark-red muslin sarang embroidered in gold; and her face was agreeable, though not handsome. The Queen of Tannette and her suite had remained behind at the landing-place when I was sent for, probably because there was no other sedan than the one sent for me. She did not make her appearance all the while I remained at court, which was about two

Digitized by Google

hours; so I presume she went directly to the abode appointed for her.

I had come exactly at the right time; for a grand festival was about to take place on occasion of the young Queen having her upper teeth filed—as important an affair as the christening of an imperial infant in Brazil, or in Europe a royal wedding—and to which all the Princes and Rajahs of the countries round were invited. On this very day a kind of introduction to the entertainments was to take place; and a dozen girls performed the customary tedious Malay dance on one side of the apartment, and as many boys of about fourteen years of age on the other side, rather further off.

Many men and women, doubtless persons of high birth, were crouched here and there in groups, looking on carelessly at the dancers; but no creature spoke a word. I and my two interpreters (but no one else) were entertained with coffee, tea, a kind of sherbet, and various sweet things, among which were some fruits preserved in sugar as nice as could be had in Europe.

The Queen expressed much regret at not being able to lodge me in her house, but she had just then so many guests, that every place was filled over and over again; she had me conducted, however, to the house of a native, and sent thither mats, cushions, and a clambu for my furniture, and fowls and some other things for my table. When a private house is assigned to you as an abode, the inhabitants are obliged to give up the large room to you; but this does not hinder them, or any other curious personages, from coming in to stare at you whenever they think proper; and if I wished to be at peace, I had no way but to keep myself hidden under my clambu; though even that did not always secure my privacy, for they lifted up the curtain and put their heads in.

The huts of the people in Celebes are very much larger than those in Java, Sumatra, and the Moluccas. Their principal room is from fifteen to twenty feet square, and there are two smaller ones adjoining it. Along the side of the larger one a space of about six feet broad is parted off for the water vessels, fire-places, and so on.

The villages are excessively dirty, full of puddles of filth, and

Digitized by Google

the people have not the good custom of the Dyaks, of washing their feet before they come into the hut, for which purpose, among them, water stands ready at the door. Here they come in just as they are.

Quite close to the house I inhabited was the place where the buffaloes bivouacked, in a bed of four feet of mud, wherein they lay comfortably buried, so that you could see nothing of them but the horns and noses.

Buffaloes are every where plentiful in this country; yet no such thing as butter or milk is to be had. For cooking, the people use cocoa-nut oil, or that made from some other fruits. With respect to clothes, food, and lodging, the inhabitants of Celebes are all pretty much on a level—equally rich, or, rather, equally poor; at least there is no difference to be perceived in their ordinary lives. Their valuables consist of gold and silver ornaments, and little gold boxes to put the ingredients of siri in, besides silken sarangs, and handsome parangs and lances. But all these things are seen only on grand and solemn occasions, such, for instance, as the festivals of teeth-filing, weddings, and royal funerals; and they spoil the appearance of the gold by coloring it so dark that it looks exactly like copper.

The sarangs are woven by the women, as they are every where, and they equal in fineness what is called in Germany English and Scotch linen. It takes even a clever and industrious woman a whole month to weave one. At the courts the sarangs are woven by the ladies and attendants, and every stranger who is presented gets one as a present, as I did every where I went.

*August 27th.* In the afternoon a few shots announced the commencement of the solemnity, and I betook myself to the palace, which I found already surrounded by a crowd; among whom were many spear-bearers, attendants of princes and great men from the neighboring states. Some of them even had coats of chain armor, which is often worn in their war. The hall was so crowded, that I had great difficulty in making my way through; but a place was assigned me among the most illustrious of the company, the numerous princes, princesses, and so forth, whom the festival had attracted hither from all the country round. I was presented

Digitized by Google

to a whole multitude of these small potentates, who swarmed hereabouts, and among others to the heir-apparent of the kingdom of Bonni. All these personages have to be maintained in grand style (for this country), and consequently become, as they do elsewhere, perfect vampires to the people.

The Queen had not yet made her appearance, for she, too, understood the advantage of keeping her subjects waiting. The floor from her apartment to the place where she was to sit was covered with white cambric muslin; and six young ladies stood ready, holding a canopy of heavy silk embroidered with gold; but a curious contrast was presented to the grandeur of the canopy itself by the six poles that supported it, which were merely rough bamboos, just as they were cut from the forest.

Music and the repeated firing of a mortar announced at length the approach of majesty; and with slow, measured steps, and almost closed eyes, she advanced under the canopy, looking like a victim, toward her place. She was dressed in two crimson sarangs, one covering the upper, and the other the lower part of her person; and on her head she wore a garland of *melate*,* with gold artificial flowers; and she was also adorned with rings, bracelets, and other jewelry.

The Queen remained sitting motionless as a statue, with her eyes cast down, while a dozen girls formed a semicircle round her and set up a religious song or hymn. Then they brought an old half-worn-out mattress and laid it down, spread a cloth over it, and put on some pillows and a coverlet. At this moment there arose suddenly a tremendous noise at the door, as if some people were trying to force their way in and others keeping them forcibly back. I thought it not unlikely that I was the occasion of the disturbance, and that the people took it amiss that I, a stranger, should be allowed to be present at such a solemnity; but tranquillity was soon restored, and I could not learn what had been the matter. My interpreter could give me no information; indeed, he was a very stupid fellow, who could scarcely ever tell me what I wanted to know.

* Melate is the name of the double jasmine, a favorite flower of the Malays and Chinese. It has an agreeable though rather powerful odor.

Digitized by Google

An elderly man was now led beneath the canopy, and a basin of water placed at his side, over which he laid his instruments. The Queen raised herself into a sitting posture on the bed; her attendants took the flowers out of her hair, and presented a small gold saucer to a very old woman sitting near—the oldest Queen, it appeared, among her Majesty's relatives—and she *spat* into it a whole mouthful of blood-red colored liquid. With this precious juice she anointed the temples and the brow of the Queen, and also wetted a thong with it, and jerked it toward her Majesty, so as to sprinkle her whole person. After this she took a box with incense, and waved it three times round her from right to left, and once in an opposite direction. The Queen had then to lie down at full length on the mattress, be covered over, and strewed with jasmines, while the Duenna took up a position in a crouching attitude at her head on one side, and the doctor on the other. Me they placed by the side of the Duenna, and quite close to the Queen, who took my hand and kept possession of it during the whole operation, looking the while very dismal, and sometimes casting imploring glances toward me, as if she wished to ask for my help. I waited with some anxiety to see what was to come next.

The doctor now threw into the basin three files of various sizes, put a small roll of palm-leaf between the Queen's teeth, then took the largest of the files and set to work in as vigorous style as if he had had a block of wood under his hands; then he continued the operation with a smaller file; and, before he came to the smallest, took out the palm-leaf from the royal mouth, and put in its place a little roll of betel. On the whole, he got through his work well and quickly, especially considering the clumsy instruments he had to employ. What the poor Queen suffered Heaven knows, but she uttered no sound of complaint, and I did not even feel her hand tremble.

As soon as the operation was over a cock was brought to the doctor, and he tore off a piece of the comb and smeared the teeth and lips of the sufferer with the blood that gushed out. At last the Duenna repeated, with a torch made of three lighted tapers tied together, the movements she had made with

Digitized by Google

the incense-box, and then the Queen returned to her former place.*

Six young ladies, probably from the royal household, were to have their teeth beautified at the same time as their Queen, but there was very little ceremony made with them. They lay down on a mat without cushions or covering, the doctor pushed the little roll of leaf into their mouths, and went at it, as sailors say, with a will, and the affair was soon over.

The whole great company assembled in the hall. Full 400 persons were entertained with tea and pastry, and to me the Queen sent also a cup of sweet sherbet and a portion of fruit preserved with sugar. I flattered myself that she took quite a personal interest in me. Neither tea nor pastry was touched, however, by any one till a long hymn had been sung—howled would be, perhaps, a more descriptive word—and even then the company partook very moderately of the entertainment.

I went home soon after the feast was over, for there was nothing to see then but the tedious monotonous dances. The dainties that had been set before me were, according to the custom here, sent after me to my abode; but I was not much tempted to touch them—they were made of rice-flour, sugar, and a great quantity of oil, and were very greasy and rancid.

*August 28th.* Remained at Barru, as the interpreter told me there was to be fête after fête given, and the Queen would therefore not be able to spare me horses and attendants for the prosecution of my journey. Subsequently I learned that this was a falsehood, and he only said so because he found himself very comfortable here and did not wish to move. The Queen sent abundance of good provisions, he found always plenty of company to gossip with, and he would therefore have been glad to remain, not days but weeks. No single entertainment took place but the one I have described; nothing, at least, but a cock-fight at the bazar, a recreation in which the people indulge every market-day.

* When the ceremony of teeth-filing is to take place for a person of princely rank, three festivals are held in honor of it, at intervals of several months. At the first the teeth are marked, to show how far they are to be filed, at the second the lower, and at the third the upper teeth are operated on.

Digitized by Google

*August 29th.* My worst trouble on this journey was that occasioned by my suite. To me, as a woman, these people did not pay the slightest attention or obedience. When I told one of the interpreters to do any thing, he told the other, and he again one of the inferior attendants, who very likely would transfer the command to the one whom he considered as his inferior, namely, the cooly. I had a crowd of people about me, and yet was as badly served as possible. The fellows would not even carry my butterfly-net for me, and I had to carry it myself. Another evil of this numerous train was, that we required so many horses and bearers. That my two chief gentlemen, the interpreters, would not travel on foot, it is hardly necessary to say; but their servants again required horses, even when they had but eight or nine miles to go in the day, and the finding these horses and bearers occupied always the fine morning hours, so that we could not get away till the sun was perfectly scorching. The case is very different, of course, when these people travel with their masters; for when they stand in awe of the stick or some other punishment they find the use of their hands and feet. I had learned that before from experience, and wished therefore only to take with me an ordinary guide and one cooly; but the Governor and Count Bentheim, though both with the kindest intentions toward me, had persuaded me to encumber myself with these troublesome helps.

We did not get into the proa to-day till ten o'clock. I had been told that for Paré-Paré, to which I wished to go, this was the nearest way; but I found afterward that this was only because there could not be got soon enough as many horses as the interpreters required.

We had been but a few hours on the sea when the people turned into a little bay, and refused to go any further that night. I was very angry, and scraped together all the hard words in Malay and Dutch that I was mistress of, to express my sense of their behavior. I threatened to write to Maros and Macassar, and even to send back the said two interpreters. This had some effect, and we went on and did not stop again till the evening, when we entered a bay, and came to anchor near a village. One of the interpreters—Tolk he was called—told me then that we could not

Digitized by Google

go on at night for fear of pirates, as the coast was infested by them; and this I knew to be true, and therefore made no opposition to remaining here for the night.

I slept in the little proa and had nothing to eat but rice; for my people had not even taken care to lay in provisions.

Besides our own proa, there were two small ones lying at anchor near us, and in the middle of the night we were awakened by a fearful scream. We started up in terror, thinking we were attacked by pirates, and my people seized their arms; but fortunately no one came near us. As to what might be passing on the other proas these men did not trouble themselves, although I urged them to go and see whether any one required our help. In the morning we learned that some thieves from the shore had swum to one of the proas and stolen several things, and that the people robbed had only awakened when the thieves were escaping with their booty.

*August 30th.* At three in the afternoon we arrived at Paré-Paré, a village lying in a beautiful bay, surrounded by a fruitful plain and gently swelling hills, and encircled in the distance by a considerable range of mountains.

There were lying in the bay a tolerable number of vessels of various sizes, which had come here on trading errands from Macassar and the neighboring islands; and the King of this little state not only gets a certain toll from them, but makes considerable profits himself in the way of commerce; so that for Celebes he may be regarded as wealthy.

As Tolk was preparing to land, in order to inquire after the abode of the King, a little canoe was pointed out to him that seemed to be coming our way, and which he was told contained the King, who was just coming home from fishing. I should really have taken him for nothing more than an ordinary fisherman, for his Majesty wore only a dirty sarang on his person and a dirty handkerchief round his head. In his residence, too, there was not much appearance of opulence, for it was only a dilapidated bamboo hut, and the entrance lay through a puddle. In a little kind of antechamber were seated several boys and girls engaged in learning to read the Koran; but the oddest thing was,

Digitized by Google

that it was being taught to them in Arabic, of which neither teachers nor pupils understand a word. They merely learn to gabble the sounds, just as in Catholic countries the boys who serve the mass sometimes do with their Latin.

From the antechamber we passed into the King's apartment—an ordinary Malay sitting-room, of which a portion was parted off by half-high bamboo partitions, and the remainder mostly occupied by elambus. There were also boxes and bales of goods heaped in various places, and every where dirt and disorder indescribable.

I understood enough of the Malay language to be able to converse with the King for several hours, and I found that he had some knowledge of geography, was in possession of several maps, and could name to me with tolerable accuracy the principal states of Europe. He had been brought up in Macassar.

He placed the map of the two hemispheres before me, and was much amazed that I could immediately show him the various parts of the world, and the chief countries; and he requested me still further to display my accomplishments by writing in his presence. I did so, and wrote as fast as possible, knowing that would astonish him, as the Malays do every thing very slowly. I had to write down for him my name, country, and birth-place, both in the German and Roman character. He questioned me concerning many natural phenomena, and begged me to tell him something about the manners and customs of various nations: in short, I had to make quite a grand display of my little stock of knowledge, and had compliments, of course; and vanity is never very nice as to what quarter praise comes from. I passed with this poor man for quite a prodigy of learning—a character not very difficult to gain in a country where the men know very little, and the women nothing at all.* He requested me to write down for him the day of my birth, which he maintained must be some peculiarly fortunate one. When he heard that the account

* The Malays, and, with few exceptions, all the inhabitants of Celebes, are Mohammedans; but the female sex here enjoy the same rights as the male. The eldest child of a king, of whatever sex, succeeds the father in the government; and should he leave a widow, she reigns in his place, even though there should be a grown-up son. Girls also attend the schools as well as boys.

Digitized by Google

of my travels was printed in a book, he declared he would gladly give 100 rupees for a copy in his own language. What a gallant King! What might I not have done, and how might the plan of my travels have been extended, if I could only have induced people in Europe to think as much of me!

I expressed a wish to be presented to the Queen, and after a considerable lapse of time there appeared a woman so old as to have withered into a mere skeleton; and I was in doubt whether she was the mother or the grandmother of the King, since he did not look much more than thirty. Besides this, she was blind of one eye, and her hair was partly dyed a red-brown, partly black and green, and hung down over her shoulders, tangled and matted as if it had not had a comb in it for weeks. There could hardly be imagined an uglier representative of age.

It was not till six o'clock in the evening I got into the dwelling appointed for me; and in consequence of the negligence of my attendants, I had had nothing to eat for six-and-twenty hours. They had not carried water enough to boil the rice, and, though it happened that they had had boiled rice enough for the preceding day, when this morning I required some food, there was none to be had, and then it came out that there was no water for cooking: one servant laid it upon the other, and the truth was, that no one had thought about it. When we got to Paré-Paré, I commissioned Tolk to get me a meal ready as soon as possible, and by the time my interview with his Majesty was over I was painfully hungry. I reached my temporary dwelling, saw smoke and steam rising as if there was much cookery going on, and flattered myself I inhaled some savory odors; but, alas! the answer to my inquiries on this interesting subject was, "Not yet ready;" and I had to wait two mortal hours more. At least I hoped I should be rewarded for my patience with something better than usual; but there was, after all, only rice and a fish, stewed in some acid-tasting leaves, with water and cocoa-nut oil. It was necessary to have fasted six-and-twenty hours to enjoy such a dinner as this.

*May* 1*st*. This morning I paid the farewell visit to my polite king, and presented his wife with some bottles of eau de Cologne, and himself with a large colored print of the Crystal Palace in

Digitized by Google

Hyde Park. To impress him with an idea of the greatness of my own "Sultan" (the Emperor), I said, "Look, here is his palace. It is so high that the highest trees can stand in it, and so large that it takes half an hour to walk round it." He was much astonished, and asked many questions concerning both Sultan and palace. He thought, however, that this one was too transparent; that the sun must blaze and burn in it so much that it would be impossible to sleep in the daytime, and he asked whether all houses were built in this manner. I said, "No; only the European Sultans live in that way, that the people may always be able to see what their fathers are doing."

After a few hours' gossip of this kind we parted, and I got away about eleven o'clock.

---

## CHAPTER XII.

Sidenring.—The Lakes of Tempe and Lagusi.—A Royal Banquet.—Return to Sidenring.—The Deer Hunt.—Visit to the Sultan of Goa.—Departure from Celebes.—Surabaya.—A Malay Wedding.—A Ghost Story.—Return to Batavia.

FROM Paré-Paré I traveled on horseback to *Batu-Masapaija*, a ride of twelve miles. This place is a country seat of the King of Sidenring, who lives alternately here and at *Telé-Adjé*, on the lake of Tempe.

The road led in part over a low mountain ridge, which, with the exception of alang-alang and short grass, was destitute of vegetation, and covered with loose stones, over which our poor animals had to climb like goats.

We met many pack-horses, mostly carrying rice to the harbor of Paré-Paré; and besides these there were so many others ranging about in wild freedom, that horses appeared to constitute the chief population of the country.

The kings of this region keep great studs, and make large sums as horse-dealers.

For several hours the road had been continually rising; but it

Digitized by Google

had lain between hills that shut out every prospect. At length, however, on emerging from a narrow valley, we were abundantly rewarded by one of the finest views perhaps in all Celebes. An almost boundless plain lay spread out before us, and in the midst of it glittered, like two silver mirrors, the lakes *Tamporang-Uroi* and *Tamporang-Cabaija*, usually called the lakes of Tempe. The first of these lakes forms a long and irregular, the second a fine round basin. Flourishing rice plantations and large villages announced the prosperity of the district. In the foreground rose many isolated rocks and hills, which, from the height and distance at which we stood, might have passed for *tumuli*, so small and neat did they appear on this enormous plain; and in the distance grand mountains upreared themselves like walls built to guard this peaceful valley from the storms of the outer world.

Slowly did I ride down again into the plain, for at every step I lost some feature of the glorious picture; and at last the grandeur had all disappeared, and our path lay once more between hills, and descended till we saw no more than some scattered huts, some stables belonging to the king, and some small fields of maize and rice; and so it went on till we reached Batu-Masapaija, where we found the sovereign in person.

Although the King of Sidenring belongs to the three greatest in Celebes, he lives in the same poor manner as the pettiest Rajah. His palace is of bamboo wicker-work, thatched with straw, and looks like a decayed barn.

The interior consists of a great room full of perforated partitions and dirty clambus.

There were some fire-places at the entrance, on which some half-extinguished brands made just fire enough to fill the place with smoke; and the foreground was swarming with loungers of all ages and both sexes—men, women, and children.

Here was a group crouched on their haunches, smoking and gossiping; there a few more of the sluggards were asleep, stretched out on the ground, and snoring one against the other. In one place appeared within a half open clambu a disheveled head; in another sprawled some naked children covered with dirt; whichever way I looked, it was a deplorable sight.

Digitized by Google

The royal pair were also crouched upon their haunches, on a tribune about two feet high, chewing away at the siri like their subjects, and so getting through the livelong day. Here and there, near the tribune, was a pile of cushions and baskets; ragged clothes hung round, and among them a handsome embroidered military uniform, a present from the King of Holland. The king pointed out this article to me, and begged me to make him a commoner one of the same sort. Such is the fate of the traveler. The King of Paré-Paré would have given a hundred rupees for one of my books, and this one wanted to make me his tailor. I avoided compliance with his modest request, by telling him I was a person of too high rank to do any work.

I obtained shelter under a clambu in this ragamuffin palace, and also some food, though of a very indifferent quality, and but little of it. They brought me some little morsels of meat in a vessel the size of my hand, a few fish three or four inches long, and the neck, head, and pinions of a chicken. After this dinner the king paid me a visit; and, as he happened to see some insects that I had caught on my way, and heard that I set a value on them, he promised, quite of his own accord, to send some people into the woods and get a little collection ready for me at my return.

I was to be back in a few days again, as I was going no further off than for an excursion, by the way of the lakes, to Lagusi, the residence of the Queen of Wadju, whose kingdom borders on that of Bonni; a visit to the latter, as I have already said, was interdicted me. When I took my leave, his Majesty of Sidenring promised, on my return, to have a deer-hunt in my honor.

*May 2d.* We did not ride to-day more than nine miles, and the road lay through a great plain between almost uninterrupted rice-fields, to the vicinity of the first lake, where we took up our abode in an open hut, that is to say, under a roof of leaves. We passed through several large villages, among which *Awarity* deserves especial mention, as it consists of more than 200 houses. Throughout this kingdom I found both houses and villages very large.

To-day, again, my meal consisted of nothing more than rice and

Digitized by Google

some little fish, and merely through the carelessness of my attendants; for in this country it is the custom, where you are received with any thing like hospitality, to ask for whatever you require; and had they requested to have a few fowls and some fruit, etc., it would have been given with the greatest readiness. But they did not make the request, even when I told them to do so, as they did not like the trouble of cooking.

*May* 3*d*. *Lagusi*, thirty miles. This day I was really excessively angry with my people. When I came in the morning to the banks of the river, on which we had to go a short distance to the lake, I found no proa in readiness, and I had to wait a whole hour, standing in the burning sun, and urging them on to their work. At length, with the utmost conceivable slowness, they pushed a hollowed trunk of a tree into the water, and covered it with an awning of leaves so low that I could scarcely sit upright. I stepped with some reluctance into this dangerous and inconvenient boat; but what was my consternation when I saw that as many passengers were to follow as could possibly find room on it! I endeavored to oppose their entrance; but neither Tolk nor Sendling (the interpreters) paid any attention to my entreaties, but allowed as many to come in as chose, and as could any how squeeze themselves into the small space. During the whole passage, which lasted nine hours, I had to sit cross-legged like the rest, for want of room for my feet—a cause of great suffering to me, though not of course to the rest of the company, as they are accustomed to it. Among the passengers was one old man, who, though he did not look so very infirm, was soon unable to sit up; and in order to make room for him to lie down, we were compelled to squeeze ourselves still closer together. I afterward found that his extraordinary weakness proceeded from his being a great opium smoker. He carried pipe, opium-lamp, and the whole apparatus with him, and smoked and slept alternately during the whole passage.

The two lakes, whose united length I estimate at about thirty miles, and their greatest breadth at ten, are connected by the River Watta with a channel about a mile and a half long. The lakes are shallow, one of them, indeed, so much so that it seems proba-

Digitized by Google

ble that it will in no long time be converted into a marsh. The whole bottom of it is already covered with plants, which in some places appear above the surface like islands. The shore is by no means pretty, and many parts of it are covered by jungle-grass. On the larger lake lie several considerable villages, which have in the naked country but a poor appearance, as they have neither tree nor bush to shelter them. The districts bordering on the lake form parts of the little kingdoms of Sidenring, Wadjo, and others; and the mountains of Bonni also, distant only a day's journey, can be seen from here. Lagusi lies on the Tjenrana, which falls into the great lake, but at a distance of eighteen miles from the mouth.

When I left the boat to walk a quarter of a mile to the royal abode, the whole population of the village accompanied me, for mine was the first European face that had ever been seen here. The whole body tried to enter with me into the palace (a bamboo hut, of course), but they were, as might be expected, forcibly put back.

The queen kept me waiting a long while before she made her appearance. She was an old, but lively and vigorous looking woman, and talked a great deal, and with much emphasis. She said she was seventy-six, but, judging by the age of her youngest son, she could not have been so much. The people here, when they are old, generally try to make themselves out older, in order to add to their dignity; but besides this, they have a very imperfect way of reckoning, and often do not themselves know how many years they should count.

After having partaken of the customary refreshments of tea and sweetmeats, I wished to retire, for I was half lame from sitting nine hours in that cramped posture; but the great lady would not allow this; she was too much entertained with the conversation of my interpreter, who told her all the news of the great town of Macassar. She was extremely cheerful and animated, although, as she herself told me, with truly stoical indifference, she had buried a son only three days before.

That is the way with these people. As long as the body is in the house they scream and howl, and behave as if they were fran-

Digitized by Google

tic with sorrow; but when it is once buried, the sorrow is buried with it, and they are quite comfortable and merry again.

The queen wore mourning for her son, which consisted of a piece of dark cloth passed round her head, so as quite to conceal her hair, and hanging down upon her shoulders.

Much against my will, I was compelled to sup with her Majesty, and the supper was no better than usual. There was a crowd of little dishes, the entire contents of which would by no means have overloaded the stomach of one person with a good appetite. One dish contained a single hard-boiled egg cut into four parts, another three very tiny potatoes, a third the half of a fish three inches long, a fourth a few slices of cucumber, a fifth two very little onions, and so forth.

In the midst of this splendid banquet was placed a very large closely-covered soup-tureen, and upon it a great ladle; on this giant dish I centred all my hopes and expectations, dreaming of boiled fowls, and Heaven knows what dainties, that I supposed it to contain. I took a good portion of rice upon my plate, thinking it would be good with the delicate meat and sauce of the fowl. Still the cover was not raised. I thought I should like a little salt to my rice, and asked for some; and then, at last, off went the cover, the great ladle was plunged in, and about a thimbleful of fine white salt presented to me. The grand dish was merely a monster salt-cellar.

I felt ready to turn into a pillar of salt myself with grief and disappointed hope.

Not less odd was the manner of serving water. Two handsome cut-glass decanters, in cases, had been placed before us; and, as decanters are mostly accompanied by glasses, I waited some time in hopes of seeing them brought; but as none came, I asked for them, and was then requested by her Majesty to drink out of the bottle. I did so accordingly, and not only I and she, but the two interpreters, and every one else.

Among the fruits was one called *Durian*, in form and size resembling a middle-sized melon, which smells so strongly of garlic, that you can perceive its presence forty yards off. The interior consists of very large white beans lying apart from each other.

Digitized by Google

I had seen this fruit at Borneo, as well as in the Moluccas; and the Europeans declare that, if you can get accustomed to the smell, the taste is very fine, but that the best way to eat it is when sitting in a boat on a river, so that you can dip your hands every moment into the water. I must own, however, that, though I made several attempts, I never could succeed in liking it—the perfume was too powerful.

The court lady, or attendant, who waited at table, wore on the thumb of the left hand a *nail-case* at least five inches long; and when I expressed my astonishment at this enormous nail, saying I had never seen any thing like it even in China, the land of long nails, she smiled, and drew off the nail-case, and then I saw that it was merely an ornament, and that the nail it was intended to cover was at most of the length of half an inch. The case was the same with others whom I saw wearing this curious decoration—with the exception of the queen's son, who really boasted a nail two inches long. This fashion of wearing nail-cases I never saw any where else than here.

When the meal was over, I was obliged so far to disregard ceremony as to beg permission to retire. The queen expressed much regret at not being able to receive me in her ruin of a palace, but requested I would follow her son to his, where I should find every thing ready for my reception, and should also be presented to his wife, and entertained once more with tea and pastry. This honor, however, I was obliged to decline, and I stepped as quickly as possible under my clambu, and there enjoyed the rest I so much needed.

The prince was still a young man, but his features and complexion betrayed the habitual opium smoker; and his first occupation in the morning was always to light his pipe. This poison, alas! is now continually brought to Celebes.

After the breakfast, which was quite worthy of the preceding evening's supper, I went with the prince to pay a visit to the queen and take my leave. As I entered, my attention was attracted by three boxes, which I had not noticed the preceding evening, and I soon found that two were to serve as seats for her Majesty and myself, and the third to figure as the table.

Digitized by Google

I had to wait half an hour for the queen, who, I was told, was making her toilet—and such a toilet as it was when it was made! She had on a loose white blouse over her sarang, and her head was, as it had been the day before, wrapped in a handkerchief. By way of decoration, she wore two rows of hollow gold balls, of the form and size of eggs, which were crossed over her breast and shoulders; and at each side of the bosom hung a flat round piece of gold plate, set with precious stones, that might have been taken for an order, if such a symbol of civilization could have been expected at Celebes. Her *chaussure*, however, struck me most; it consisted of shoes cut in the European shape, but not out of silk or stuff, but of gold plate—soles and all—and adorned in the front with precious stones.

When the salutations were over, the queen told me that she had considered it proper to receive me thus in royal state.

There was a meal to be taken on this occasion too; but while we were engaged at it the queen's son was sent for to view a house where, in the night, thieves had broken in and stolen, in silver and jewels, to the value of 800 rupees.

The Bugis people, the chief population of this district, are the most notorious thieves and pirates of the whole Archipelago, and also the cleverest and handsomest. Both men and women are tall, well-proportioned, and have much better features than the Malays: their noses are not so flat—some, indeed, have quite good-looking noses—and the jaws do not project so much. Their eyes are fine, with an intelligent expression, and their color is a light reddish-brown.

The women of Celebes, as I have already observed, enjoy equal rights with the men; and when a man has a wife, he can not take another without her consent. The women are also not excluded from public affairs, and the inhabitants of Wadju (Lagusi) even prefer being governed by a woman. They are a peaceful, commercial people, and they say that the reigns of queens are less disturbed by wars, and more honest, as well as more tranquil, than those of the men.

At eleven o'clock I bade adieu to my royal hostess, as I had ordered my people early this morning to have every thing in read-

Digitized by Google

iness for our departure. I found, nevertheless, when I went down to the shore, that there was nothing ready, not even a boat; and it cost an infinity of squabbling before I could induce them to bring out the old trunk of a tree that we had had for a boat the day before. The return passage was, if possible, still more unpleasant than the coming had been. The people rowed so slowly that we seemed scarcely to move, and I had to remain no less than twenty hours—from noon one day till eight the next morning—in this wretched little watery prison. During the night the men laid aside their oars and went to sleep; so that it was lucky for us that the weather was fine and the lake smooth, though our canoe did, nevertheless, rock so much with every movement of the sleepers that I feared every moment it would lose its balance.

*May 5th.* When we arrived at our leafy bower once more, we rested for two hours; and then we mounted our horses and rode back to *Batu-Masapaija* and the monarch of Sidenring.

My first question was about my insects, and behold the king presented to me—the empty box! These people promise any thing with the greatest readiness, but keeping the promise is quite another thing. I then reminded the king of the deer-hunt, and he put me off with a "to-morrow."

On taking my leave, I thanked him formally for the collection of insects he had procured for me, and the fine stag-hunt he had exhibited for my amusement; and then begged his permission to visit the mountainous district of Duri, whose inhabitants—a race of Alforas, and an exceedingly wild one—are allies of the King of Sidenring, and are said to live in caves. This journey did not, however, please Tolk and Sendling, for they would have had to travel on foot; and though I understood almost nothing of the Bugis language, in which they were speaking with the king, I could make out very well that they were trying to induce him to throw difficulties in the way.

The king told me in Malay that he was not just now on the best terms with the people of that country, and could not, therefore, grant my request; but if I had not had these idle, troublesome people with me, I should have obtained my wish, for I saw that the king might have been persuaded. He saw that I was



Digitized by Google

vexed, and, in order to pacify and amuse me, promised that he would really have the hunt the following day.

I passed the whole evening with this royal family, and saw with pleasure that the king and his wife were on the most friendly terms with each other, although they must have been long married, as they had fourteen children. I heard also that the king had but one wife, and that domestic life was in Celebes generally on a better footing than in the other islands of the Archipelago. The men seldom take more than one wife at a time, and divorces are unfrequent.

The royal pair asked me innumerable questions, and begged me particularly to give them the medicine which, in their opinion, I must use, or I could not at my age be so strong; and the king declared he could not himself, far less his wife, go through what I had, though they were so much younger than me. It was in vain I assured them the difference was chiefly consequent on their mode of life; they persisted in attributing it to medicine.

The conversation now again turned on my *Sultan*, a very favorite theme of all these small royalists. They asked me where he lived, what he had for dinner, how often I went to visit him, and so forth; and I described to them the mode of life of the Imperial family as minutely as if I had lived among them from my youth up.

*May 6th.* Yesterday the queen declared she too would be of the hunting party, and I was greatly surprised at so heroic a resolution; for that a queen should leave her house, except on some very important occasion, is an almost unheard-of thing here. The Queen of Barru, for instance, told me that, though only eighteen years of age, she had for eight years not gone 200 yards from her dwelling.

When we were about to set out for the hunt, I asked where the queen was, and I was told she could not go with us, as she was ill of a fever; I rather think, though, that it was only what we in Germany call the lazy fever.

The scene of action was a beautiful grassy plain, encircled with woods: the deer were hunted with dogs, who tore the poor animals terribly, and then they were killed by the men with spears.

Digitized by Google

Some of the hunters were mounted, and drove in the game; but I and the king merely sat in the shade of a tree and looked on. It was a detestable kind of amusement, which I hope I may never witness again. After the hunt was over the hunters all collected round us, and formed such picturesque groups, that I greatly regretted not being able to take a sketch of them. The horsemen sat with the most careless ease in all kinds of attitudes on their horses, and yet as securely as if they had been on the ground; and the rest disposed themselves in no less striking groups upon the grass. The handkerchiefs that constitute their head-dress were twisted in the most various forms, and, as they always stiffen them very much, they can twist them into any shape they like. The long white sarang, too, was wrapped round their powerful frames in the most becoming manner, or fell in rich folds from their shoulders. The contemplation of this *tableau vivant* afforded me far more pleasure than the cruel hunt.

A shoulder of venison from one of the slain deer was prepared for our supper; but, alas! the mode of preparation made it almost uneatable. The meat was flung, without even washing or salting, fairly into the fire, and left there scarcely long enough to get warm; so that, though it was quite black outside, and smelt intolerably of smoke, the blood was gushing out from every part.

So lives a king, who, as he himself told me, had in the preceding year lost 8000 rupees at cock-fighting, and the year before that won 10,000 at the same noble sport!

On the morning of the 7th of May I took leave of the royal gambler, and traveled back at a rapid rate. I stopped at Paré-Paré, Baru, and Tannette only just long enough to take the necessary repose, and on the 9th reached once more the frontier of the Dutch possessions, which begin two miles from the capital of the little kingdom of Tannette. At two o'clock I was at Mandalle; and, in order to gain one day's journey, I went forward six miles to Segiri on foot; for by the time fresh horses could have been procured, it would have been night, and the roads were too dreadful to venture upon in the dark. My suite did not at all approve of this; but that did not trouble me much, and I set off alone, knowing well that they must follow me.

Digitized by Google

We had to cross such deep morasses that at one place they had a good deal of trouble to drag me through. I sank in at every step almost to the waist, and they had to pull me out again; yet on the following morning I was so entirely recovered from my fatigue that I rode thirty-two miles, through roads as bad as those of yesterday, and the same deep marshes, which, even for travelers on horseback, are very toilsome. I got to Maros, nevertheless, in quite good condition, but my two interpreters were so affected by the fatigue that they were unwell for several days.

I remained a few days more at Maros, and visited from here the Prince *Aru-Sinri*, former minister of Bonni, who resides about six miles off. His wife, *Aru-Palengerang*, had the right of succession to the lately deceased king, who left no children behind him. She too was childless, and had adopted a nephew, who, when the king died, managed to gain such a party for himself that he was able to drive out his benefactress. She and her husband then threw themselves into the arms of the Dutch government, who built them a pretty bamboo house, and assigned them a pension.

In all Celebes I did not see a princely mansion so well kept as this. The interior was divided into several apartments, with a separate kitchen; the servants were very neatly dressed; the table was elegantly served, the dishes good; and in no European house could more order and cleanliness be found.

The Prince *Aru-Sinri* and his wife were also distinguished above their compatriots for qualities both of the head and heart.

On the 13th of May I rode back to Macassar, where I remained till the 20th, and, before my departure, paid a visit to the Sultan of Goa, in company with a Mr. Weiergang, a merchant of this place.

The kingdom of Goa commences at Macassar itself, and the capital is only four miles off. This kingdom consists of the fragments of the former kingdom of Macassar, once the most powerful of Celebes, and which possessed an excellent army, ruled over many of the surrounding islands, and was considerably advanced toward civilization.

The Sultan of Goa inhabits a much handsomer house than his

Digitized by Google

royal colleagues of Sidenring and Paré-Paré. It is boarded and adorned with carving; but the interior presented much the same scene as that of the other royal mansions—a superfluity of attendants and servants, a chaos of clambus, and innumerable chests and boxes, piled one above another.

The sultan was just having a new house built, although his old one was still in perfect preservation. He would not inhabit it any more because his father had died in it. I rather think this was not the effect of sensibility, but of superstition—for I have never among these people seen any signs of sorrow for the dead.

Near the capital lie the graves of the princely family—simple stone-covered monuments, sometimes standing in a small stone hall.

On the 20th of May I left Macassar in the steamer *Benda*, to land for the last time on the hospitable shores of Java, where we arrived after a passage of two days and a half, and came to anchor in the roads of Surabaya. During my first stay at this place I had become acquainted with Madame Brumond, wife of Domine Brumond, and she had been so kind as to invite me to make her house my home on my return from the Moluccas and Celebes. The Resident, Mr. Van Perez, with whom I formerly staid, had since been summoned to Batavia, to fill the office of Counselor of India, one of the next in dignity to that of Governor General. There are four of these counselors, each with a yearly salary of 36,000 rupees.

I met with such a cordial reception from my new friends, and, during an illness that unfortunately attacked me here, such kind care, that I had no feeling of being a stranger in a far country.

To the fever that had troubled me from time to time ever since I had left Sumatra was now associated an affection of the back, the effect, I believe, of the toils and hardships I had undergone in my many wanderings in the Moluccas and Celebes. This illness imbittered much my residence at Surabaya, and obliged me to renounce my project of a visit to the volcano of Brumo and other places. I merely employed the time of my convalescence in making myself acquainted with Surabaya and its environs.

With Mr. Brumond for my good and courteous *cicerone*, I be-

Digitized by Google

gan my tour of inspection with the mosque, which is the finest in Java, and was built in quite recent times by a Dutch architect. It has a very handsome effect, though its style is neither pure Moorish nor Gothic, but a mixture of those and other styles. It forms, with the two minarets and the fine forty-feet long aisle connecting them, a kind of octagon. The building itself is of brick, but the front of the roof, as well as the entrances, are adorned with handsome wood carving. The attendants did not refuse to admit us into the interior, but required us to pull off our shoes; Mr. Brumond, however, considering my recent illness, did not like me to do this, but gave the servant of the mosque a silver rupee, that had somehow the effect of obviating the profanation of my *chaussure*, and enabling us to proceed without any further difficulty.

The interior was nothing more than a handsome hall, with a small pulpit, some lamps, mats, and a great many brass spittoons.

These last articles strike the eye of a stranger not very agreeably; but these siri-chewers can not do without spitting, and in such a holy place they must not spit on the ground.

From the mosque we went to the neighboring Malay campan, which did not please me at all. The bamboo huts, which are not here built upon piles, stand in two rows, forming a narrow street. The filth and litter of every house is thrown before the door, and toward evening swept together and burned. We happened to come unto the campan just as this operation was going on, and could hardly get through the street for the smoke and stench it occasioned. I wonder how it must look here in the rainy season, when they can not sweep and burn! It is not surprising that the people are constantly troubled with fevers and cutaneous diseases.

The huts are extraordinarily small and oppressive, without windows, and with an entrance so low that you can not get in without stooping. In the interior each of these snails' houses is divided into three parts, which are really nothing but holes. The first hole, the only one into which (by the open door) some light enters, contains a sleeping-place on the right and left, and during the day serves as a work-shop or sitting-room. The second hole contains on one side the sleeping-place of the master of the house,

Digitized by Google

and on the opposite one a wooden bench. The third hole is the fire-place. In each of these there is only just room enough to get through.

The furniture consists of some mats, cushions, earthen pots, and a wooden chest upon wheels, containing all the most valuable possessions of the family, clothes, weapons, trinkets, etc., and which, in case of fire, can be easily rolled out.

The people appeared to me now much less ugly than I had thought them when I first came to Borneo, Java, etc.; for as I had now for more than a year seen little else than Malays, habit had begun to manifest its leveling influence. The ugliest thing appears less ugly in time; and in the same way, the most beautiful landscape does not make half as much impression when you have seen it often as it did the first time.

In the evening we paid a visit to the Chinese campan, which, with its pretty houses and remarkable cleanliness, forms a favorable contrast to that of the Malays. The houses are built of brick, but are as neat and white as if the whole campan had been that moment finished. They are not large, but enough so to lodge even a numerous family with convenience. Neither windows nor doors are wanting—the former provided with handsome balconies, and all the wood and frame work painted in dark oil colors. The front of the house is encircled by a veranda, from which you enter a reception-room, which takes up the whole length of the house, and where you find the ground covered with matting and the walls with looking-glasses and pictures, and a sufficient number of tables, chairs, and presses. In the background are doors leading into the ordinary sitting-room, and almost in every house there is a small altar in the state apartment.

As we entered several of the houses we found the inhabitants already seated at supper. The wives of the Chinese, like those of the Malays, are excluded from their company at meals, and dine and sup in the kitchen, or in their own little chambers. The table was covered with a white cloth; there were plates, glasses, and bottles upon it, as well as good food; one could have joined them in the meal with pleasure, while when the Malays eat they are disgusting to look at, crouching on the ground wherever they

Digitized by Google

may happen to be, and cramming handfuls of rice into their wide-open jaws.

The Chinese in the towns are merchants or artisans; they are unwearied in their industry, but not unwilling to allow themselves some domestic conveniences and comforts. The Malays, on the contrary, live, even when they are opulent, in the same wretched manner as the poor, and in equal dirt and destitution.

The only expense and luxury of the rich is in costly arms and gold and silver trinkets, which they lock up and preserve carefully, so that it is only on extraordinary occasions, or on special request, that you ever get to see them. Their ordinary costume is an old sarang, and a dirty handkerchief round the head. Malays who have received appointments under government, as regents, and so forth, do indeed form an exception, as they generally endeavor to vie in their expenses and manner of life with the Dutch residents.

The next day we visited the great Malay cemetery, part of which is called "the holy." It is not only surrounded by a wall, but the interior is divided into many compartments, also inclosed by walls or palisades, and, according to the holiness or the high rank of the persons reposing there, kept more or less in order. There are here many graves of sultans, from the "good old times" when sultans reigned in Surabaya; but they are all extremely simple, consisting only of a slab of stone, sometimes upright, mostly damaged or sunk in. Some of these graves are regarded as so sacred, that among the lower classes of Surabaya no marriage is concluded without the bridal pair coming hither to beg a blessing on the union in a short prayer. We were lucky enough when we came to meet one of these parties. The bride, a rather corpulent and very ugly girl of twelve, was carried in a small litter, open at both sides, in order that she might be seen in her bridal finery. She wore a silk sarang that reached only to a little above the hips, and thence upward she was naked, but painted all over with yellow color that looked like a tightly-fitting *tricot;* and head, neck and arms were decorated, or rather loaded, with ornaments. Neither the silk sarang nor the ornaments were, probably, the property of the bride, but merely hired for the occasion. She was accompanied by many women and girls, and the bridegroom, a handsome

Digitized by Google

young fellow of about twenty, by a troop of lads and men. He was neatly dressed, but not differently from his companions.

Besides this wedding of a pair belonging to the lower class, I was present at another during my stay in Surabaya, where the parties were of higher rank—the bride being the sister of a Regent. The festival in this case lasted several days, and the first ceremonies took place in the temple; at which I could not be present, as I had the fever on that day. The bride does not follow the bridegroom to his house on this first day, but returns to her own. On the second the festival is celebrated in the house of the bride, and toward evening she is brought in solemn procession to her husband. Foremost in the troop came many young men and boys of the lower class in their common dresses. They carried palm branches on high poles, with colored handkerchiefs fluttering like flags in the breeze; after them came musicians with gongs and drums, and then a kind of body-guard with very heavy spears, one division of which wore dark brown, and the other light, sarangs, which hung in abundant folds to the middle of the leg. The upper parts of their bodies and their feet were painted of a light yellow, and on their heads they wore a sort of crown of gold or brass plate. They had a very gay, and at the same time martial, appearance. Between every two divisions there was music. The bridegroom came driving in a European carriage with four horses, and accompanied by two female relations. On arriving at the house, the company and attendants ranged themselves in two lines, between which, with bowed head and downcast eyes, walked the bridegroom to the hall of reception, where the bride, surrounded by women and girls, was sitting on a beautiful carpet. Silently, without any salutation, without even raising his eyes, the bridegroom took his place at her side, and both remained till nine o'clock sitting as mute and motionless as statues.

Bride and bridegroom were dressed very nearly alike, in long silk sarangs embroidered with gold; but the bridegroom had the upper part of his body naked and painted yellow, while the bride was closely covered with yellow silk. Her arms only were naked, and painted yellow. Both had, with other decorations, wreaths of melatte on their heads, and three strings of these flowers falling

Digitized by Google

from the temple to the breast. The bridal pair was surrounded by friends and relations, but all sat dumb and motionless. At eight o'clock tea and confectionery were served, and the company opened their mouths to eat and drink, but still not for any other purpose. Not one word was spoken. On this day the bride is given to the bridegroom, but he is not yet allowed to take her home, but must pass even the third evening in her parents' house.

Here, as in Celebes, it is not the custom for girls to marry very young among persons of wealth and rank. The usual age is between eighteen and twenty, and in many cases the bride is first seen by the bridegroom in the mosque.*

Another great fête is usually held by the rich Javanese when a youth has completed his school education, when his relations and teachers assemble, and the former question him about all that he has learned.

Of the public institutions in Surabaya, the Hospital is in every respect the one that pleased me best. It is the most complete and well arranged that I have even seen; and that is saying much, for in all the Dutch settlements the hospitals are admirable. This one has room for 800 patients; it is divided into several departments in separate buildings, each surrounded by meadows and gardens full of trees and flowers. In one of these gardens I saw a water palm, the most remarkable of the family to be found in Java and Sumatra. The leaves are from twelve to fifteen feet long, and shoot out singly from the stem, which is scarcely fifteen feet high. Exactly at the top they fold one over the other, so as to form a most perfect and regular fan. The stem and the lower parts of the leaves contain water. This palm is a native of Madagascar, but in Java and Sumatra is only cultivated as an ornament in the gardens of Europeans.

The prisons of Surabaya are, like those in Batavia, so organized that one might almost say the humanity toward criminals was carried too far. The Dutch soldiers† have handsome rooms,

* Among the European residents extremely early marriages have been so common, that the government has found it necessary to prohibit their taking place before the *fifteenth* year!

† The native soldiers are not put into the same prisons with the Dutch.

Digitized by Google

pleasant gardens, and excellent food. Native criminals are kept together in large rooms and employed in various kinds of work (sometimes outside the prison), and receive a few doits for siri. None of the prisoners are chained, but the natives wear an iron ring round the neck. Attempts at escape are, however, very rare. The natives in general are said to stand much more in awe of the laws than the Europeans. The prisons were very full when I visited them, having no less than 1200 criminals, mostly thieves, confined in them. Very serious crimes are punished by banishment to various islands, particularly the Moluccas, where the convicts work for the government or are let out to private persons.

There are here some works for the putting together and repair of steam-engines, which I also visited. These are very necessary in Java, as there are many steamboats, sugar-mills, and other establishments, for which engines are required to be kept in order. They could, indeed, be made altogether here, but would cost much more than in Europe; for the natives are not compelled by the government to work in the factories, and could only be induced to do so by high payment. In these works 600 men are constantly employed; they are all natives but the superintendents, and receive from 30 to 120 doits a day.

Not less complete in its department is the Arsenal, where muskets are made, and all kinds of cannon and bomb-shells cast. Gun-carriages are also made for the artillery, and all kinds of saddlery work for the army carried on here almost wholly by native workmen. They are found very docile, especially skillful in imitative works, quiet, industrious, and not given to gossiping, quarreling, and drinking. In both these factories I saw well-finished articles of various kinds that had proceeded from the hands of natives; among other things, I remember a great state seal, engraved on brass, which could not have been better done by the best seal engraver of Europe.*

* I saw at the house of Colonel Van Schierbrandt, in Batavia, a complete set of furniture in the Gothic style, that he had had made in Surabaya. The chairs, sofas, etc., were most elaborately carved, and the upholstery work equally well finished. But Colonel Schierbrandt had had to give the workmen drawings of the very minutest details; from their own invention they can do nothing.

Digitized by Google

I saw also the magnificent dry-dock, for the repair even of the largest ships. The basin is connected with the sea by a canal, and by means of a steam-engine the whole of the water can be pumped out of it in the course of five or six hours. When there are no government vessels undergoing repair, trading ones are received, and a certain charge made for them per day, according to the tonnage. A ship of 1200 tons was lying in the basin just then, and had to pay 300 rupees a day for the place.

This establishment must be very profitable to the government, for the cost of maintaining it is very small, and there is never any deficiency of ships wanting repair.

I was, as I have said, so unfortunate as not to be able to visit either the volcanic mountain of Brumo, or the "Valley of the Dead," of which some travelers have given so fearful a description, and where the renowned Upas-tree stands, the exhalations from which were stated in the old accounts to be so poisonous and deadly, both to man and beast, that no living creature could approach it.

The juice of this tree, as the story went, was used to poison arrows, and the sultans of the country used to send only condemned criminals to collect it. Those who had the almost unlooked-for good fortune to return unharmed were pardoned, and absolved from any further punishment. If, however, they did not take care in approaching the tree not to get to leeward of it, but allowed the wind to blow toward them, their death was certain. Further, it was stated that the valley was full of skeletons of men and animals; that if a bird flew over it, it fell down dead, etc. Now I have been assured, on good authority, that there is not one syllable of truth in all this! There does, indeed, stand a Upas-tree in a certain little valley; but men and animals may approach it, and, let the wind blow how it likes, without suffering any damage. Here and there, it appears, there do issue certain noxious gases from apertures in the earth, just as they do in the Grotto dei Cani at Naples, but they do not rise more than two feet. Little dogs are sometimes taken there, in order to exhibit this phenomenon to strangers, and they are seized with convulsions, and would die if they were not taken away.

Digitized by Google

In Java I never saw a Upas-tree, but several in Borneo, to which I often came near enough. The people certainly did warn me not to touch it, as they said it would cause my hand to swell, and pain me for some hours; but probably even this much may not be true, though I thought it better not to try.

Speaking of marvels, I am reminded of rather a puzzling occurrence that took place in Java a few years ago, and caused such a sensation that it attracted the attention of Government.

In the Residence of Cheribon was a small house which the natives declared to be quite full of ghosts. As soon as ever the evening set in, there began in the rooms a continual throwing of stones and spitting of siri, without the perpetrator in either case being visible to mortal eye. The stones and the expectoration fell quite close to the people, but without exactly touching any of them; though this undoubtedly formidable shower seemed to be somehow specially directed against a certain little child. So much was said of this inexplicable affair, that at last the Government authorities commissioned a trustworthy officer to inquire into it and find it out. He had the house surrounded by soldiers, so that nobody could go in or out, and then entered and seated himself, with the child on his lap. He had no sooner done so, however—according to most authentic history—than the shower of stones and siri set in as hard as ever, and fell close all round both officer and child, though still without touching them. Every hole and corner of the house was then searched, but of course without making any discovery. The officer could not get to the bottom of the mystery, but sagaciously bethought himself of having the stones marked, carried to a considerable distance, and buried—but in vain. The next night at the usual hour the customary projectiles began to fall about; and, what was more, the very stones that had been so cunningly marked and hidden underground. At last, however, the Dutch government proved more than a match for the ghost, and checkmated him by having the house pulled down; but the mystery who threw those stones, and who chewed the siri and ejected that preternatural saliva, will remain profound and inexplicable to the end of time.

On my return to Batavia, I felt rather undetermined as to which

Digitized by Google

way I should now direct my pilgrimage. Of India I had seen what was best worth seeing on my first voyage round the world; toward Australia I did not feel any great attraction, and there was also no vessel going that way; but there were in the harbor two for North America, one for Baltimore, and the other for San Francisco and California. The American consul, Mr. Reed, kindly undertook to negotiate for my passage with the captain, but soon brought me the pleasing intelligence that the captain of the vessel going to San Francisco had offered to take me with him on this long passage — 10,000 leagues — without making any charge whatever.

It was with almost melancholy feelings that I took leave of the Dutch Indian settlements. In those countries I had seen many of the magnificent wonders of nature, and had become acquainted with new races, an acquaintance that, though purchased with many toils and hardships, had offered me most interesting subjects of observation; and not only had the eye and the mind found thus an ever-varied source of enjoyment in this journey, but my heart had been warmed by the kindness of the many excellent friends I had met with among the Dutch residents, who had been at all times ready to befriend me with word and deed. To them, and to the few of my German fellow-countrymen whom I had occasionally met, I owe it that, even in countries where no European had ever yet been seen, among the wild Dyaks, Battakers, and Alforas, my traveling was not only possible, but in many cases easy and agreeable.

As long as I live will the remembrance of this journey never be effaced from my mind, nor the goodness of those far distant friends, to whom I shall probably never have any other opportunity than this of returning my heartfelt acknowledgments.

Digitized by Google

## CHAPTER XIII.

Voyage from Batavia to California.—The City of Wonders.—High Prices.—Gambling-houses.—American Judicial Proceedings.—American Traveling Companions.—The Plaza Sacramento.—Visit to General Sutter.—Marysville.—Brown's Valley.—The Gold Washings of the Yuba River.—The Indians.

In the voyage from Batavia to San Francisco you traverse nearly half the circumference of the earth. A hundred and fifty miles of this distance is through the Sea of Java, 2000 through that of China, and the remainder across the Pacific Ocean.

On the afternoon of the 6th of July, I went, accompanied by my friends Mr. and Mrs. Steuerwald, to the boat that was to convey me to the ship, the *Seneca*, of Baltimore, commanded by Captain Feenhagen.

I was now to see a new country and a new nation. Could I expect that the good fortune that had hitherto attended all my wanderings would still remain faithful to me? I could wish no more than that I should be as well received as I had hitherto been, and one day find my way back to my now far distant country, and to the arms of the beloved relatives I had left there.

*July 7th.* Early in the morning the anchor was raised, and on the ninth and tenth we were entering the Gaspar Strait, formed by the two small islands Banca and Biliton, and leading into the Chinese Sea; and then all the arms on board were furbished up and put in order, to make ready for the reception of any pirates that we might happen to meet with.

On the 12th we crossed the Equator, and the sea was so smooth that the captain of a ship that had been sailing near us came on board to pay us a visit. But scarcely had he left us again, when there arose so sudden and violent a storm, that we felt considerable anxiety as to whether he would be able to get back to his ship; and, indeed, he did not find it a very easy task. On the

Digitized by Google

afternoon we had another storm, and took in all sail, as we were in dread of a typhoon. The next day, with the weather still very stormy, we passed between Luzon and Formosa into the Pacific Ocean; and then, for two long, long months, we saw nothing but sky and water: the only living creatures that we caught even a glimpse of were a few sea-gulls, that came, from time to time, to flutter round our sails.

On this voyage I was once more attacked by intermittent fever, which could be attributed neither to the diet nor any other cause then present.

We lived so well that I had no occasion, during the whole journey, to take a morsel of salt meat; my sleeping cabin was spacious, quite a little room, indeed; and all my wants were most attentively and generously provided for by our kind captain. What a difference between this voyage and that from London to the Cape of Good Hope, with Captain Brodie. I still shudder when I think of that!

At length, on the 26th of September, sounded the long-desired cry of "Land! land!" and in the evening the coast of California lay spread out before our eyes. And yet, though I had now been three months in the saline prison, and for more than two had seen no land, this coast did not make a pleasing impression on me, but, on the contrary, rather a melancholy one. It was, beyond all description, desolate and dead. Naked sand-hills rose steeply on all sides. No tree, no shrub, not so much as a blade of grass, varied the melancholy color of the corpse-like waste.

And to this desert men voluntarily banish themselves for the chance of finding a lump of gold! What must a place be, if it had but this attraction, to keep off the avaricious whites?

*August 27th.* In the morning the pilot came on board to take us through the *Golden Gate*—that is the name given to the entrance into the Bay of San Francisco. Although wearing something of the same character as the part of the coast we had first seen, the shores of the bay are not quite destitute of beauty. They are surrounded by mountains, hills, and rocks, which form the most various groups—now advancing and now receding; and the bay is adorned by many little islands, which form bays, basins, and

Digitized by Google

straits in miniature; so that the eye is constantly amused and the attention fixed.

The length of this bay is forty-five miles, and its greatest breadth not more than twelve. We glided on between the Goat and Bird Islands, and at length cast anchor before the town itself, which lies twelve miles from the entrance and extends in a wide circuit over many sand-hills. These scattered masses of small houses have, in fact, hardly yet a right to be called a town; but, as the place is rising with astonishing rapidity, and will certainly spread many miles in all directions, it will not be possible to refuse it the name much longer.

The real town consists of the portions that lie close to the shore, where the wooden quays and warehouses are. The population of the whole is estimated at about 60,000.

The houses in the suburbs and environs are extremely small, and built of wood, and there has not been the slightest attempt at order and regularity in their construction—some lying in hollows, others being perched at the top of sand-hills. But the town does possess some large stone houses, two and three stories high—some of them lying in places that, at no very distant period, were covered by the sea, and a sea deep enough for large vessels to anchor in.

As the sand-hills rise almost perpendicularly out of the water, it was found necessary to carry part of them away, and with the sand thus thrown down to drive back the sea, and so form an artificial level for the business part of the town. These works, as well as the wooden quays and wharves, surprised me more than the large houses; but both must be regarded as gigantic undertakings, when it is considered how short a time has elapsed since the country has been taken possession of by Americans* and Europeans, and how immoderately expensive all kind of labor was, and is still. These quays and wharves, were they connected together in one line, would certainly extend many miles, for there are great numbers of them. The sea is, near the coast, so deep, that ships of 2000 and 3000 tons can come quite up to it.

* By Americans people here always understand the inhabitants of the United States. The other nations of America are called by the name of their respective nations; as Mexicans, Brazilians, etc.



Digitized by Google

California, as is known, formerly belonged to Mexico, and was only taken in 1846 by the North Americans, after a war of one year. On the 7th of July following, at Monterey, it was solemnly incorporated among the North American United States. The population at that time was 150,000, of which the greater part were Indians; now it is 300,000.

The first gold bed was discovered in July, 1848, at Coloma, in the district of El Dorado, by General Sutter, in drawing a mill-stream. The shovel struck upon some hard substance, which at first the workmen were going to throw aside without examination; but the great weight of it attracted attention, and, on closer inspection, it was found to be a lump of solid gold. The amount of gold exported from this country in 1849 was to the value of 20,000,000, dollars; the next year it was 40,000,000; and since then it has averaged 5,000,000 a month—all which treasures find their way to North America and Europe.

But I must now go back to my arrival. I had no letters of introduction, and could not, therefore, turn to any one for assistance; and I knew too well that this place was excessively dear, and more adapted for merchants than for travelers, whose purses are always being emptied and never filled. I wandered about the first day, from morning till night, to find some tolerably reasonable lodging, and at last went back to the ship without having succeeded. The worthy Captain Feenhagen begged me to make it my home as long as he staid in the harbor; but the same evening I received an invitation for the whole time of my residence in the town, from the English house of Colquhoun, Smith, and Morton. They were entire strangers to me, but had become acquainted with my name from some of my former travels; and they had no sooner seen it among the new arrivals than they sent the invitation on board, and were afterward ready to offer me every possible friendly service. These were among the families that I afterward found it most painful to part from.

The Austrian consul, M. Vischer (?), also showed me much attention; but this gentleman forms an agreeable exception to most of the Austrian consuls I have met with on my travels, and I can

Digitized by Google

only wish there were many like him. He has with every one the same amiable reputation.

The low, narrow dwellings in which people live here appeared to me at first very oppressive and uncomfortable. The largest apartments would scarcely allow of twelve or fifteen persons sitting down to table; and of the smaller ones I need not speak—they really seemed destined for Liliputians. This struck me so much the more, as, in the last place I was in, Batavia, the rooms are so large that you could put a whole Californian house into one of them. These dolls' houses are usually divided into three or four little spaces, called rooms, most richly furnished—indeed, so richly, that the occupants can scarcely find room, among the fine furniture, for themselves. The floors are covered with costly carpets, the walls with looking-glasses; but even in the large houses the rooms are mostly very small—especially the bedrooms, according, I was told, to American custom.

The shops, on the other hand, are remarkably large and handsome, and many might vie with some of the first in European cities, so rich are they in goods, so spacious and elegant in their fittings.

The finest shops are in the *Sacramento-Klé*, in Montgomery Street, and on the Square, or *Plaza*. Of coffee-houses, taverns, dancing-rooms, and gambling-houses, the town has but too many; and there are already six theatres, in which plays are performed in English, French, German, and Spanish. There are thirteen newspapers, and eighteen printers, without counting the smaller ones, which sometimes open one day, and shut the next. Churches and chapels there are, too, of all imaginable sects, to the number of twenty-six, but few worth noticing.

Much social recreation is going on at San Francisco, and whoever likes that sort of amusement may certainly pass every evening in public and private circles, and get more invitations than he can accept. The hospitalities of the table are very abundant; but I could not help remarking the singular deficiency of dinner-napkins, which I afterward found could be accounted for from the enormous price of washing. The charge is, for one dozen of large and small things together, three dollars, or twelve shillings; and

Digitized by Google

it is therefore customary for families to give out only large things to be washed, and to avoid as much as possible all superfluous expenditure of linen. In general, it is common here, on account of the enormous price of certain things, to find the most extreme economy on some points associated with the most lavish expense in others. Many families with five or six children keep only one servant, while at the same time their furniture, dress, parties, and so forth, are in a style that appear quite inconsistent with such small attendance.

I will mention the prices of a few articles at the time of my arrival, though I fear some of my readers will scarcely believe me.

A house with five or six small rooms in one of the best situations let for 250 dollars, or fifty pounds, *a month;* one in an out-of-the-way place for thirty. The large fashionable shops paid a rent of from 140 to 160 pounds a month.

The wages of a maid or man servant was ten or twelve pounds *per month*, with board. Carpenters and masons earned eight dollars a day, dress-makers four. The price of a fowl was about eight shillings; of a dozen of eggs, four shillings; of a turkey, two pounds. Beef was a shilling a pound, mutton or pork two shillings, milk a shilling a quart, salt butter three shillings, and so forth. In the hotels you could be boarded and lodged for 100 dollars a month, but the hire of a carriage was six dollars an hour, and of a riding-horse, whether for an hour or half a day, five dollars; and on a Sunday these prices were doubled. Ten dollars was the charge for putting you on board a steamboat; and going to a ball cost twenty dollars, or five pounds, for coach hire. If you had your own horse and kept him at a livery-stable, you paid fifty dollars a month for his keep; and if you sent a porter on a message you had to give him a dollar. Even these prices had been exceeded by those of the preceding year. Many manufactured articles were at the same time proportionably cheap, in consequence of the enormous quantities sent to the port—quantities that far exceeded the wants of the population;* and many

* The goods of all kinds sent here would have sufficed for a population of 1,000,000, and it has never here exceeded 300,000.

Digitized by Google

European and American houses are said to have suffered, in consequence, considerable losses.

The import duties are also very high for articles of ordinary consumption—from twenty to thirty per cent., and so on up to a hundred; but this only for spirituous liquors.

The ground for the town, as well as for the immediate environs, was divided by the government, and sold in lots of 150 feet square; and those who had the good fortune to get them in the beginning, might, with a few of these lots, become wealthy. From 5000 to 8000 dollars were given for a piece of ground now worth 150,000; and a three-storied brick house, built on a whole lot and at a corner, that would have cost 200,000 dollars, lets for 130,000 dollars *a year*.

San Francisco has been six times on fire, and most of these conflagrations are supposed to have been purposely kindled. The two greatest occurred in 1852. On the 4th of May of this year, that part of the town was burned in which the greater part of the wealth of the city was laid up in warehouses, namely, from the corner of Montgomery Street to Kearney Street. The second fire, which happened in July, laid the western quarter of the town in ashes; and, while the fire was still raging, there came speculators offering to hire the land for three or four years. The bargains were struck, and they began to build again *wooden* houses, upon ground that was scarcely cold; and when the term of the contract was expired, the speculators had gained enough to be content to leave the houses to the owner of the land.

San Francisco is unanimously declared the City of Wonders, and the Americans maintain that its rapid rise, and repeated rebuilding after the fires, are among the most wonderful things the world has seen. There are, indeed, only two forces capable of effecting such wonders—gold and despotism. The former has been the lever in this case; for the thirst of gold, which is the greatest of despots, has drawn people hither from all corners of the earth, and dwellings of wood and stone have arisen for them as if by magic. But what are all these simple works compared with the antique cities of Hindostan, the ruins of which even still attest their magnificence, and which are stated to have been built

Digitized by Google

in a no less incredibly short time. Look, for instance, at Fahpoor Sikri, a town full of the most beautiful palaces, covered with sculptures—of magnificent temples, with minarets, and with high-arched gates, and so forth—the circumference of which, of six miles, was surrounded by a massive stone wall forty feet high; and all this was done in less than ten years. Such works as this are indeed marvelous, for they must have required a whole population of artists and architects for their execution.

The wonders of San Francisco consist of quite ordinary little dwelling-houses, for the building of which the gold-mines of California have furnished, and continue to furnish, sufficient means. What most excited my wonder in this wonderful city is, that for two great requirements no provision at all has been made—namely, for clean level streets and for lighting.

Of the hillocks, holes, and unevenness of all kinds in the streets of this town, no one who has not seen it can form an idea. Here you go up steps, there down steps. In one place the road has been raised, but on going a little further, you find it as nature made it. Some places have been dug out, and whole mountains of bricks, stones, wood, lime, and sand left lying in the road, with no light near them at night to give warning to the unwary. This makes the roads after dark, not only for driving, but even for foot-passengers, positively dangerous; and especially is this the case on the wooden quays, for the sea beneath them has not been filled up, and the boards are so worn and rotten that they often break in. Even in the daytime caution is requisite on account of the frequent holes; and at night it is no uncommon incident for passengers to fall in, and be never seen again. In the finest and most frequented parts of the town, you see old clothes and rags, crockery, boots, bottles, boxes, dead dogs and cats, and enormous rats (in which the town is particularly rich), and all kinds of filth flung before the doors. Constantinople itself may really be considered clean in comparison. There, there are at least men and dogs who both do something toward the cleanliness of the streets—the former by picking up the clothes and rags, the latter by devouring much of the refuse.

To all this must be added the boundless liberty of every man

Digitized by Google

to do precisely what he likes. Carts will often be stopped in the middle of the narrow causeway which leads across the—in rainy weather—bottomless mud of the streets. Horsemen will tie up their steeds before the doors, obliging the unhappy passengers to get down into the dirt in order to go round them. Sometimes the inconveniences are more serious. One morning as I was walking in the street, a passenger who met me suddenly called out "A bear! a bear!" I could not think what he meant; for that it should be really a bear in the streets of a populous town seemed quite incredible. I looked round in all directions, however, and, on looking back, beheld actually a bear running toward me. He was, indeed, fastened to a rope, and the rope to a caravan; but they had allowed him so very long a tether, that he was quite at liberty to introduce himself among the passengers on both sides of the way. The owner was not even troubling himself to warn them, and I had barely time to make my escape.

A walk in San Francisco, in short, either for business or pleasure, is a real penance. In what is called the business part of the town, you can hardly make your way through for the throng of carts, carriages, horsemen, and pedestrians; and where the streets are not paved with boards,* you have to wade through sand a foot deep; and all the while you have no better prospect before your eyes than the naked, monotonous sand-hills.

Truly it is only those who place all happiness in money who could submit, for the sake of gain, to live in such a place, and perhaps forget at last that there are such things as trees, or a green carpet lovelier than that which covers the gold-laden gaming-tables.

In the spring I was told the sand-hills are covered with a beautiful and luxuriant flora; but the kings of the vegetable world, majestic trees and elegant shrubs, can no season bring in this country.

The horses and mules in San Francisco are extraordinarily beautiful. They, as well as the oxen and cows, have all been brought overland, "over the plains," from the United States. Both

* There are roads in the neighborhood of the town that are paved for miles with planks.

Digitized by Google

horses and mules are tall and powerful; there are horses that can go with you sixty miles in one day,* and mules that can carry three hundred-weight. Even the horses in omnibuses and hackney carriages are very fine. Some of the latter, indeed, can hardly be exceeded, and the cost of a carriage and horses of this kind is estimated at about £800.

The means of rapid and easy communication are abundant in San Francisco. Steamboats traverse the bay, and go up and down the rivers. Stage-coaches, which change horses like post-chaises, run in all directions, and a telegraph-line is already opened that passes over St. José and Sacramento for more than 150 miles.

One evening I went to visit the public places of amusement, and I must own I found most interest in the gaming-houses, having never seen any public ones before. What first struck the eye was the extraordinary mixture of company in them. A most daintily-dressed gentleman would be seated next to a miner in his red flannel shirt, with boots covered with mud, or a sailor who had not even washed the tar off his hands; but both the dandies and the dirties had heaps of gold and hard dollars lying before them. Two years ago, I was told, you never saw any money but gold. In no face, not even in that of the lively and excitable Frenchman or Mexican, did I ever observe the agitation either of hope or fear, and I could not tell by looking at the players who had been favored and who ill-treated by fortune. With respect to the furniture and decorations of these houses, it is obviously intended not only to encourage directly the passion for gaming, but also to intoxicate the senses, and entice to all kinds of sensuality. Noisy music resounds through the spacious saloons, licentiously seductive pictures hang on the walls, and beautiful girls are seated as lures here and there at the tables. I have traveled far and wide through the world, and have been among many nations who, partly from the effect of climate, and partly from the absence of religion and of education, are much given to sensual excesses; but such open and shameless enticement to evil I have never seen any where else, and I really believe they are only found among Christian nations and under civilized governments.

* When miles are mentioned, English miles are always meant.

Digitized by Google

I can not, of course, take upon me to assert that immorality does not exist in an equal degree among others, but certainly it is not thus scandalously paraded. Even the Chinese gaming-houses were more decent than the American. Of the other places of public entertainment and the dancing-rooms, I will not speak.

The superfluity of money in San Francisco is so great, and the prices so high, that no copper money is in use at all, and the people have no wish that there should be. Every one can earn enough to meet all demands, and, in fact, the demand for labor still exceeds the supply. And yet there passes no night in which you do not hear of robbery; in all the bed-rooms you see pistols hanging up; and no one goes out of an evening without a sword-stick or other weapon; for even in the streets of the town robberies and murders are of no very uncommon occurrence. The police is so badly organized, that the perpetrator of a theft is hardly ever discovered; and, indeed, if he were, the punishments are so slight, that no one fears them. A few weeks' imprisonment serve for almost every offense; and even murderers have seldom much cause to dread the law. They generally go themselves to the magistrate and relate the occurrence, making it out, of course, that the act was merely committed in self-defense. If they know how to go to work—that is to say, if they use their gold freely—they are very often not so much as imprisoned.

While I was myself at San Francisco, a gentleman with whom I was personally acquainted shot his servant. The wound was not immediately mortal, but the bullet had penetrated the man's side, and could not be found for three days. The master went to the magistrate, told the story his own way, and declared that he had done it in self-defense. He said the servant was given to drinking, and that while he was intoxicated he, the master, had given him warning; that thereupon the servant had been much irritated, and had answered that he did not wish to stay, but that, before he left the house, he would shoot him—"or," he added, "either I will shoot you, or you shall shoot me," and at the same time threatened his master with his fist; whereupon the master had seized a pistol and shot the servant.

The murderer was locked up for a day, but the second he was



Digitized by Google

released, on his promising not to leave the district, and on giving bail.

As I left Francisco shortly afterward, I do not know what was the end of the affair, but I was assured that even if the servant died the master would get off with at most a few weeks' imprisonment.

Two years ago matters were still worse, and even in broad daylight you were not secure of your life. If any one conceived a hatred to another, or had a dispute with him, he shot his antagonist in the public streets. Duels were settled at once, without further ceremony, on the open square, and the parties shot at each other without the passers-by attempting to interfere. Now and then it happened that, instead of hitting the antagonist, the ball struck a person who had nothing to do with the affair; but this was merely an accident, and could not be helped. No one was called to account for it.

Much more severity was shown at that time toward thieves, not indeed by the law or its executors, for justice was fast asleep —even faster, if possible, than at the present day—but by private persons, who formed a society for the execution of justice on their own responsibility, or by Lynch Law, as it was called.* The first thief they caught they hung up at once on the Plaza; and this summary proceeding had so much effect, that for a long time there were no more thefts.

This Plaza, it will be seen, is a very remarkable spot to the people of the town, though it no longer serves as the theatre of these terrible scenes, but, it is to be hoped, for the prevention, if not for the punishment, of crime; as a most worthy and excellent missionary, Mr. Taylor, preaches there every Sunday afternoon powerful and admirable sermons. I heard several of them, and was always much gratified—he spoke so directly to the minds and hearts of his congregation, and chose such suitable examples from every-day life. It was easy to see that he had become a missionary from a true and heartfelt vocation. The people listened to him with deep attention, and many a pressure of the hand was given him as a reward. In my opinion, Christian na-

* Lynch Law is frequently exercised in the United States.

Digitized by Google

tions have at present far more need of good missionaries than the heathen.

Of the public institutions I visited the prison and the hospital, but I had much difficulty in getting the requisite permission.

When I showed the director of the prison my card of admission, it gave rise to an absurd misunderstanding. As no one in San Francisco would think of taking up his time with visiting places of this kind unless some special business called him to them, the director thought I had come to see some one confined there; and merely glancing at the paper I brought, without reading it, my name caught his eye, and after a little reflection he assured me that he did not think he had any criminal of that name under his care; whereupon, of course, the explanation followed.

The prison consists of some dark, damp rooms, each intended for six persons, but so small that they can scarcely have room to lie down. There are neither benches nor bedsteads, and those who do not bring bolsters and coverings with them must do without. The food is good, consisting of soup, a piece of meat, and a sufficient quantity of excellent bread.

About six months before, the prison was one day visited by a very numerous party of between eighty and ninety men, who demanded to see it, and, when let in, seized on the keys and took possession of one of the criminals confined there, whom the people had long desired to see executed, but who, with the customary negligence of the government in these matters, would probably have escaped with a slight punishment. They took him out, and hung him immediately before the door of the prison.

The hospital is a tolerably good one, especially if the time of its erection is considered, the year 1849. Prices were then so enormous in San Francisco, that it is surprising a sum could have been raised by private contribution large enough for the erection of a good hospital, with accommodation, such as it has at present, for 300 patients. Most of these are received gratuitously, and some few pay fifteen dollars a week, or twenty-five for a private room. One thing that especially pleased me was, that incurable patients are not turned out, but kept till their death.

Digitized by Google

Before the erection of this hospital, those who were unfortunate enough to fall sick could expect nothing better than to be carried into some corner, and there left to live or die, as they might. No one had time to pay them any attention; for gold, gold, nothing but gold, filled their every thought and every moment.

A very fine exhibition of vegetables, fruits, corn, and other natural productions of California, took place while I was there. It was under the auspices of a Mr. Warren, and displayed some surprising specimens. There was a pumpkin weighing 125 pounds, a beet-root 35 lbs., a turnip 25 lbs., a cauliflower 22 lbs., a carrot 6 lbs., a potato 4 lbs., and an onion 2 lbs. One of the cabbages measured 2½ feet in diameter. There was wheat and barley 12 feet high, and with very fine full ears; maize which measured 17 feet in height, with three cobs, each containing from 550 to 600 grains. The fruits were less remarkable; but what a productive country might California become if the people could be induced to devote some attention to its culture!

Another interesting specimen of a different kind was that of a grand oak trunk, from the northern regions of the peninsula. It was 250 feet high, and 97 in circumference at the base. It was supposed to be 1500 years old, and yet when felled it was found perfectly healthy. The bark, which was 18 inches thick, was taken off in strips, and in San Francisco, when put together again, it formed a handsome room; a section of the trunk was laid near it to convince the incredulous.

I made three excursions from San Francisco to the interior of California; the first to Sacramento, Marysville, and the gold-mines of the Yuba river; the second to Crescent City and the Rogue-river Indians; and the third to St. José. In the afternoon of the 3d of October I embarked on board the beautiful steamer *Senator* for Sacramento, 100 miles' journey.

The American steamers are the finest imaginable, and certainly deserve the title often given them of water-palaces. They look indeed more like houses than ships. The river steamers especially are several stories high, with large doors, windows, and galleries; and the convenience and splendor of the internal fittings and furniture fully correspond with the impression made by the

Digitized by Google

outside view. When you meet one of them at night on the water, they look like enchanted castles, for all their windows are illuminated, and their chimneys vomit fire like volcanoes.

Late in the evening we turned into the Sacramento river, which is navigable up to the town for vessels of 1500 tons, but we only landed at five o'clock the next morning, when the passengers rushed with frantic haste to secure their places in the stage-coaches or smaller steamers, so as to continue their journey without loss of time. I, too, followed their example, and hastened to seize a place in a stage-coach to go to Grass Valley; but my haste was thrown away, for the coach I wanted had set off at four o'clock, so I had to change my plan and go on board a steamer bound for Marysville, which was fifty miles further.

The time before the departure of the boat I employed in viewing the town, which lies on a sandy, dusty plain, in whose distant background only the dark outline of mountains is to be seen. The town contains 20,000 inhabitants, and offers, on a smaller scale, the same unfinished and unpleasing picture as San Francisco. According to the Americans, Sacramento is another "wonder of the world," as it has risen just as rapidly, and been just as often burned down, as San Francisco.

At eleven o'clock we were off again, and, after running a few miles, turned into the Feather River, on which Marysville lies. The shore continued so much the same that I soon turned from it, and went into the saloon to continue my observations on the company. This was the first time I had ever found myself in a large party of Americans, and, as in the gambling-houses of San Francisco, the first thing that struck me was the strange contrasts in dress. The ladies were all in grand state, and might have gone into full-dressed parties without changing their traveling costume; but the case was widely different with the gentlemen. Some few were well dressed, but the majority wore jackets, often torn ones, dirty boots pulled up over their trowsers, and had hands so extraordinarily coarse and burned—even the best-dressed gentlemen among them—that they looked as if they belonged to the commonest plowman.

The company passed the time in playing cards and chewing

Digitized by Google

tobacco, without excepting even boys of ten and twelve years old; but they did not spit about at the dreadful rate described by many travelers. They had another practice, however, if possible still more abominable, namely, though they carried a pocket-handkerchief, of making use of their fingers instead of it.

I actually saw this atrocity committed by quite elegantly dressed men.

If, however, in these points they fell grievously short, in another they maintained without any exception the character of gentlemen.

The men, one and all, showed the utmost attention and politeness to our sex. Old or young, rich or poor, well or ill dressed, every woman was treated with respect and kindness; and in this the Americans are far in advance of my countrymen, and indeed of Europeans in general, who usually keep their civilities for youth, beauty, and fine clothes.

The company remained a very little while at table, and spoke scarcely a word. They really did not give themselves time to eat their food properly, but bolted it burning hot and not half chewed, although nobody had any thing to do when the meal was over. They seem to have got into the habit of regarding every thing as business, and therefore to be performed with the utmost possible dispatch. Nobody drank any thing but water; but I am told the Americans prefer taking small drams of spirituous liquors at various times of the day. I do not think, nevertheless, that so much is drank here as in England. Coffee and tea, too, were taken in moderate quantities, and not strong.

The passage to Marysville was very long, for the river had at this time of year very little water, and we were every moment getting upon sand-banks. Some hills now came into sight, and here and there we had glimpses of a mountain chain.

I had to stop six miles before Marysville at a farm belonging to General Sutter,* and at ten o'clock at night I was put out on the shore, to find my way as I best could. Fortunately it was not far; but when I reached the hedge inclosing the garden half a

* Every landed estate in America, of whatever dimensions, is called a farm.

Digitized by Google

dozen dogs rushed out upon me. I kept myself quiet, however, feeling pretty sure they would do nothing more than bark.

Every body in the house had been fast asleep, but they were awakened by the noise of the dogs, and received me, unseasonable guest as I was, in the kindest manner.

General Sutter is a Swiss by birth, and not only discovered the gold mines, but has greatly distinguished himself as a soldier in the Mexican war. Since then he has lived on his large landed estates.

His youngest son, who is only twenty-two years of age, is already a colonel in the militia; but this is nothing uncommon in America. We Europeans find it very strange that so many important offices should be filled by quite young people, but the Americans think that when they understand their business they are to be preferred to older ones, "as they are commonly more active, diligent, and persevering."

You find here men of seven or eight and twenty established as merchants, lawyers, captains of ships, etc., who have already earned a considerable fortune; but they have certainly entered into business very early.

I staid two days at Rock Farm, where great quantities of corn and vegetables are raised, though the ground, in the dry season, looks like mere dust and sand, and one would fancy the greatest care was requisite to make any thing grow; but I was told that, on the contrary, it is neither manured nor irrigated, and yet the corn it produces is fine and abundant. It must be remembered, however, that the ground was broken for the first time only a few years ago; it remains to be seen what it will look like fifty years hence.

I took a walk to a neighboring forest with General Sutter's eldest son, who has considerable knowledge of botany; and I saw some beautiful varieties of the oak, in which California is said to be particularly rich, some very fine climbing plants, and great quantities of wild grapevines, which wreathe themselves round the trees up to the very topmost boughs; but the grapes were small and not very sweet. The ground in the forest had not the smallest trace of grass or any green thing.

Digitized by Google

About twenty miles from Rock Farm rises a majestic chain of mountains, the highest point of which, said to be 14,000 feet, is called the Chasta.

Before you come to this chain, you see a range of rocks rising perpendicularly out of the plain, like a gigantic wall, and forming three principal peaks called the Three Butts.

On the 7th of October General Sutter had me taken to Marysville, a little town lying at the confluence of the Feather and Yuba rivers. A private individual has had a wooden bridge built, 120 feet long; but for every horse or head of cattle going over it he levies a toll of half a dollar.

Marysville, though a newer place than Sacramento, contains already 6000 inhabitants, and boasts a theatre and two newspapers; and the shops are so over-full of goods that they might supply the wants of a population of ten times that number. Much is, of course, sent to the mining districts; but the articles of fashion and luxury mostly find customers only in the towns.

Almost as soon as I got to Marysville I had the good fortune to meet Sir Henry Huntley, an Englishman with whom I had become acquainted in San Francisco. This gentleman possesses quartz and gold mines at Brown's Valley, near the mountain chain, fourteen miles from Marysville, and has had a steam-mill erected for breaking the stones.

He was so kind as to take me with him to his land, and to show me the quartz mines, as well as the gold washings on the Yuba river, which lay six miles off. He settled only three months ago in Brown's Valley, and at that time the place was a perfect wilderness. Now there stand upon it three wooden cottages, and the great work, the steam-mill, is near its completion. The work-people live near it in tents, so that it is a very animated scene.

The entire country round seems to consist of rich beds of gold quartz. The mode of operation is the same as in other mining countries. Shafts are sunk and galleries made to get at the ore, which is then carried to the mill and crushed to powder. The metal is then separated from the quartz dust by washing, melted with sulphuric acid, and amalgamated with quicksilver. Sir Henry Huntley was so good as to show me, on a small scale, the

Digitized by Google

whole operation. The quartz yields in this way about thirteen per cent. of gold. Any one can dig who pleases; but as the setting up a mill is an expensive business, most of the miners sell their stones to Sir H. Huntley.

The next day I went to the great gold washings on the River Yuba. The gold gained here is of two kinds. The gold-seekers dig holes in the bed of the river, which become filled with earth and mud; and when, in the dry season, the water has retired, they shovel them out, and separate the gold particles by washing. The other plan, by which a much larger quantity is obtained, is by damming up the river. For this purpose they make wooden channels, several hundred fathoms long, into which they lead the river; and the part of its bed thus laid dry is then entirely dug up, and the earth washed. For all such undertakings as this the people form themselves into companies, and divide the profits at the end of every week; and the business is carried on in such a regular and honorable manner that there never arises the smallest dispute. Every company chooses a director, who is charged with the distribution; and the miners leave their treasures in their tents without lock or bolt, and never miss any thing. This was by no means the case at first; but thefts, and even murders, took place often enough, till the gold-seekers were compelled to be beforehand with the tardy justice of the country, take the matter into their own hands, and hang without further ceremony all the thieves and murderers whom they caught. This method was found effectual.

Those who have no mind to work at mining with their own hands can find others to work for them, as many prefer a certain to an uncertain gain; and the usual wages are seven or eight dollars a day.

Every company and every man may choose any unoccupied spot for his operations; but he must begin to work, at latest, fourteen days after he has taken possession of the ground. Whoever delays longer than this loses the right to it, and any other may take it who likes. If any one can show, with some probability, that on this or that spot gold is to be found, even in places where houses stand, the owner is obliged, on receiving suitable

Digitized by Google

compensation, to part with it to the miners. The same law exists in Chili and Peru.

The work on the river was going on with great activity, and the place had a very lively appearance. Nearly 5000 men were busy on a spot of four or five miles in length; and numerous villages of tents were scattered about. The people can not build themselves houses, as, when one place is worked out, they have to go to another. The various nations—Germans, Americans, Chinese, etc.—mostly keep a good deal together, both in their work and in their abodes.

Few among the gold-seekers make any very considerable fortunes. They can only work eight months in the year—till the beginning of the rainy season—and the labor is very severe, as the people have to stand nearly the whole day in the water, and, while their work lasts, to renounce not only every recreation, but every comfort of life. Then afterward, when they go into a town to pass the four months of leisure, they are like sailors ashore with prize-money after a long voyage. Systematically planned temptations surround them on all sides—the love of pleasure gets the upper hand—the hardly-won treasures melt away, and they soon find themselves as poor as when they began their labors—and, weakened in body and soul by the dissipated lives they have been leading, they have to return to the privations and toils of gold digging; and happy are they if one season's experience is sufficient to preserve them from a repetition of the same folly.

The country about both Brown's Valley and the Yuba River is mountainous and woody, and the forest is thick; for at every forty or fifty paces there stands a large tree, mostly an oak; but there is neither underwood nor creeping plants, and the ground is entirely dust or small stones.

After staying here a few days, I went back to Marysville, where it is much warmer than at San Francisco, though the difference of latitude is very trifling; and I was so unlucky as to have another attack of the obstinate Sumatra fever.

At Marysville I encountered a countryman from Vienna, a Mr. Royter; and our mutual delight in speaking of our beloved home was so great that the good man gave me a whole day, and

Digitized by Google

accompanied me to every place where there was any thing worth seeing.

I was most interested by the natives, who are of pure Indian descent, and have preserved themselves from any mixture of Spanish blood. These savages, as we call them, are diminishing from year to year, under the pressure of the hard, encroaching whites. A few years ago there were sixty Indian families living at Marysville; now there are not more than twenty.*

These Indians are actually uglier than the Malays. Their growth is short and stunted; they have short thick necks and clumsy heads; the forehead is low, the nose flat with broad nostrils, the eyes very narrow and showing no intelligence, the cheek-bones prominent, and the mouth large. The teeth are white, but they do not stand in even rows; and their heads are covered by short, thick, rough hair, that looks exactly like a fur cap, especially as it is often partly light and partly dark on the same head. They take no care of it, and apparently do not even smear it with grease. Infants of five or six weeks old even had a shock of this rough hair on their little heads. Their color is a dirty yellowish-brown; and the women are much inclined to grow fat. Both sexes have the ears pierced with large holes, through which they pass a piece of wood as thick as a man's finger, decorated with paintings or glass beads. They also adorn the rest of their persons with beads, buttons, feathers, and whatever they can get from the whites; and the women are a little tattooed on the chin. The men formerly went quite naked, and the women wore merely an apron about a foot long; but since the whites have been living among them, and that they find old clothes, boots, shirts, etc., lying in the streets, they pick them up, and dress themselves in them, often in a very comic manner.

These people stand on a very low grade of civilization. They neither till the ground, nor keep cattle, nor hunt—do nothing, in short, but fish; and for their dwellings, they dig in the ground holes of eighteen or twenty feet long, and two feet deep, over

* General Sutter informed me that there used to be, only a few years ago, 200 Indians in a large village near his farm. These are now all dead but thirty.

Digitized by Google

which they put a roof, of a tent-like shape, made of wood and clay. The door to these habitations is a small hole, through which you must creep on hands and knees; and a still smaller opening in the roof lets the smoke out. They have neither mats nor earthen vessels, and they understand no work but basket plaiting. In this art, however, they have attained to great perfection; they know how to make their baskets perfectly water-tight, and manage even to boil their fish in them. They plait large baskets to keep their dried fish in, smaller to fetch water, and quite little ones that they put on their heads as hats.

It was toward evening when I visited this tribe, and the people were sitting before their holes, by small fires, preparing and eating their evening meal, which consisted of broiled fish and acorn bread. The last-named article is very solid, heavy, and damp, and has rather a bitter taste. They make it by pounding the acorns to powder; and with this they make bread without mixing in any thing else than water. Besides fish and acorns, they eat pretty nearly every thing else that they can get at—frogs, squirrels, grasshoppers, and beetles, which last are considered as dainties.

I saw among these poor creatures many who were ill of fever, some insane, and astonishingly few children. The Indians who live in the neighborhood of the whites are said to die off much more rapidly than those who have taken refuge in the interior of the forests. The former obtain, in exchange for their fish and other little articles of trade, chiefly spirituous liquors, which is poison to them, constantly making them ill, and frequently killing them outright. Another cause of terrible mortality among them is the small-pox, a disease which they have also received from their white neighbors.

Their poverty in children may probably proceed in a great measure from the custom of the tribe of intermarrying constantly among themselves; most of them are related to each other. In point of morals they are said to be blameless, and no Indian woman in this country will of her own accord form any connection with a white; if she did, she would be expelled by her tribe. When a white man desires to form a connection with an Indian

Digitized by Google

woman, he endeavors to gain over the chief by presents. At the time of my visit the three chiefs of this tribe formed a very picturesque group. They were sitting at the entrance of their caves, silent, serious, and motionless as usual, dressed in a kind of fantastic half European costume, with plumes of feathers on their heads. It seemed as if they were pondering in their simple, unsophisticated understandings the restless doings of the multitudes of white strangers who had come to overrun their country; and they looked as if the emotions excited by the spectacle were not precisely those of astonishment and admiration, but much more akin to contempt. I shall never forget the glance which these three men threw on me and my companions; and when the latter addressed them, they deigned no reply.

Of the value of money they seem to have little idea, and the smallest sum or the largest is with them always *five dollars*. I wanted to buy one of the bits of wood that they stick through their ears, and also one of their water-tight baskets, and for each of these articles they asked "five dollars."

In the evening I took a survey of the places of public recreation of Marysville; and I might almost repeat of them what I said of those of San Francisco, of which they are copies in miniature. I really believe that in the short time the whites have been in California there has been more vice and crime in it than in the hundreds of years before, when the country was occupied by the natives.

I returned to San Francisco the same way by which I had come, namely, by the Sacramento, the banks of which are described by the Americans as enchantingly luxuriant and beautiful. As I had passed them in the night in coming, I could not of course see much of them, and looked forward, therefore, with great expectation to the return journey. The finest day and the most splendid sunshine favored me, but I tried in vain to discover the much-talked-of beauties of the landscape. The immediate banks were certainly bordered by trees and shrubs; but a few yards inland all vegetation ceased, and the eye lost itself in a sandy, dusty plain. Even the few trees there were—mostly oak, ash, and willow—could not be called fine, for though their trunks were thick,

Digitized by Google

and their branches sometimes stretched out far over the water, their foliage was of a dark muddy green.

Only people who lived in such a naked, desolate, treeless region as the country about San Francisco could possibly make such a talk about such views as these.

---

## CHAPTER XIV.

Crescent City.—Excursion to the Rogue River.—Indians.—A Night Bivouac in the Wigwam.—Dangerous Situation of my Traveling Companion.—Revengeful Disposition of the Indians.—San José.—Acapulco.—Panama.

CRESCENT CITY, as it is called, a newly-established little town, lying northward toward the Oregon and the Rogue-river Indians, formed, as I have said, the object of my second excursion. The distance is three hundred miles, and the price of the passage fifty dollars; but the Americans are liberal with their free passages, and I had often only to mention my name to procure every accommodation of this kind without charge. So it was now with my journey to Crescent City and back.

On the 3d of November I went on board the steamer *Thomas Hunt*. We ran pretty near to the coast, which appeared quite uninhabited, and consists of a chain of steep, peaked hills, offering very few suitable anchoring grounds. In some places appeared pine woods, but, on the whole, the barren sandy soil was predominant.

We passed Humboldt's Bay, and on the 5th of November, early in the morning, entered the bay or harbor of Trinidad. It was pretty, but extremely small—I really think not a quarter of a mile across—and inclosed by rocks fifty or sixty feet high, that leave only an opening just large enough to admit a vessel; and in the middle of the opening a high black rock partly blocks up even this narrow space. The whole formation might be taken for a burnt-out crater of a volcano. Some dozens of the wooden

Digitized by Google

houses that compose the little town appeared near the summits of the hills, and a fine pine wood closed the miniature picture.

This little town of Trinidad arose only two years ago, and is already going to decay. Trade does not flourish here as had been anticipated; agriculture has not been attempted, and many of the settlers have already gone away again. After passing Trinidad the hills begin to decline, and are covered with pine woods.

We reached Crescent City in the midst of a very heavy rain, and with a stormy sea; and the landing was no easy matter, for the roads are very insecure, and open to every wind that blows. From April to November they offer, indeed, some protection, as north winds are then prevalent, from which they are slightly sheltered, but during the winter months they are quite exposed.

The situation of the town is very charming. The wooden houses lie partly ranged along the sea-shore, partly scattered about among the trees, and the whole is shaded by lofty pine woods. Toward the southwest lie richly-wooded heights and a fine plain, and in the sea groups of small islands and rocks, some naked, others covered with trees.

Crescent City was only founded in the month of February of this year. The forest had to be cut down, and a block-house erected, for the Indians are numerous hereabout; and yet, by the month of August, there were ninety houses finished, several hotels, twenty shops opened, and trade with the neighboring mining district of Smith's River going on in full activity. Every day I saw many mules going off laden with provisions and other merchandise; and, if it appears ultimately that this is the best and safest route to the interior, the place will be sure to rise rapidly. But the people settled at Trinidad under the idea that this was the case, and found themselves mistaken. Every thing is still dearer here than at San Francisco, whence all goods are at present brought.

One of the first settlers was a Mr. Grubler, a Swiss by birth, who had the kindness to receive me in his house. He built the block-house, and he was also the founder—and is the president—of a very useful and laudable association for the culture and improvement of public speaking. The members assemble one even-

Digitized by Google

ing in every week at the school-house; political questions are proposed, imaginary lawsuits carried on, and novels, poems, etc., criticised, and thus an innocent and instructive evening's amusement afforded.

I was astonished at the good and fluent speeches that I heard delivered, especially as many of the speakers looked like sailors and miners, and had on red flannel shirts and jackets, etc. The fair sex appeared in quite simple domestic-looking dresses of printed cotton. The school-room was not fitted up in a very elegant manner, and let in the cold wind, alas! from all corners, so as almost to extinguish the tallow candles; but still this will doubtless be altered soon, and luxury and splendor replace the old country simplicity; but will the people amuse themselves then better than they do now?

Crescent City lies only four degrees more to the northward than San Francisco, but there is a far greater difference in the temperature and the weather than one might have imagined. At this time thick clouds covered the sky, it rained often and heavily, and the thermometer fell to near the freezing point.

The chief purpose of my coming had been to visit the Indians, who are still to be found in great numbers in this part of California; but they are retiring further and further into the interior since the settlement of the whites, and to see a large village you have to go at least twelve miles. About half a dozen Indian families were settled in the neighborhood of the town, and resembled those I had seen at Marysville. They had, too, the same fancy for picking up old clothes that had been thrown away by the whites. One gentleman had mounted a pair of European breeches and a worn-out lady's mantilla, and had on his head a battered lady's bonnet. Another had simply a frock-coat, and *nothing else*, but had adorned the back of it with glass beads according to his own fancy. Another, though his lower man was in the simplest state, had clothed the upper in a waistcoat, and put on his head a round hat, with a hole cut in it to stick some feathers in; and the ladies were no less tastefully attired.

To proceed with safety into the country as far as the Rogue Indians on the Smith's River, it was necessary, I was told, to go in

Digitized by Google

armed company, as these Indians are very savage and cunning. Some of my friends promised to get together a party of eight or ten gentlemen to accompany me; but they did not succeed in finding so many who were willing to undertake it.

Fortunately, a German sailor, named Karl Braun, who had settled here some months before, hearing of my wish, was so kind as to come and offer to accompany me to the Indians. He had had much intercourse with them, had been in the habit of exchanging glass beads, etc., for their fish, understood their language, and, if I liked to venture it, he said he would go with me. I was exceedingly glad of this unexpected offer, accepted it immediately, and, as soon as the rain ceased, we set out.

On the first day, the 7th of November, we went about sixteen miles, mostly along the sea-shore, through deep sand or over stones. Through the forest the paths were good, and when, toward the afternoon, we took a turn inland we soon arrived at Smith's River, the banks of which are entirely of sand; but about half a mile into the country begin some magnificent pine woods. The trees are tall and slender, and make excellent timber for building. I saw few climbing plants, but there was abundance of underwood and of shrubs; among which were blackberry and bilberry bushes; the latter attaining a greater height than in Europe, often as much as four feet.

We passed several villages, but made a very short stay, in order to reach, if possible, a shelter for the night before the rain set in, as it threatened to do soon. They were very small, consisting of not more than seven or eight wigwams or holes, like those of Marysville, except that the wooden framework of the roof was here covered with leaves and branches instead of clay.

We crossed Smith's River in the hollowed trunk of a tree, and the people made use of a quite heavy plank for a rudder.

The further we went from the settlements of the whites the less and less were the people clothed; and at length they appeared in a complete state of nature, excepting only a kind of apology for an apron, worn by the women, sometimes made of elk's skin and sometimes of grass; but the skin was cut up into narrow strips, leaving only a piece of about three inches broad whole at the top.



Digitized by Google

They wind this kind of fringe twice round them, and it looks like a piece of very ragged fur. I saw it even on the smallest girls, who could scarcely walk. Some of the chiefs had a skin flung like a mantle over their shoulders.

Toward evening we reached a great village, the inhabitants of which call themselves *Huna* Indians. My companion had never been so far before; but he knew one young man among them, with whom he had had dealings for fish and beads, and we determined to pass the night here. It began to rain again, and the cold was so excessive that I was glad to find a place in one of these earth-holes, in the midst of the disgusting naked natives. We lay down round the fire, which blazed up merrily in the middle of the hut, and about which half a dozen Indians were already crouching; but the hut soon became filled to overflowing with curious visitors, and the heat and vapors so suffocating, that I was driven out again in despair, thinking I should prefer the rain and the cold. It was not, however, from rain and cold only that I had to suffer; for the whole population of the village thronged about me, and formed a small close circle, so that I could hardly move. They pulled me this way and that; examined every article of my clothing, from my hat to my shoes; and once even dragged me away with them to some remote huts in the forest, so that I found some difficulty in getting back to that of my host.

I had some bread and cheese, and my companion had brought with him sugar, coffee, and bread, and also a little tin kettle, in which he made some coffee, as he called it, though there was hardly enough coffee to tinge the water. But the hot drink was, nevertheless, most highly approved of. The kettle was soon emptied and a second edition called for; and when the Indians saw that he put in a little brown powder, they wanted to have some of that, and seized on it to eat it. The sugar they did not put into the coffee, but ate it eagerly alone, as well as the bread, and we had no peace till it was all gone. My guide was not able to save any of his provisions for the following morning.

After this meal was over the Indians set about their own cooking. They brought out some large, fine salmon, with which the waters of California abound; cut off the head and tail, slit up the

Digitized by Google

fish, and stuck in splinters of wood to keep it open, and then put it on a large wooden spit and roasted it before the fire. Of the heads and tails they made a kind of soup. They filled one of their close baskets with water, and threw in red-hot stones, which they continually replaced with fresh ones, till the water began to simmer, and then they put in the heads and tails of the fish and let them boil. In a short time the water had thickened and become of a grayish color, perhaps because a good quantity of ashes had gone in with the hot stones; but the people are not very exact in these matters. The soup they ate with shells; the roasted fish they tore to pieces with their hands, and laid upon flat baskets that serve them for plates. After this they roasted the acorns in the hot ashes, and ate with a long thin grass root by way of dessert. These last were not only raw but unwashed, with the earth still sticking about them; but they had an extremely delicate taste, and were so soft that they could be mashed with the tongue. The meal was abundant, and would have been excellent if it had only been flavored with salt and—cleanliness; but both the one and the other are unknown to these people.

After supper the gentlemen, young and old, made their toilet, by daubing their faces in a most detestable manner with red, blue, or black paint. They first smeared them with fish fat, and then they rubbed in the paint, sometimes passing a finger over it in certain lines, so as to produce a pattern; and it is hardly necessary to say that their natural ugliness was greatly increased by the pains they had taken to adorn themselves. When they had concluded this operation they began to sing, and their songs were really more melodious and better sung than I could have expected from such a rude people. The entertainment was prolonged till a late hour in the night, and then they were so polite as to leave the hole to me, in so far that the men went away and only the women remained near me. One of them placed herself so close on one side of me, that I could hardly turn round; and on the other side, close to me, stood a large basket containing smoked fish; overhead hung another basket of fish to be smoked; and we lay on the bare cold ground, without pillow or covering, so it may be imagined what a luxurious night I passed.

Digitized by Google

I had taken very little of the supper, but had a private intention of making myself amends afterward by having some bread and cheese when every body was asleep; but I did not dare produce such dainties as long as the people were about, for every body would have wanted to taste, and at last there would have been nothing left for me. When the women were all asleep, that is snoring, I raised myself up a little, and very cautiously drew forth my treasure. But my next neighbor either slept very lightly, or had only been pretending to be asleep; for she sat up instantly and asked me what I was doing, signifying to me that I was to lie down and not move. She then kept stirring the fire until I stretched myself out again and pretended to fall asleep, when she lay down once more at my side. Probably they felt some sort of mistrust of me.

In the morning, as soon as day dawned, all was life and motion again, and there was another grand cooking and a hearty meal. While the cooking was going on, I employed the time by going with the Indian to see him fish. He took with him a pole twenty feet long, to which he attached a spear by a long cord, and as soon as he had thrown the spear he either let the pole fall on the water, or kept it in his hand, according to the size and strength of the fish. When he threw the spear, he never once missed. The cord was made of the entrails of the elk, and resembled a strong harp-string.

*November 8th.* After breakfast we continued our journey, and traveled this day seventeen or eighteen miles, entirely through magnificent woods. When we had proceeded but a short distance we came upon the Oregon Territory, and soon met with a tribe of the Rogue-river Indians. We entered several of the wigwams, and my guide tried to get some fish, which he had not hitherto been able to do; and I crept, as I had done the day before, into many of these earthy habitations, to observe the mode of life and doings of the people.

The Indians of the North of California stand at the very lowest point of culture, and are said to have no idea of religion or of a future state; but in many of their villages you find a sort of conjuror or "medicine man," who undertakes by his potent art to

Digitized by Google

cure diseases, discover thefts, and point out the places where stolen goods lie concealed.

These Indians do not scalp their enemies or take them prisoners, but they kill all the men who fall into their power, though never the women. If a woman or a child comes within range of their arrows, they call to them to get out of the way. They fight with men, they say, and not with the weak and helpless—an example that may make us feel ashamed when we remember in how many of the wars of whites women and children have been tortured and murdered.

The people here were larger and stronger than those in South California, but not handsomer; and among the women, who were tattooed on the hands and arms as well as the chin, there were some extremely clumsy figures. Men and women both wear their hair in a long roll, and, since they are unacquainted with combs, they make their fingers answer the purpose; they then stroke it smooth, and twist it up round the head with a bit of the skin of some animal, or some other rag. The girls cut their hair short in the front. Both sexes follow the widely-prevailing fashion of sticking a round piece of wood or brass through the cartilage of the ear; the men and boys wear ornaments of beads at the gristle of the nose; and both ladies and gentlemen put on as much finery in the way of glass beads and feathers as they can get. Their only weapons are bows and arrows, and also, since the settlement of the whites among them, knives. The elk they usually take in snares.

They are extremely filthy—almost too much so to describe. I have seen them, for instance, searching in each other's heads for vermin, and presenting all the specimens they found conscientiously to the owner, who actually devoured them!

The men go in the morning into the river, but, like the Malays, bring all the dirt out on their skins that they took in. I did not, nevertheless, see so many cutaneous diseases among them as among the Malays or Dyaks, and I am inclined to think this is to be attributed to a very peculiar kind of bath that they take. They make a hole in the earth something like their habitations, but still smaller, and in this they make a very large fire, and remain crouched in it till they are literally bathed in perspiration.

Digitized by Google

Among these tribes there were wonderfully few children, though the people mostly looked strong and healthy. The babies they had were put into longish narrow baskets with covers, and bound upon the backs of the mothers, who perform all their customary work with this burden, and, as usual among rude nations, the greatest part of the work falls on the women; but it is not very severe, being principally weaving of the baskets and gathering acorns. This last occupation, however, is often very fatiguing, as they have a long way to walk and a considerable burden to carry. The men, if they go with them at all, will only carry a very small portion.

In many of the villages I found the men playing at a game. They sat in a circle round the fire, holding in their hands little thin sticks, of which most were white, but some black. Every one threw them so as to make the black ones fly far out of the circle; then he took hold of them again, passed them behind his back from the left to the right hand, and began to throw again. There were many lookers on, and some musicians, whose instruments consisted of lobster-claws fastened upon sticks, wherewith they thumped upon a board. Another game is a kind of guessing one, played with small clay balls and for money—shell-money, that is to say, the only currency they are acquainted with, and which has a certain value among them; for, besides other articles, they can buy wives with it!

These games, to which they are passionately addicted, are generally played in the hall of the chief; and while the play lasts the women are banished. It was the men being entirely occupied with these gambling amusements that prevented our getting any fish.

We passed the night in a village, and I slept as before in a wigwam, with several women; but my poor companion had, during this night, a narrow escape from being murdered. Some vague feeling of suspicion had, as he told me the next morning, occasioned him to be more cautious than usual. He did not trust the people, and had begged to be allowed a hut to himself. This was given him; but the feeling of insecurity made him sleep very lightly, and that saved him; for, in the middle of the night he heard a

Digitized by Google

rustling among the boughs with which he had closed the entrance, and soon saw an Indian come crawling in on hands and knees. His enemy was just in the act of raising himself up, and with a drawn knife in his hand, when the sailor sprang upon him and presented a pistol at his head. Thereupon the Indian drew back, pretending he had only come to see whether there was wood enough to keep the fire up.

These Indians are represented as treacherous, cowardly, and revengeful, and only attacking the whites when they find one alone. But, after all, what other means of attack have they against the well-armed whites—the domineering race from which they have had so much to suffer. Revenge is really natural to man; and if the whites had suffered as many wrongs from them as they from the whites, I rather think they too would have felt the desire of revenge.

In the country I passed through yesterday I saw several burnt and devastated wigwams, whence the people had been driven out by force because they would not willingly give up their native soil to the stranger; and besides taking their land, the whites seduce their wives and daughters, and, when they can not succeed in this, sometimes seize them by open violence. A case of this kind occurred while I was in Crescent City. Three miles from the town some Americans had settled as farmers; and one day, when a native was passing by their door with his wife, on his way to the town, these ruffians sprang out of their dwelling, snatched the woman from the side of her husband, dragged her into the house, and locked the door. The poor Indian screamed, and yelled, and struck the door, demanding his wife; but, instead of giving up their prey, these civilized men rushed out again, beat the Indian furiously, and drove him away.

The poor fellow came, all bruised, to the town, and made his complaint; and what was his redress? The villains were recommended to make it up with the Indian, and give him some glass beads and similar trumpery by way of compensation!

Outrages of this kind are naturally made known from tribe to tribe; and then it certainly does happen that, when solitary whites come among them, and for the moment the superiority of force is

Digitized by Google

on their side, they seek to retaliate, and, in so doing, make the innocent suffer for the guilty.

Many impartial persons have assured me that wherever the natives have been treated in a kind and friendly manner they have been found harmless.

*November 9th.* In the morning we left the dangerous village, and began our return journey; for my companion would not venture further. We returned by a different route, and in the afternoon came to a small settlement of about a dozen whites. Here also the first thing I saw was the remains of a wigwam that had been burned to ashes. These farmers, it seems, lived in a state of constant strife with the Indians, on account of their women; and they naturally revenged themselves when they could, and had at last killed one of the white men, whereupon the rest set fire to the village and drove away its inhabitants. Since that time the settlers can never venture to go about their work without a loaded gun, and so much the more as three men have lately been missed from a neighboring white settlement. Two of the bodies were shortly afterward found in the forest, buried under branches and leaves; the third a long way off, in a river whence the farmers used to fetch water. They told me that when they came suddenly upon the half-decayed body, the disgust of the sight made them all ill. The fourth victim had not yet been found.

We stopped for the night at this settlement, though there were only two small huts, almost like log-houses; but the settlers were already building better ones. These farmers lived extremely well. They had the finest wild geese, which they had shot themselves; magnificent fish, that they got for the merest trifle from the Indians; potatoes, bread, tea, coffee—in short, it was quite a banquet; and we had another the next morning no less splendid.

The weather was now getting extremely cold: in the night the temperature fell below the freezing point; and in the morning every thing was covered with hoar frost. Snow seldom falls here, and when it does, melts before it touches the ground. The farmers assured me that there was every appearance of the soil being abundantly fertile; but they had been settled too short a time, and had cultivated too small a spot of ground to make their

Digitized by Google

opinion very important. In the neighborhood of Crescent City, however, I saw, even at this advanced time of year, all kinds of vegetables, and among them as fine specimens as in the Grand Exhibition at San Francisco.

The whole of California—but more particularly the northern part—would be found, I think, very advantageous to European settlers. The climate is healthy, the soil productive, even where it looks dry and sandy—as the luxuriant forests sufficiently testify. It is virgin soil, and for a long while will require neither irrigation nor manure. By the time it does, the settlers may be well provided with cattle to furnish it.

Near to the Oregon Territory the land is sold by government at a dollar an acre. Within the limits of Oregon it is given away, as it is greatly desired to have that country settled; and every inducement is offered to immigrants. Would that people came with a view to agriculture, rather than to gold-seeking! With a little sagacity and perseverance, farmers may, in a short time, attain to a prosperous condition, and be able to lead a pleasant, domestic life for the rest of their days. Of the gold-seekers a very small proportion, indeed, return home in possession of much of the wealth so suddenly won; and the proverb of "lightly come, lightly go," is strictly applicable to their fortunes.

On the 10th of November, the fourth day of my excursion, I found myself once more in Crescent City, and bringing with me a very painful impression of the lot of the poor driven-out Indians. The Government of the United States has indeed given itself some trouble about them; and though their chief care has always been to get them removed to as great a distance as possible, they have offered them some compensation for the land they have been deprived of, have urged the white settlers to treat them well, and every year send an envoy to their new abode, to take presents to them, and see at least that they do not die of hunger. The great fault of the government is over-indulgence toward the white settlers, mostly men almost as rude as the savages themselves, and far less well disposed, who shamefully abuse the indulgence. As long as there are so few courts of justice in the country that it is very difficult for a native to find his way to one,



Digitized by Google

and until these courts show some more just severity to the misconduct of the settlers, the poor Indian will remain the sport of the insolent white. The country round Crescent City is not only very fertile, but very romantic. The beautiful mountain chain Siskoyon, which rises to the east of Marysville, stretches as far as here, and, dividing into several branches, forms fruitful valleys and plains. The higher peaks were at this season covered with snow—the first snow that I had seen since I left my own country.

The steamer that runs from Crescent City to San Francisco had been ready to start on the very evening of my return; but the weather, which had been very stormy all day, became worse toward evening, and she did not go. Even the next day (November 11th) it was no easy matter to get on board. Storms and mists accompanied us, too, on our whole voyage, so that we did not run into Trinidad; but, by way of compensation, we saw a beautiful rainbow.

For my third excursion to St. José I was indebted to the polite invitation of the Austrian consul, M. Vischer—a great attention on his part; for in this country time is estimated at a very high value, and the smallest recreation of this kind becomes extremely expensive.

It was to be a land journey; and as the country was described to us as enchantingly beautiful, we placed ourselves outside an omnibus, in order to enjoy it to the utmost.

The plain in which St. José lies extends for 120 miles, from San Francisco on one side to Monterey on the other. It is about fifteen miles broad, and on account of its great fertility is already named the granary of California.

The first part of the journey—about a third—I can not call beautiful at all; the country is monotonous, and without vegetation, except some crippled-looking trees, whose leafy crowns have been blown all on one side by the constant and violent north-easterly gales that make the climate of San Francisco so disagreeable. The ground is little cultivated, and consists mostly of meagre pastures, on which the poor animals can only in the spring find sufficient nourishment. It is said, nevertheless, to be excellent land, and only to require cultivation.

Digitized by Google

Three miles from San Francisco lies the missionary station Dolores, to which I had been before introduced by Mrs. Morton. The people residing at the place are called Spaniards—a name given to all natives of the country who are neither negroes nor Indians. Their houses, as well as the convent and the church, are built of baked brick; but they have such low doors and windows, and are altogether so deplorable-looking, that I should rather have taken them for dilapidated barns than dwelling-houses. The church contains a fine altar-piece that I am inclined to ascribe to an old Spanish master.

In the territory of San Mateo, twenty-two miles from San Francisco, the country begins to be prettier. The Diabolo mountain, 3600 feet high, rises boldly above its neighbors; and tall trees of large growth—mostly oaks—lie scattered in park-like groups; and country seats, inns, and farms, interspersed, give animation to the prospect. The ground is chiefly sand and dust, in which the horses' feet often sink a foot deep; but still I can imagine that in the rainy season, in the spring, when the fields are green, the flowers in blossom, and the trees covered with fresh foliage, the country must be very pretty and pleasant, and may easily, to townspeople little accustomed to the beauties of nature, appear "enchanting."

St. Clara, through which our road lay, is a pleasant little place, with a handsome church and a Jesuits' college for boys. The word *San*, prefixed to the names of so many towns and villages, reminds you that the country once belonged to Catholic Spain; and in most of the larger ones you find handsome churches and school buildings.

An avenue of trees, four miles long, which was planted by the monks, leads from St. José to St. Clara—rather more of a town than the former, and possessing some hundreds of houses, mostly inhabited by recently-arrived settlers.

Our destination, a great farm belonging to M. Vischer, lay four miles further. This farm is of 750 acres, and in Europe would pass for a very large one; but here it is only not small. There are still some land-owners holding from the time of the Mexican government, when the land had scarcely any value, whose posses-

Digitized by Google

sions are five or six miles in breadth, and from twenty to thirty in length, and the value of which is increasing every day. Persons whose estates before the gold discoveries were not worth 50,000 dollars, must now be counted among millionaires. The great expense attendant on landed property is for inclosure. Every owner of land has to inclose it, for two reasons: first, because all horned cattle, as well as horses, mules, pigs, and sheep, may be driven to pasture on open ground; and, secondly, that newly-arrived immigrants settle on uninclosed land, without any leave asked; and, according to American custom, the proprietor has, in such a case, no right to drive them out. Even if he afterward has the ground inclosed, the ejection is attended with great difficulty, and involves expensive lawsuits, and sometimes requires actual violence. Regular battles, with shooting on both sides, have frequently taken place on such occasions; and altogether the outrageous ways of these American settlers are almost incredible. Many will actually carry their notions of liberty so far as to take possession of houses that they find standing empty.

The inclosures—fences as they are called—cost much hard cash in a country where labor is so dear. M. Vischer, for instance, required for the fences on his land 30,000 stakes eight feet high. These cost in the forest fifty dollars a thousand; the taking them to the spot and sharpening them, thirty more; and the putting them in their places, twenty; so that the whole cost was 3000 dollars, or above 600 pounds.

Twelve miles from St. José lies a very large and rich quicksilver mine, to which we were to pay a visit, and the carriage was even at the door; but a continued and violent rain would have made it in too literal a sense a "water party," and I was obliged to content myself with the description given by M. Vischer. You enter the pit, I was told, on the side of a mountain 1500 feet high; and 800 feet lower down you again come to the light of day.

The cinnabar ore contains from thirty-five to forty-five per cent. of the metal; the mine is so rich that it might supply the whole world; and since it has been worked the price of quicksilver has fallen in Peru from eighty to fifty dollars. It belongs to a com-

Digitized by Google

pany in Mexico, whose floating capital is estimated at a million of dollars.

The weather did not clear up the next day; so there was nothing for it but to renounce the chief object of the excursion, and in a well-closed omnibus drive back to the town.

A few days before I left San Francisco, the newspapers brought some strange intelligence from Lower California, a country still belonging to Mexico. Some fifty Americans had, it seems, left San Francisco in a shallop, and, landing at Filipe, in the district of Sonora, set up their standard, and formally taken possession. The peaceful inhabitants of this little place, not in the least expecting such a piratical attack, had not even arms, and could make but a feeble defense, especially as the pirates professed to be only the advanced guard of a much more considerable force. The fifty Americans remained, therefore, in triumphant possession, and at once declared a strip of land with a population of 10,000 souls an independent State.

The inducement to this illegal expedition was, of course, the thirst of gold, excited by a report that gold and silver were to be found there in large quantities.

And what was said at San Francisco to this robber expedition? Some openly took the part of the robbers; others thought that, at all events, their exploit was a stroke of genius. The day before my departure—the 15th of December—a new band, 256 in number, went off to Sonora to help their predecessors; and there was no attempt to stop them on the part of the American government. This second expedition, however, was not quite so successful. The Mexican government sent troops against them, with orders to shoot them down like banditti wherever they made their appearance; and ultimately most of these buccaneers perished.

The company whose steamers go from San Francisco to Panama, immediately on the simple request of one of their officers, Mr. Mather, gave me a free passage; and on the 10th of December I went on board one of these magnificent vessels, the *Golden Gate* (Captain Johans), in company with the Morton family, who had become very dear to me. At four o'clock we weighed anch-

Digitized by Google

or and departed. I think I have never in my life seen a finer vessel. She was of 800-horse power, and 2500 tons' burden, and could take 800 or, in case of need, 1000 passengers. Her rate was twelve miles an hour, and she used fifty tons of coals a day. Her length was 300 feet, her greatest breadth 75 feet, and the saloon 130 feet long. She had four stories, two of which were above the water; and broad galleries ran round the sides, on which large convenient doors and windows opened. The table kept for the first and second classes of passengers was luxurious to prodigality; all the dishes were prepared in the most costly manner, and fresh bread baked twice a day; the third class also was proportionably well provided for. The captain and his officers were worthy of so fine a vessel, and no less distinguished for their attentive and courteous behavior, for which they received the acknowledgments of the passengers, in a public address, on our arrival at Panama. We sailed past the islands of San Caterina, St. Clemens, St. Barbara, and St. Anacopa. On the last, only a fortnight ago, a splendid vessel, called the *Winfield Scott*, was wrecked. The night was excessively dark and foggy; and the captain was so very incautious as, in such weather, to pass between the islands and the continent, instead of outside the islands. Happily no lives were lost; but the vessel sank so rapidly, that no luggage whatever—nothing but the gold and half the mail-bags—were saved. We, too, passed through the narrow strait, but lighted by the friendly moon, and with the ocean as profoundly calm as if it were asleep, and at most only dreaming of the mischief it had done.

*December* 18*th.* This morning we stopped for half an hour at St. Diego to land a few passengers; but the vessel lay so far from the coast, that I could see very little of the new American town, and of the older one of the Mexicans, four miles off, nothing at all.

Near St. Diego rises one of the high mountain chains whose summits attain the region of perpetual snow; but the whole coast, of which we had not yet lost sight, as well as the mountains, are covered with vegetation and forest.

*December* 19*th.* We kept far off the main land, but near the islands of *Cerroo* and the little *Bonitos;* the first about twenty-six

Digitized by Google

miles long, and looking beautiful and fertile, though uninhabited, as it is said to be deficient in water—Bonitos a mere craggy rock without tree or bush, and covered with scanty vegetation.

*December 20th.* Mostly out at sea, but steering for Cape Lazara, and afterward entering Magdalen Bay.

*December 21st, 22d.* Still at sea. For some days past the bleak weather of California had begun to give way to a warmer temperature. With every turn of the paddle-wheels one seemed to feel the approach to the tropics, and one warm piece of clothing after another was thrown aside. In the evenings the deck formed a most pleasant rendezvous. People promenaded up and down, or formed groups for conversation; children ran and romped about; and the whole scene was richly illuminated by a brilliant moon and thousands of stars. Truly a voyage in one of these "water-palaces" is a thing to be remembered with pleasure.

The company consisted almost wholly of Americans; and again I had occasion to notice the respectful courtesy of the gentlemen toward our sex—far greater than I have ever seen in any other country. The commonest American boy of ten years old is in this respect equal to the most refined European gentleman. In other points, too, the demeanor of the passengers was perfectly decorous; no one chewed tobacco, or spat, or came into the saloon with a cigar, or did any thing that could cause the slighest annoyance; and this was the more surprising, as there is nowhere more mixed company than on the voyages to and from California. At dinner there was the best opportunity for noticing this mixture; for the lucky miner, artisan, or peddler sat next the great merchant and capitalist; and when at dessert they leaned their elbows on the table, you saw many hands that had obviously been only accustomed to handle the spade and the shovel. I must own I found much more pleasure in this simple and natural, but well-behaved company, than in the stately formality of, for instance, one of the great English steamers to India, where the women dressed every day as if they were going to a ball, as indeed they did also in the little American steamers that went from San Francisco to Sacramento and Marysville. Here the ladies were well but simply attired. An American does not take it to heart

Digitized by Google

either if you sit, walk, or stand otherwise than he does, and thinks that whether you put your knife or your fork in your mouth is a matter that concerns you, and not him. He is not liable to the besetting weakness of so many of the English, of considering every one rude and vulgar who does any thing differently from themselves.

On the 23d of December we ran into the Bay of Acapulco. The mountains around are not high, and not so richly clothed as in the Indian Archipelago, but glorious in comparison with the naked sand-hills of California, and you see high-feathered cocoa-palms, vast mangoes, and many beautiful trees and shrubs, skirting the sea-shore, and climbing up the hills.

*December 23d.* I here set foot for the first, and probably also for the last time, on Mexican soil.

The small town of Acapulco lies on hilly ground, in a corner of the bay so hidden that it is hardly to be seen at all; and the fort is enthroned on a majestic promontory, that throws itself out far into the sea. The town contains only 1500 inhabitants, and has a very poor appearance; the houses are of unburned brick, wood, or clay, only one story high, and with windows strongly barred. The interior is pleasanter than one might expect, as the rooms are lofty and airy, and furnished toward the court with verandas, where the people take their meals and pass the greater part of the day.

Near the square, which serves as a market-place, and which is disfigured by many little booths, is a handsome Catholic church, built of unburned brick—a rather favorite material seemingly with the Spaniards, as all their buildings in California are constructed with it.

The whole place has a ruinous look, for in the last year, on the 4th of December, an earthquake took place by which most of the buildings were more or less damaged, and some of them thrown quite down. Fortunately it happened at nine o'clock in the evening, when every body was up and ready for immediate flight. Even the fortress, which I ascended in order to get a good view over the bay and the adjacent country, had suffered considerably, and its stone walls and ramparts had in many places fallen in.

Digitized by Google

Acapulco is celebrated for the pearls which are found on some islands lying twenty or thirty miles off. The fishery is carried on in a very simple manner, by men who dive seventy or eighty feet deep into the sea, taking with them knives to loosen the pearl-oysters from the rock, and baskets to put them in, and after remaining below one or two minutes, they come to the surface again, with or without booty. The chief danger of the pearl-fishers is from sharks, which swarm round the coast, but which the fishers are very dexterous in escaping from. They always take with them a long rounded piece of wood, which, when they can not get away by swimming or diving, they stick into the open jaws of the monster as he comes toward them; and they have then plenty of time to escape before he can recover from this peculiar kind of locked-jaw.

The pearls are found, not in the shell, as is often asserted, but in the animal itself; the shell contains only mother-of-pearl. In many shells there is a kind of excrescence like pearl, but not really such; it proceeds from some other animal, and resembles the excrescences on leaves and plants. Although every one of these oysters contains the material of pearl, and sometimes as much as eight or nine, a fisherman may bring up many before he is lucky enough to get a really fine one; and the more there are in an oyster the more certain it is that none of them are of much value.

It is supposed that the pearl is produced by disease in the animal; and though the people here often eat the pearl-oyster, they will not eat those that contain many pearls, as they consider them unwholesome. The pearls from the coasts of Mexico and New Granada are considered of very fine water, and even on the spot bear a high price.

I saw in Acapulco some pretty little manufactures of flowers from small shells; and some extremely well modeled wax figures, representing the costumes and employments of the people of Mexico, which I believe come from the city.

The inhabitants of Acapulco are of very mixed origin, proceeding from the ancient race mingled with the Negro and Spanish, by which the country was conquered three hundred years ago; and according to the predominance of the blood of one or the other

Digitized by Google

people is the variation of feature and color, through every shade of black, brown, and white.

After a stay of only six hours on shore we went on board again, where we were much amused by the performances of the juvenile pearl-fishers, who were swimming round the ship, and calling on the passengers to throw money into the sea, that they might display their skill in finding it. In this way they familiarize themselves with the element, and qualify themselves for their future vocation as pearl-fishers.

On leaving Acapulco we went a good way out to sea, and did not see land again till just before we got to Panama.

Christmas-eve we passed very quietly, like any other; and Christmas-day was distinguished at dinner by many hurras and the drinking of much Champagne and other wines.

*December 28th.* To-day land appeared again; at first like high mountains, which, as we approached, seemed to sink into plains. Vegetation was not very luxuriant, and in some places the country even looked barren. By nine o'clock in the evening we were lying before Panama, having performed the voyage of 3300 miles from San Francisco in eleven days and nineteen hours; not including, of course, those in which we had stopped.

As early as four on the following morning our water-palace was all alive and in motion. Every body was in a hurry to go ashore, in order to secure the best mules for the journey across the Isthmus. I went ashore as early as I could too, though I was not going across, for land is land, and, after all, one prefers *terra firma* to the best of ships. I was so fortunate as to meet with a very cordial reception from Dr. Antonrieth; but my first walk was to the spot where I found the whole ship's company assembled, preparing for the journey. It was quite a gay scene; all were bustling about, and the square was full of men, mules, horses, porters, and luggage. The more opulent rode, the little children were carried, the luggage was packed on mules, and the poor followed on foot.

The breadth of the Isthmus at this part is rather more than 100 miles, of which 23 are done on horseback, or muleback, about 40 by water, and the remainder on the new railroad. This short journey, like every thing else in this country, is very dear, from

Digitized by Google

the great number of passengers constantly arriving. Landing from the steamer, for instance, a distance of three miles, costs two dollars a head, with half a dollar more for being lifted ashore, when it is ebb-tide and the boats can not get quite up, and the same sum again for landing a trunk. If you want to be taken on board a ship, the case is still worse, and twice or thrice those sums are often demanded. It is a great oversight on the part of the company to which the steamers belong that they have not taken measures to deliver travelers from this extortion.

The hire of a mule for the twenty-three miles was this time eighteen dollars; had there been more passengers, the charge would have been still higher. A place in the boat costs five, on the railroad eight dollars; the luggage twenty cents a pound, so that altogether this little journey comes to not less than forty dollars, without board or lodging.

Panama is the chief town and largest harbor of the district of the same name in the republic of New Granada, which contains more than two millions of inhabitants, and has its capital, Bogota, in the interior. The country round is very beautiful; rocks and islands, among which are Taboga and Taboquilla, rise out of the water, and a chain of hills, of not more than 500 feet high, runs down to the sea-shore. The great mountain chain of Mexico and New Granada, which is seen at a distance, has here sunk considerably.

The town, with the suburbs and the immediate environs, contains nearly 10,000 persons. It has important fortifications, furnished, on the sea-side, with half a dozen guns and some mortars. It has three squares, the largest of which is spacious and very clean; a cathedral with a handsome façade; and a most agreeable impression was made on me, coming from San Francisco, by not seeing old clothes, shirts, hats and shoes, dead dogs, cats, and rats, etc., lying about the streets. At San Francisco you stumble upon them at every step. I was also delighted with being able to breathe and move about freely in the houses, and could well dispense with carpets and fine furniture, in consideration of space and air.

Of churches and chapels there is no lack, for this small town

Digitized by Google

has more than a dozen in use, besides many others lying in ruins. If religion and virtue went on increasing in the same ratio as churches and priests, the people of Panama would certainly be exemplary; but, unluckily, it sometimes seems as if one must calculate them rather in the inverse proportion.

The cathedral is the largest, but what is called the negro church is the most decorated. A great deal of silver is employed in ornamenting it, but in a very tasteless manner, so that no good effect is produced; and the statues of saints are frightfully carved and painted, and dressed up in silk velvet and lace, with real human hair on their heads, so that they are enough to frighten you.

On Sunday, at high mass, there was plenty of music and singing; but such dreadful ear-splitting music, that I really think a Malay concert would have been preferable. I began to think I had been quite unjust to the musical performances of that people. Some of the melodies, too, were of so frisky a character, that I could hardly fancy I was in a church, and not in a theatre. Would that these people had simpler churches, and fewer but better priests!

As, in my travels in Chili and Brazil, I have before had occasion to remark, the priests stand at so low a point of culture and character, that they should rather be employed in any thing than in Divine service and popular instruction; and neither here nor there are they held in the smallest respect by the people. In other countries, where the priests really fulfill their duties in a manner worthy of their office—as at Batavia and Padang, for instance—I found them in the enjoyment of the highest esteem of all classes. But in the Spanish and Portuguese American countries there are few priests at all worthy of the name, and the popular education and morality are at a low ebb indeed.

Among the ruins, the finest are those of the former college and church of St. Domingo; both of which would offer splendid subjects for a painter. They are not so entirely destroyed but that many fine portions of the buildings, majestic cupolas, moulded ceilings, porticoes, etc., are still to be distinguished; and the most beautiful climbing plants have twined themselves round the fragments of the walls, and blossoms and flowers cover the pavement,

Digitized by Google

and peep out of dilapidated doors and windows. The ruins of the church of St. Domingo are distinguished by an arch of peculiar construction, which attracts the attention of all connoisseurs, being so slightly curved that it scarcely rises three feet in a span of thirty.

The population of Panama is of the same mixed race—Indian, old Spanish, and Negro—as the inhabitants of Acapulco; but among these mongrels are some very handsome people, with remarkably fine eyes, hair, and teeth. Their hands and feet are also admired for their smallness; but, as among the Malays, the rounded form is wanting, the fingers are too long, and you see the bones too much.

Since there has been so great a concourse of passengers across the Isthmus, these people need want for nothing, if they were only ever so little industrious; but many of them much prefer poverty and filth to work. They live chiefly on rice and fruit, though they like beef and pork, when they can get it without earning it. A great deal of dried beef is brought from Buenos Ayres in long narrow strips, and sold by the ell.

The costume of these people is European: the men wear breeches and jackets; the women long dresses, wherewith they sweep the streets. They are cut very low on the bust, and trimmed with lace so broad that it falls far below the waist. If this costume were only clean and neatly put on, it would be very elegant; but it generally hangs on so loosely that, while on one shoulder it drops off so as to leave shoulder and bosom bare, on the other it is hoisted up to the neck. With the broad flounces they wipe the dust from their faces; or they use them for dusters, or even for pocket-handkerchiefs. Both sexes wear little round straw hats, which they know how to plait; but these do not look well on the women, as they are too small, and scarcely serve to cover the thick plaits of their hair.

Women and girls are very fond of decking their hair with flowers; natural when they have them, if not, artificial. They, as well as the men, are passionate smokers of cigars. You see children of ten years old with these things in their mouths; and the men have a knack, when they are doing any thing, of putting the burning part into their mouths, by which they keep the cigar

Digitized by Google

lighted longer. The favorite diversion of the people is cock-fighting; but they are not very much addicted to it, and I saw none of those spectacles while I was there.

Of the public institutions of Panama I visited only the hospitals, of which there are two: one for the natives, supported by the government; the other for strangers, founded by the Europeans. The former is beneath notice; it consists of nothing more than a long passage open at one side, in which patients suffering from contagious diseases are placed, along with others but very slightly ill,—and dirt and destitution are its chief characteristics. It is more like a prison than a place for the cure of disease, and the very sight of it is enough to kill any sick person who had not grown up in the midst of poverty and misery. I saw about a dozen poor creatures here—some with bad eyes, others suffering from cutaneous diseases and disgusting tumors—crawling about on the unboarded ground, with their bandages in a most filthy state.

The Strangers' Hospital is a very different thing; it is, indeed, only a dismantled ship, fitted up for the purpose; but every thing is clean and well arranged, and the greatest care is taken of patients.

Among the short excursions round Panama, I found a walk to the mountain Aneon best worth the trouble. You can get to its summit with perfect convenience in an hour and a half; and, when there, you find a prospect that you might sit and gaze at for hours without tiring. You look over the whole town, a part of which juts out far into the sea. Behind this extends a large, richly luxuriant valley, watered by a river; but still, alas! mostly covered by forest. On one side lies the wide ocean, with its numerous islands and islets; and on the other rise ranges of hills and mountains, and inclose the beautiful picture like its frame. I never obtained such an enjoyment as this prospect afforded in all California, although I have traversed it in many directions. Unfortunately, Panama is not healthy; the climate is very hot, and strangers are continually attacked by the malignant fever of the country, which, in many instances, proves fatal. The cause of this unhealthiness is said to be in the uncultivated state of the land; and that beautiful and richly luxuriant valley is principally a morass.

Digitized by Google

## CHAPTER XV.

Journey to Lima.—The English Steamer.—Guayaquil.—Callao.—German Emigrants.—Lima.—Churches and Public Buildings.—Peruvian Ladies. —Earthquake. — Insecurity. — The Watering-place. — Chorillos. — The Ruin of the Temple of the Sun.—Pochacamac.—The Hacienda of St. Pedro.

I KEPT the new year at Panama with my friend Dr. Antonrieth, and then left for Lima in the steamer *Bolivia*. An English company has hitherto enjoyed the monopoly of the line from Panama to Valparaiso, undisturbed by any competition from the Americans; and, as a not uncommon consequence of this freedom from competition, we find high prices and very indifferent accommodation for travelers. These steamers certainly do not show any signs of the philanthropic tendencies of which in England we hear so much; and, although the captain was very polite and attentive, and the food good, I can not deny that I should be very glad to see some rival American steamer started.

I will mention a few of the arrangements of the vessel. The sleeping-cabins for first-class passengers are so confined, especially those of the ladies, that they can not possibly dress or undress otherwise than one after the other. When these are full, passengers who come later must sleep in the dining-room; and, should that also be filled, as it may be, since as many passengers as can be crammed in are taken, the late arrivals must go into the fore-cabin, which is clean and handsome indeed, but without any other partitions than a small curtain before each berth. Both sexes are put into it; though the English in their own country are so fastidious as not to permit a gentleman to enter the ladies' waiting-room. But where profit is in question, other considerations, I am afraid, are apt to give way.

The place for second-class passengers is a mere hole, to which you descend by a ladder. There are neither beds nor bolsters, and the passengers can merely stretch themselves on the hard

Digitized by Google

dirty ground. The whole furniture is a long table and a long bench, and the food consists of the remains of what is furnished to the first cabin. As for table-cloths, glasses, and so forth, they are regarded as quite needless luxuries, and the stewards and servants are in this cabin associated with the passengers. The place for the third class is the open deck, without so much as an awning to protect travelers from the rain or the tropical sun. This treatment of their passengers certainly does not show any very liberal character in the company. What a contrast it presents to that of the *Golden Gate*, where even the steerage passengers had a roomy cabin, a good bed, and excellent food, without having any more to pay than in the English vessel.

On the 10th of January we crossed the equator without suffering in the least from the heat; and Captain Strahan, who had been several years making the passages between Panama and Valparaiso, assured me he had always found the temperature moderate along this coast. The sky is very commonly covered with clouds, by which the heat of the sun is much diminished.

On the 11th we entered the Gulf of Guayaquil, and saw the coast of the republic of Ecuador. In the foreground lay a smooth hill, from the top of which the land stretched away to a boundless extent. Afterward we passed a rock which, from the peculiarity of its shape, has been called the "Dead Man." Early the next morning we got to Guayaquil, which lies fifty miles up the fine River Guaya. The town contains 12,000 inhabitants, and is the first harbor and the second city in the country. The capital, Quito, lies on the other side of the Chimborazo, at a height of 10,000 feet. The situation of Guayaquil is very pretty, as the river here widens to the extent of half a mile, and the environs are very fertile. The background of the landscape is formed by finely wooded hills, and in the distance rise the mighty Cordilleras; among which, in clear weather, can be seen the lofty Chimborazo, 21,000 feet high.

The manner in which the houses are built is well adapted to the climate. They have but one story, and are provided toward the street with broad balconies resting on pillars or arches, under which you walk, so that you are sheltered from the heat of the

Digitized by Google

sun. There are also broad galleries or balconies on the inner side of the house, toward the court, and the rooms are as lofty and spacious as they ought to be where the heat is so great.

My first walk, when I come into a town new to me, is to the bazars and markets, for there you can always get some idea of the people and of the productions; and accordingly I made use of the brief period of our stay here to visit these places. I was quite surprised by the variety and abundance of provisions; there were whole boatsful of pine-apples and other fruit, corn of all kinds, rice, maize, vegetables, meats, fish, poultry, eggs, chocolate, etc., and every thing incomparably cheaper than at Panama. Yet, notwithstanding this cheapness, there is no such thing as copper money; and the smallest silver coin—a *quarto medio*—is worth two cents and a half. Even this is so seldom seen, that you might suppose it an imaginary coin.

Toward the evening of the 13th we got to Payta; a wretched-looking place, with most melancholy environs, belonging to Peru. As far as the eye can reach neither tree, bush, nor even a blade of grass, is to be seen. There are a few dozen flat-roofed houses, covered with reeds and clay; but you can hardly distinguish them from the sandy, dusty, and hilly ground on which they stand. We stopped here about the same time as at Guayaquil, and Captain Strahan was kind enough every where to take me ashore with him. I could find nothing better to do here, however, than to climb one of the small hills, about thirty or forty feet high, to try if there were any thing more to be seen beyond; but it was all the same. More and more hills, and nothing else, formed the continuation of this most dreary-looking wilderness. You have to go twenty-one miles up a river before you can see any sort of vegetation; there is not a drop of water to drink that is not brought from fourteen miles off; and linen has to be sent the same distance to be washed. What can induce people to live in such a place?

*January* 14*th and* 15*th.* More land seen; sometimes flat, sometimes hilly or even mountainous, but always of the same mournful and desolate aspect.

Casma is a landing-place on the coast, with a few miserable



Digitized by Google

huts roofed with leaves to afford shelter to passengers waiting for the steamers. The town lies six miles inland; and here begin the higher mountains, but they are still as barren and dreary as ever; but we stopped only an hour to take in fruit and passengers.

The nearer we came to Lima the more our deck resembled a bivouac; the number of travelers was constantly increasing; temporary cabins were constructed out of chests and trunks, till the crew could hardly pass along; the cabins were choked full, so that we could scarcely stir; and the worst of it was that, though the sea was perfectly smooth, the company were more sea-sick than I have even seen any other people at any time.

The ladies came on board wrapped in furs; silk dresses were rustling on every side; beautiful Chinese shawls, pearls, and jewels displayed themselves to admiring eyes; and even waiting-women were glorious in their embroidered shoes and silk stockings: but the effect of this rich dress was somewhat marred by little round straw hats, like those of the men, that suited the rest of the costume very ill. All this finery was also by no means tastefully arranged; nor were the colors, which were of the showiest, well chosen.

The Peruvian women have very small well-shaped feet; and they are so desirous to show them to advantage as never, I was told, to wear a pair of shoes as much as a week. They require them, too, to fit as closely as our *élégantes* do their gloves; and, on putting a shoe on, they bend it backward, so as to force the foot into the smallest possible size.

*January 17th.* We now kept constantly in sight of lofty barren mountains, which increased in height as we approached Callao.

At Huacho, a small fortified town, surrounded, like Payta, by a desert, we made a short halt; but a very short one, as the captain was in a hurry to get to Callao, where he ought to have been the day before; but the steamer went very slowly. On an average we did not do more than six miles an hour; for, as there is no competition, all the bad old boats are sent to this station, and travelers have no remedy.

The small town of Callao has the most considerable harbor in Peru. It is very much sheltered, being so surrounded by mount-

Digitized by Google

ains; but there is no appearance of forest or of vegetation. The town has 7000 inhabitants, and there is something of an Oriental character about its style of building. The houses are flat and low, with terraced roofs and irregular windows, often only closed with latticed wooden balconies, that hang against the wall. They are built partly of unburned brick and partly of reeds plastered with clay. The rooms are gloomy, as they usually receive light only from one window opening on the roof, not glazed, but, as I have said, closed with a wooden lattice, and by shutters that are opened and shut by means of a cord hanging down into the room.

The fortress, which since the declaration of independence bears the name of *Independenzia*, is a very important one, of considerable size, and built in the form of an octagon. It is in good repair, and surrounded by a deep broad ditch, which, by means of a communication with the sea, can be readily filled with water.

I staid a day at Callao, and, before any thing else, I visited the market, which really astonished me by the rich abundance of productions of both hemispheres that it exhibited. The various grades of elevation in the Cordilleras offer, in fact, all the climates in the world; and thus it happens that you see, by the side of the juiciest grapes, the golden granadilla, the peach, and the mango; the apricot and apple lie along with the plantain and *chirimoya*, or, as the English call it, the custard-apple, which is by many travelers regarded as the very queen of fruits, though I should myself be inclined to give the preference to the mangostan of Java, which is more delicately flavored, and at the same time light and wholesome. The *granadilla* is the fruit of a species of passion-flower, with a flavor much like our gooseberry. Peaches, apples, and apricots are, however, much inferior to those of Europe, and scarcely to be eaten without cooking. One cause of this inferiority is probably the careless cultivation; for the natives are almost too idle to do any thing, and there are few, if any, European planters. Of the kinds of corn, barley and maize are most cultivated, and form the chief article of food for the common people. I was struck with a black variety of maize that I saw lying among the heaps of yellow, whitish-brown, and other colors. The

Digitized by Google

spikes are very small, and I understood it was chiefly used for pastry.

In the afternoon I walked to the spot near the fortress where stood the old town of Callao, which in 1746 was destroyed by a terrific earthquake; a part of the city fell into the sea, the remainder entirely to ruins, and 3000 people lost their lives. There is now nothing more to be seen of it than a few fragments of walls and some heaps of bricks. Many travelers have maintained that a part of the ruined city may be seen beneath the sea, but this is a very common romantic fiction.

A more pleasant walk was to the gardens and other plantations which lie along the banks of a rivulet in the vicinity of Callao. Sandy and desolate as the country appears, only a little water is required to bring forth a rapid display of vegetable life. On the banks of this rivulet a dozen German settlers have established themselves, and they obtain very fine harvests. They devote themselves especially to the cultivation of grapes, which spread along and climb over the stones, forming a perfect network, but never rising much more than a foot from the ground.

About two years ago the Government of Peru sent an invitation to German emigrants to come to this country, and offered them many advantageous conditions; and a band of not less than 2000 soon left their homes for this far-distant land, where they hoped to find a new home. But the ships were overcrowded, the food and water bad, they were treated like the slaves brought from Africa, and more than half of the unfortunate creatures died on the voyage. When the remainder reached Peru they found themselves cheated and defrauded in all kinds of ways. Instead of being sent to a climate suitable to them, they had land assigned them in the neighborhoods of Callao and Lima, where the great heat is almost mortal to European workmen. The advances of money made to them stood in no proportion to the dearness of the land, and the poor creatures soon sunk into misery and disease.

The Hamburg consul, M. Rodewald, espoused their cause with zealous humanity. He exerted himself for them with the Government of Peru; he wrote concerning them to Germany; and set on foot subscriptions, besides affording them extensive assist-

Digitized by Google

ance from his own resources. Most of them died nevertheless, leaving behind them disconsolate widows and children; the latter, of course, bearing the climate better, as they were not employed in field labor. Most cruel and unpardonable is it of a Government to hold out these delusive inducements to emigration, and then abandon those whom they have enticed to their ruin! Would that any thing I could say might tend to warn intending emigrants not to take so important a step without previously making themselves in some measure acquainted with the country to which they are going, and obtaining information concerning the climate, the food, and all the resources that may be at their disposal; and fain would I warn them against too easily giving credit to the representations of interested agents. When the poor have been once enticed from their homes to a distant country, as they seldom have the means of returning, they are given over utterly helpless to whatever fate may await them.

The fault, it must be added, lies, in some cases, more with the emigrants themselves than with any other. They often fancy that, if they can only get to some distant part of the world, they shall find, as the saying is, roast pigeons flying into their mouths; and when they discover that this has been a mistake, they grow discontented and dejected. An emigrant should always expect that, at least in the first few years, he will have harder work and more difficulties to encounter than if he had staid at home. I have, nevertheless, seen some who had been settled in their new country but a very short time, sitting down to table with fine meat, vegetables, and good bread, with tea and coffee regularly twice a day, who were nevertheless dissatisfied because they had to work, as they must assuredly have done had they staid in the old country, with far less reward for their labors. Many a time would they there have barely been able to satisfy their hunger on potatoes or bad bread.

Before proceeding to Lima, the capital of Peru, I will remind the reader in a few words of some particulars concerning it. The estimated area of Peru is between 400,000 and 500,000 square miles, its population about 2,150,000 persons. It is divided into eleven departments, and these again into sixty-three provinces.

Digitized by Google

The state revenues are estimated at 10,000,000 of dollars, and its expenses at the same sum; but the national debt amounts to 60,000,000 of dollars, and a very small part of the revenue is set aside for its liquidation.

The legislative power is in the hands of a Congress of two chambers, twenty-one senators, and eighty-one deputies, who assemble in Lima every other year. The executive power and the right of appointing the ministry belongs to a president, who holds office for four years. The name of the present one is José Rufino Echenique.

This form of government has subsisted since the year 1824, when the country renounced the Spanish rule; but Callao, the only fortress, maintained itself, under General Rodin, for several years, and then only capitulated under very honorable conditions. This General Rodin, though a brave man, bears in other respects a very indifferent character; and the long defense he made is ascribed rather to motives of private and selfish interest than to his attachment to his sovereign; since he had laid up immense stores of provisions, which he sold from time to time, at exorbitant prices, to the wealthy persons who had taken refuge in the fortress. In their distress they had, it is said, to purchase the means of existence of him almost for their weight in gold; and, after the surrender of the fortress, the general returned to Spain with a most enormous fortune.

Since the declaration of independence by Peru so many revolutions have taken place there, that the tranquillity of a few years even is something uncommon. All these revolutions have originated with the military. Officers of rank, coveting the dignity of the presidency, have usually commenced the disturbances and gained over the soldiers; but at the time of my arrival in Peru the country was in a state of insurrection, and this time it originated with civilians. The troubles had commenced in the September of the preceding year, on account of the bad administration of the public revenue, which was known to have greatly increased since the discovery of the guano;* and yet nothing had

* It is calculated that, on the Chincha Islands alone, there is still more than 12,000,000 of tons of guano, which the Government is selling on its

Digitized by Google

been done either for the public benefit or toward the liquidation of the national debt. The President is accused of having appropriated to himself and his party a considerable portion of the riches of the country. In order to effect this the more easily, he is said to have invited people to bring forward unsettled claims for provisions, compensations, etc., from the times of preceding revolutions. The people who had these claims had long ceased to count on them, and in many cases had even lost or destroyed the papers; others were dead, and the heirs had no vouchers to show. It was then privately hinted to them that there would not be much difficulty made about acknowledging their claims, only that they must put down higher sums, in order that, for the sake of appearances, something might be struck off. And the President and his party then, through their agents, bought up these papers for small sums. By these intrigues, and by having the handling of the state paper and the management of the guano trade, he is said to have made some millions of dollars.

The present revolution had not reached as far as Lima when I came, and the President had the military on his side, and paid, partly out of his own funds and partly from those of the state, an army of spies, who seized and delivered to the government every person on whom the smallest suspicion fell. Many had been banished, others were still languishing in prison.*

For several years Peru has had the misfortune to be governed by covetous and grasping men, whose chief care has been devoted to the filling their own pockets.

On the 19th of January I went to Lima, where the before-mentioned Hamburg consul, M. Rodewald, was so good as to receive me into his house; a favor that was so much the more important to me, as in this country the Spanish language is almost exclusively spoken, and I was not, at that time, acquainted with it.

From Callao to Lima, a distance of six miles, a railroad has been opened since 1851, though the ascent is no less than 450

own account in Europe and America, and getting for it from fifteen to twenty-five dollars a ton.

* I afterward learned from the papers that the revolution had ended with the fall of the President.

Digitized by Google

feet; and in going back from Lima the steam is not used at all. What struck me as most peculiar in this railway is, that it runs through a great part of the suburbs of Lima without being in any way whatever railed off. The locomotives run through the streets just as ordinary carriages do in other places; children play about the house-doors; horsemen turn their steeds hastily aside, and the engine dashes, roaring and snorting, through the midst of them. Notwithstanding this apparent danger, however, no accident had before taken place; but while I was there an ass got upon the rail, and the engine, passing over it, was thrown off the line, by which several people were hurt and one killed.

The city of Lima, containing at present 96,300 inhabitants, was founded by Pizarro on the 6th of January, 1534; and on the 18th of June of the same year he laid the first stone of the Cathedral. The town is divided into regular quarters, and the River Rimac, which is crossed by a handsome stone bridge of five arches, runs through it, separating it into two unequal portions. The streets are long, and tolerably broad and straight.

The Plaza Grande is a fine quadrangle, with arcades along two sides, beneath which are shops containing rich and elegant goods; the third side is occupied by the Cathedral and the episcopal palace, and the fourth by the palace of the President and the house of senators. The word palace is a very high-sounding title for such exceedingly shabby-looking buildings; but they have rather a better appearance from the court-yards than from the outside. That of the President is particularly disfigured by a number of little booths that are plastered on to it. In the middle of the square rises a tolerably well-looking fountain; but it is constantly surrounded by asses and their drivers, the water-carriers of the city, as no house in Lima is supplied in any other way than by them, and many families have to pay five or six dollars a month for it.

On the south side of the square, now occupied by ordinary dwelling-houses, once stood the palace of Pizarro; and here he was murdered on the 26th of June, 1546. He was sitting at table with his friends when the conspirators surrounded the palace, and, raising the cry of "Death to the tyrant!" rushed in.

Digitized by Google

He perished sword in hand; but the exact spot is not known, nor the place where he is buried. Some say it was in the Cathedral, others in the Franciscan church; but I have inquired at both places without being able to find out the spot.

Churches and convents are very numerous in Lima, and the clergy are proprietors of innumerable buildings, as well as of extensive landed estates. One fifth of the town is said to belong to them, and many of the convents possess a revenue of from 80,000 to 100,000 dollars. Among the churches, those that pleased me best, after the Cathedral, were the Franciscan, Augustin, and Dominican, as well as that of St. Peter; and there are several others in various parts of the town that are well worth seeing. They are in a noble style of building—their cupolas grandly proportioned, and the interior decorated with wood-carvings in bas-relief, all richly gilt. The wealth of these churches, in silver, gold, and jewels, is not now so great as it once was; and the silver tabernacle and silver pillars to the altar in the Cathedral are so dirty, that you would never discover of what precious materials they were made if it were not pointed out to you.

At grand festivals these churches are magnificently decorated with velvet and flowers, and lighted up like fairy palaces, while the saints appear in full dress, with all their jewelry, and the priests in robes embroidered with gold. Unluckily, however, none of these fêtes took place while I was there, and the saints wore only their every-day clothes, and very ugly saints they are; but the churches themselves are at all times most imposing in their grandeur. Their majestic vaults and lofty, long-drawn aisles, their side altars and niches, with columns and statues supporting them, their walls adorned with pictures and statues, except when the faces happened to be absurd caricatures, or the figures tricked out in some ludicrous costume that reminded you more of heathenism than of Christianity; the solemn twilight gloom, through which a lamp here and there glimmered like a star; the profound silence, or the voice of the priest officiating at some altar, most certainly tend more to elevate the mind and inspire solemn thought than mere white walls in prosaic nakedness.

It can not be denied, I think, that the Catholic form of Chris-



Digitized by Google

tianity is better adapted than any other to make proselytes among heathen nations, were the priests only different from what they are. But you hear the same complaints against them in all countries—most of them are only priests as long as they stand before the altar; when they have once left the church, they seldom think more of their high and holy vocation.

The external devotion of the people here is still remarkable. Many take off their hats when they only pass a church, and all do if the bells are ringing for morning or evening prayers; the foot-passenger stops, the ass-driver alights from his beast, conversation ceases, and all hearts seem to be raised in supplication to the invisible God. But in a few minutes the customary doings begin again; the ass-driver ill-uses the poor animal he owns, the tradesman cheats his customer, and the whisper of prayer is exchanged for the whisper of slander.

There is no public building in Lima worth mentioning except the churches; and, on the whole, the city does not make a very advantageous impression on the stranger. The suburbs show, like Oriental cities, nothing but long walls and low doors, and very few windows; and it is only toward the centre of the town that the streets begin to have a pleasanter appearance; but there the houses have high arched entrances and numerous windows. The wooden latticed balconies are found every where; the roofs are flat at Callao, and most rooms here, as well as there, receive light only from one window opening on the roof.

Here, as in the East, the façade, or, as we might say in Hibernian style, the *front* of the house, is at the back. The reception-rooms lie opposite the great house door, and the walls toward the inner court are adorned here and there with handsome figures; and the court, though not paved, is decorated with flowerpots. The saloon, into which you can look through the house-door, is prettily fitted up, and the windows and glass doors ornamented with draperies; and through this you can see, in the background beyond the court, a small garden. It is really a pleasure in the evening to walk through the streets and stop and look into the houses when these rooms are lighted up, and the graceful forms of the Peruvian ladies give animation to the pretty picture.

Digitized by Google

The handsomest house of all is that of the old Spanish family *Torre-Tagle;* and this has a façade, with many architectural decorations toward the street. The house is now in possession of a collateral branch of the family.

Of the public institutions, I visited the Museum, the Academy of Fine Arts, and the Library. The Hospital I did not go to, as the yellow fever was raging at the time, and there were many patients lying there.

The Museum is one of the most deplorable that I ever saw. Every species of natural production is represented by some specimen, poor in itself, and spoiled by neglect, and the insects and *crustaceæ* are wanting altogether. Instead of Peruvian insects, there are half a dozen boxes with the most ordinary Chinese beetles, and of marine productions there is nothing at all. The most valuable things in it are some very well preserved mummies in a crouching posture, as they were taken from the graves of the Incas; as well as a tolerably large collection of ancient Peruvian drinking-cups and other vessels. The oil-portraits of former reigning Incas represent them as handsome well-formed men, with noble features. There are also pictures of the Spanish viceroys, life-size; but precisely the one that excites most interest, that of Pizarro, has been placed in such an unfavorable light, and is so blackened by age, that you can hardly see more of it than the outline.

The Academy of the Fine Arts is nothing more than a wretched drawing-school for mere beginners. How it came by such a grand title I could not make out, for it possesses neither statues nor busts, nor a single oil-picture, or even a large drawing. All that I saw were a few young pupils occupied in drawing eyes, ears, and noses.

The Library contains, in two handsome saloons, no less than 30,000 volumes, and some very valuable manuscripts; but I could not find a line in the handwriting of Pizarro.

The Alameda and the bridge are the public promenades of Lima. The former consists of some avenues of trees along the banks of the river, and has the arena for bull-fights on one side, and at the end an establishment for cold bathing. The mountains

Digitized by Google

can be seen from almost every street, particularly the Cerro de San Cristoval, 1275 feet high, on the top of which a cross has been erected that attracts a great number of pilgrims every year.

The cemetery, called the Pantheon, lying outside the city, is very beautiful. It was founded in the year 1807, and the chapel, as well as the house of the superintendent, is built in extremely pretty style. The gardens are divided into several departments, intersected by beautiful avenues of trees, and inclosed by high walls. They contain, besides many places for graves, more than 1000 niches for walling up the dead; and in these are deposited the bodies for which the ground has been purchased in perpetuity. In the other graves they remain only until the ground is wanted again, when the bones are collected and put into large stone vaults or common graves. The bodies of children are, after lying a short time, piled up in a wooden tower, the door of which I opened, and saw great numbers of the little remains wrapped in cloths. These are the children of the more opulent classes; the poor are buried in large common graves. Before the construction of this Pantheon, the dead were often buried inside the churches.

Besides this institution, by which the unhealthy practice of burying within the city is avoided, the public health of Lima is promoted by many elaborately constructed canals, which are filled from the Rimac, and run through the streets from east to west; and another sanitary provision, though of nature's contrivance, consists in a species of bird, black, and as large as a common cock (whence they are called *gallinagos*), which, like the dogs in Constantinople, pick up from the streets all kinds of carrion-like filth, and so contribute something toward their cleanliness. I saw these tame birds of prey also at Callao, and there, as here, they moved about in the middle of the crowded street quite at their ease.

The market I visited several times. There is a large handsome hall, that serves especially for the sale of meat, dead poultry, and vegetables. The variety of provisions was here greater than I had ever seen before, and of course the quantity also. Judging from the great number of butchers' shops, one would presume that the people eat much meat; and it seemed rather strange to me that the butchers, or, at least, the sellers of meat, were of the feminine

Digitized by Google

gender; they did not appear to find any difficulty in handing about the huge heavy legs of beef, and distributing them in pounds to their customers. The dead poultry, as in Italy, is not always sold whole, but you may buy a half or a quarter of a fowl if you like.

Living is very dear in Lima; a family that could be maintained in Germany for between 300 and 400 pounds, or 1500 dollars a year, would here cost certainly 4000. In every opulent house a major-domo is kept, whose business it is to look after the plate or linen, superintend the other servants, and lay in all the provisions.

The consumption of ice in Lima is extraordinary—to the value, it is calculated, of 1000 dollars a day. It is brought from North America, and costs less this way than it would if got from the neighboring Cordilleras, whence it must be brought on the backs of mules. The ice is prepared with milk and fruit, as well as used with water and wine; and from the earliest hour in the morning the numerous ice-shops are crowded; and you may find your cook, your major-domo, with the butcheress, the milk-woman, etc., sitting, in elegant tranquillity, enjoying this favorite refreshment. The ice, I may here observe, is very badly prepared, being in rough lumps, and very insipid.

The inhabitants of Lima, like those of Acapulco, Callao, and, I believe, all the Spanish-American States, are of such mixed Indian, European, and African blood, and proceed from such an inter-ramification of races, as can be found in no other quarter of the world. Among the higher classes of Creoles and old Spaniards* there are some very beautiful girls and women, and the Lima ladies have the reputation of knowing how to increase their attractions by their rich and tasteful toilet. Their walk and deportment is considered extremely graceful; and of their pretty little hands, and of their feet, set off by silk stockings and thinnest, most close-fitting shoes, I have already spoken.

In intellectual endowments also, namely, in natural understanding, what is called mother-wit, as well as in a considerable talent for music, nature has been abundantly liberal to them; but

* All whose complexions approach at all to white call themselves "Old Spaniards"—a race with which they are eager to claim kindred. Creoles are those who have been born here, but of genuine European parents.

Digitized by Google

they have, unfortunately, very little industry or perseverance to improve their natural gifts. On these points, however, I can say little from my own observation, as I was too short a time in Lima to see much of the old Spanish families, the access to which is not particularly easy to strangers. I saw them mostly in the boxes of the theatre (where Miss Hayes, and the not less admired tenor, Mengis, as well as the distinguished violinist, Hauser, were then engaged), and, as far as I can judge, I certainly think what I heard from gentlemen of the beauty and grace of the Lima ladies amply confirmed.

Only a few years ago they still wore in the street, or for going to church, a peculiar costume, consisting of a long black upper robe, called a *saya*, and the mantilla, which covered the head and hung down below the waist, leaving only just a peep-hole for one eye. In this dress, it is said, a man could not recognize his own wife; but it is now only seen at churches or in processions; for it was found, in many respects, rather too convenient, and no man liked to see it on his own wife or daughter, however he might approve it on any other lady. As a substitute for the mantilla, the women now throw a large shawl over the whole person, head and all; and this not very attractive costume is sometimes even worn at the theatre.

I never in my life saw women of the lower classes so richly and extravagantly dressed as here. You meet milk and fruit women riding their asses to market, and with their goods before them, in silk dresses, Chinese shawls, silk stockings, and embroidered shoes, all of staring colors, but most of the finery more or less ragged, and hanging half off. I did not think it at all became their yellow or dark-brown faces; and they often reminded me of Sancho Panza's remark concerning his lady, who, as queen of the "undiscovered islands," he says, will look like "a pig with a gold necklace."

The men, rich or poor, European or native, whenever they ride, wear the poncho over the rest of their dress, as they do in Chili; and even the women wear it when they make an excursion on horseback. Ladies of rank and wealth go only to church on foot; at other times they make use of the calèche, or *calesa*, a two-

Digitized by Google

wheeled carriage, drawn by mules harnessed a long way off, and on one of which the driver sits. Men who have much occasion to go out, such as physicians, ride on horses or mules.

Small tradesmen, water-carriers, etc., also ride, but on asses, which they treat very ill—as is intimated by the Peruvian proverb, which says that "Lima is the heaven of women, the purgatory of husbands, and the hell of asses." Certainly, if one believed in the metempsychosis, one would have an especial dread of being metamorphosed into a Peruvian ass or a Javanese post-horse.

The llama is much better used. It is made to work, indeed, as a beast of burden, but it is gently and tenderly treated; and one might almost say that the Peruvians have a respect for this animal. It is of the camel species, by its long neck, and from the foot to the top of its head is about five feet high. Four species of llamas are known: the *llama proper*, the *alpaco*, the *vicuna*, and the *guanaco;* but the llamas only are used as beasts of burden, as they are far more serviceable in the bad roads of the Corderillas than asses or mules, and are employed to bring down the ore from the mountains. A llama will go from three to four leagues in a day, and carry a hundred pounds; but if any thing more is put upon him, he will lie down, and not stir till the extra weight is taken off.*

These beautiful, gentle animals are not often seen in the city of Lima, for they can not well bear the heat; but while I was there, there chanced to come a troop of forty or fifty of them, to bring salt to carry to the mountains. I grieve to state that these pretty creatures, when they are angry, have a nasty trick of spitting about them; and the saliva is so sharp and acrid, that it causes a burning pain when it falls on the skin. Another uncommon thing, besides the advent of the llamas, happened while I was in Lima; namely, a tolerably heavy rain came on, and lasted five or six hours—a phenomenon that the "oldest inhabitant" could not recollect to have happened before. In summer it never rains here, and in what is called the winter very seldom; and then the rain is so fine, that it is scarcely more than a damp mist, and is not

* An ass will carry usually 200, and a mule 300 pounds.

Digitized by Google

sufficient to wet the stones. Thunder-storms do not take place on this side the Cordilleras.

The temperature, although Lima lies only 12° south of the equator, is never oppressively hot. I was there in the middle of the summer of the southern hemisphere, and never found the thermometer rise in the room above 77° of Fahr. This temperate climate is supposed to be occasioned by the currents of cool air proceeding from the snow-covered summits of the Cordilleras, here only twenty-eight leagues off. There are, however, very frequent earthquakes. In the five weeks of my stay in Lima there were three. The first was very considerable, but yet did no damage; in the second a loud, rumbling noise, like that of thunder, was heard beneath the ground, and lasted forty seconds; and the third consisted of a few very slight shocks. But whenever an earthquake occurs, however slight, the people rush into the streets and fall on their knees, crying "Misericordia," while all the bells in the churches begin to ring.

One very unpleasant thing in Lima is the great insecurity, and the frequency of robbery. After six o'clock in the afternoon, when it is scarcely dark, it is thought imprudent to venture outside the gates, or on the Alameda or any other little-frequented spot alone; even if you are on horseback, you will be very likely to be attacked. In burglaries the thieves do not merely let themselves in at doors and windows, but climb up to the terraced roof, which is mostly of very slight materials, make an opening in it, and let themselves down into the room.

A few years ago these affairs were carried on on a still grander scale; and bands of thirty or forty men, frequently on horseback, would come in the evening to a house that did not happen to be in the most busy part of the town, and, leaving the half of their number outside to keep watch, burst in, fasten the door, and politely request the inhabitants not to disturb themselves, but merely to give them their keys, and they would find what they wanted for themselves. Before the guard outside had attracted the attention of the neighbors or passers by, and a sufficiently strong armed force could be brought against them, the birds were long flown with their booty.

Digitized by Google

On the very frequented road from Lima to Chorillos, two leagues in length, though there are constantly mounted patrols about, it is considered dangerous to be found after six o'clock.

The Peruvian cavalry, mostly consisting of negroes, is said to be worth little; but the infantry, for which Indians from the mountains are taken, consist of much better troops; indeed, among the best in the world, as they are very brave, and capable of long endurance of hunger, toil, and hardship, though they do not on ordinary occasions look very smart, and, if they did not wear swords, could hardly be distinguished from day-laborers. On parade, however, these troops, and especially the cavalry, make a good figure; their uniforms are of white linen cloth, and their horses are handsome and well trained.

The consul, M. Rodewald, besides offering me a residence in his house, was so good as to arrange an excursion for me to the watering-place *Chorillos* and the ruins of a Peruvian temple of the sun, which lie four leagues from it, at the village of Lurin, and are said to be among the most interesting of those to be seen all along the coast. The distance from Lima to Chorillos is only two leagues, and an omnibus goes every day, in which I traveled, while the gentlemen rode on horseback. The road lies through a sandy plain, on which only here and there small spots of verdure, like *oases*, are to be seen; and the mountain masses, piled one above another, that border the plain on one side are also without a trace of vegetation.

Chorillos itself has a dull, wretched appearance, consisting only of dirty mud houses or hovels, crowded together upon a dusty road. I should rather have taken it for a penal colony than a place that people went to for pleasure. At least I thought that only sick people who really required sea-bathing would think of going to it; but that is not the case; the ladies find, it seems, some sort of amusement in this doleful watering-place, and come, they say, for change of air and recreation; and the gentlemen are drawn thither, not only by their society, but also by the attractions of the green tables, where considerable sums are often left behind. It often happens that people are content to take what is worse for the sake of a change.

Digitized by Google

Early on the following morning I was on horseback and on my way to Lurin. We chose the road across the *Pampas'* sandy steppes; on which, however, there are some fine plantations—*haciendas*, as they are called—mostly planted with sugar-cane.

A league beyond Chorillos appeared a row of stone arches, that showed there had once been an aqueduct there; and, shortly before reaching Lurin, on turning our horses a little to the right, to a hill called *Pachacamac*, rather more than 500 feet high, we came upon the ruins of an extensive temple of the sun.

Pachacamac (Creator of the Earth) was the most powerful deity of the *Yunkas;* and, when they were overcome by the Incas, their idols were cast out of the temple, and replaced by images of the sun; and certain royal virgins were appointed to maintain the sacred fire; but, as the Incas had banished the Yunkas' gods, and forced them to worship the sun, so did Pizarro subsequently treat the Incas themselves when he conquered their country. The Christians, however, behaved much more cruelly than the heathens had done; the virgins of the sun were given up to the outrages of rude soldiers, and the people driven by fire and sword to adopt the new religion, which they could hardly do otherwise than detest, when they saw its professors thus guilty of every kind of violence and crime.

Of the temple, which we examined on all sides, there now remains nothing but some portions of the wall, which, fragments as they are, testify of its former greatness. The few small chambers still recognizable are mere cells, which probably received their light from above. Two small fire-places are also left; and both outer and inner walls, indeed the entire edifice, appear to have been constructed of unburned brick, with the exception of the lowest foundation, which is of hewn stone. On one wall only we found a piece of fine hard plaster, of a bright red color, such as I have seen dug out of the houses in Pompeii.

The finer monuments of Peruvian architecture are to be found near Cuzco, in the interior of the country, 200 leagues from Lima. The great art appears to have consisted in fixing the stones, without mortar, firmly one upon another, as if they were all of one piece. Even to the present day they remain so closely joined,

Digitized by Google

that you can not insert so much as the blade of a knife between them.

There is a beautiful view from these ruins over a valley that lies at their foot. The environs of Lurin are also very pretty: blooming fields and delicate shrubs cover the ground, sandy though it be. When the Spaniards conquered Peru the valley of Pachacamac was one of the most fertile along the whole coast, and thickly peopled; but the aqueduct in the neighborhood of Chorillos is all that now remains to tell of those happy days.

Leaving these interesting memorials of the past, we betook ourselves to a very prosaic-looking hacienda, which belongs to the convent of San Pedro, and has attached to it large sugar plantations and many slaves. These haciendas are let out on long leases, and every improvement that the farmer makes on the land is regularly allowed for; so that sometimes the claims of the farmer amount to so much, that the proprietor is very glad if he will continue to hold the land at the lowest rent. On this estate the tenant has put up a steam-engine for crushing the sugar-cane, the first that has ever been erected in the country.

It was Sunday, and when we arrived divine service was just over; and then I saw what was certainly new to me, namely, the whole body of slaves *driven* out of the church into a division of the court-yard, and there *locked* in. They went singing and laughing, and making a noise, into their *fold;* but precisely for that reason they struck me as exactly like a herd of cattle. Never in any place else had I seen humanity so completely degraded to the level of the brutes.

Every expectation of pleasure was now over for me, for I could not get this sad picture out of my thoughts. The poor creatures sent for brandy, which their owner sells to them, and proposed, I was told, to pass the day in dancing, singing, and drinking.

I have been in Brazil and other countries where the ground was tilled by slaves; but I have always seen them better clothed than they were here, and I never before saw them locked up.

At the declaration of independence by Peru slavery was not abolished; but it was decreed that, after the lapse of twenty-five years, the children born of slaves should be free. This twenty-

Digitized by Google

five years was subsequently prolonged to fifty; but no slave can be imported any more, and the moment a slave touches the Peruvian soil he is free, even though he should have been first taken as a slave out of the country. On the whole, notwithstanding the circumstance that had struck me so painfully, they do not appear to be ill treated, especially the domestic slaves, and the law does much to protect them. A slave who is ill used can sell himself to another master, and he is usually allowed time and opportunity for earning money for himself, in order that he may be able to purchase his freedom. Most of them, however, prefer spending their little earnings in brandy, and leaving their owners to take care of them.

M. Rodewald, when he offered a slave his freedom, had the present declined, with the remark from the slave that he should lead a much easier life if his master would keep him.

We went back to Chorillos through the *plagas*, that is by the sea-coast; and, after passing the night there, went on the next morning to *Miraflores*, a village half way between Chorillos and Lima, and to which families also go for pleasure during the summer months, and to enjoy a better and purer air than that of the city. There are here pretty *ranchas*, that is, country houses with gardens, and a handsome square. Altogether Miraflores is a pleasant place, and, compared with Chorillos, a little Eden.

I passed here two very agreeable days, in company with two highly accomplished and intelligent women, Mesdames Smith and Dardnell. The first is an excellent painter, the latter gifted with a very fine voice; and both are most amiable and estimable mothers of families.

When I got back to Lima, I began to think of continuing my wanderings.

My intention, when I came there, had been to cross the Cordilleras to Loretto, on the River Amazon, and to proceed thence with the Brazilian steamer to Para, on the eastern coast of America.

But the revolution hindered the execution of this plan, as it had taken precisely the direction of the regions through which I should have had to pass; and I should not have been able to pro-

Digitized by Google

cure either mules or drivers, for in the civil wars friend and foe alike seize on both men and animals, to turn the first into soldiers, and employ the cattle for the cavalry and artillery.

In vain did I wait in Lima till toward the end of February: the situation of affairs did not alter, and I was therefore strongly advised to try my fortune at Quito. I was so much the more inclined to follow this advice, as M. Muncajo, the chargé d'affaires for the republic of Ecuador, made me liberal promises in the name of his government. He told me the President was his particular friend, and that he would give me letters to him, as well as to other persons holding high and important offices; and he added, that he did not doubt the President would himself be greatly interested in my journey, and afford me every assistance.

Relying on this assurance, and furnished with a dozen of these, as I imagined, most important letters, I set off in high spirits, and went on board the steamer *Santiago*, which was to take me to Guayaquil, on my way to Quito.

---

## CHAPTER XVI.

Ecuador.—Journey to Quito.—Trip on the Guaya.—Savanetta.—The Tambos.—The Camino Real.—Guaranda.—Passage of the Chimborazo.—The elevated Plains of Ambato and Latacunga.—Eruption of the Cotopaxi.—The Haciendas and their owners.

In the steamer *Santiago* I found the cabins full, so that I could only get a place in the temporary one erected on the deck; but how to get to this was the question, for I had gone on board in the evening, and there was no one to show me the way, nor the smallest lamp to light me. I groped about in the darkness, got over the axle of the paddle-wheels, through puddles and dirt, and directed my steps at random toward the left. But there I ran against the horns of some oxen, who (as I found the next morning) were tied up about two yards from the entrance to the cabin.

As I had been unsuccessful in going to the left, I now tried the right, and tumbled over a heap of coals that had not been re-

Digitized by Google

moved. The arrangements of this steamer, in short, were eminently comfortable, so that it was not surprising if travelers had to pay a high price for them.

On the 1st of March we reached Guayaquil. In this, the most important sea-port of the state of Ecuador, there is no such thing as a hotel or inn; and, in order to obtain some kind of shelter, every traveler must bring letters to some private family. I had none, but I ventured, without a letter, to present myself to the Hamburg consul, M. Garbe, and was received in the most hospitable manner into his house.

The republic of Ecuador, or Equator, threw off the yoke of the mother country in 1830. The population at present amounts to about 700,000, and the revenue is estimated at 900,000 dollars—the expenditure at considerably more; but the state has, nevertheless, no debt, for the government has a short and convenient method of adjusting the balance, by paying usually about half what it owes. The chief article of export is cacao, of which the country produces yearly from 15,000,000 to 25,000,000 pounds. Of coffee there is as yet but little, but it is of remarkably fine quality; and there are besides many valuable medicinal plants and herbs, and a beautifully plaited and very lasting kind of straw hat, worn throughout South America both by men and women, and of which Ecuador furnishes yearly 30,000 or 40,000.

I arrived at Guayaquil, unluckily, during the rainy season, which begins in December, and lasts till May, and is of course the most unfavorable for traveling into the interior. I was told that the roads were so bad that all communication, except for the post, was interrupted, and that even the bearers of the mail had the greatest difficulty to get along, and were frequently obliged to climb up into trees, and scramble from bough to bough, in order to pass places where the morass was unfathomable. I thought it probable, however, that there was a good deal of exaggeration in this, and, believing that I had as much strength and perseverance as the letter-carriers, and that if they could get through, so could I, I set about my preparations for the journey. Three weeks, nevertheless, I was compelled to delay setting out, for I had another attack of this abominable Sumatra fever.

Digitized by Google

During my stay the anniversary of the declaration of independence, the 6th of March, arrived, and was celebrated in the morning by high mass in the churches, and in the evening by an illumination of the town. A most deplorable attempt at an illumination it was though—nothing more than here and there a few candles glimmering in a window; but the same childish proceeding was repeated, nevertheless, on the next evening. From this celebration slavery was to be abolished; although, according to the arrangement made at the declaration of independence, it should have lasted ten years longer.

On the 22d of March I and the letter-carrier set off together in a small boat for the little town of Botegas. People had tried much to persuade me to take a servant with me, especially as I was not acquainted with the Spanish language; telling me that during this rainy season, when all intercourse between different places was interrupted, the tambos (little mountain inns) were uninhabited, as their occupants went down for the time into the plains, and that I should not be able to get so much as fuel or a draught of water. In spite of my great objection to people of this sort, I allowed myself to be persuaded, and the result showed that I had been quite wrong not to remain firm in my first resolution.

Botegas lies fifteen leagues up the River Guaya; and on our way thither we had a very bad night, as it was pitch dark, and the rain streamed incessantly down upon us. In the afternoon of the next day we landed at the door-step of the first government officer in Botegas; for during the rainy season the town is so completely under water, that the inhabitants go in boats from one house to another. Fortunately the houses are built on piles. As I ascended the steps a negro, whom I took for a servant of the house, lifted my trifling luggage out of the boat and brought it after me; but, as soon as he set it down, demanded two reals, or a quarter of a dollar,* for the service.

The official gentleman himself, as well as the rest of his servants, witnessed this proceeding, but no one of them attempted to

* A dollar is worth eight reals, and twenty or twenty-one dollars go to the onza. The dollar of this country is worth one fifth less than the Spanish dollar.

Digitized by Google

interfere; perhaps it made some difference in their opinion of it that it was I, and not they, who was to be the subject of the extortion. I was obliged to pay, of course, and I mention circumstances of this kind, not only to give the reader an idea of the character of this people, but also to show that, as a lonely defenseless woman, I really had often far less to fear from savages than from those who are denominated Christians. Wherever I came, indeed, in this country, I heard the "*Pobrezita Señorita;*" but those who uttered it were, nevertheless, considering all the while how they could manage to get from the "poor lady" the small quantity of cash in her possession. I had, for instance, a letter to a merchant in Botegas, a M. Verdesotto, who came to see me; but his first question was whether I had got a saddle of my own. I answered in the negative, and thereupon he replied that I must have one, as I could not hire them with the mules; and that he himself had one almost new, for which he had given an *onza*, but that on account of the recommendations I had brought, he would let me have it for the half. As he saw I was not much inclined to the bargain, he declared that he really could not let me go without a saddle, and rather than that would let me have it for eight dollars. This I paid him, and he sent me the said saddle; but such a good-for-nothing old worn-out thing it was, that I could scarcely make any use of it at all. This same worthy man also attempted to cheat me out of *half a dollar*. He hired a boat for me for the following day, to go to a place called Savanetta, telling me that the charge was two dollars and a half, and requesting to have the money in advance. I accidentally heard, however, from the person in whose house I was living, that the charge was only two dollars, and so I had to trouble my honorable friend to restore the half dollar he had pocketed.

It was in the house of the official personage with whom I resided here that I dined in the fashion of the country for the first time. The meal began with *sopa*, a kind of thin soup, with potatoes, fat, and a great deal of red pepper. Then came small pieces of roast meat, rice, roasted bananas; and, finally, *locro*, a kind of hybrid between sauce and soup, containing little bits of meat, bread, cheese, hard-boiled eggs, and red pepper. For the dessert,

Digitized by Google

some fruit boiled with sugar was served under the generic name of *dulce*, or "sweet-stuff;" without which neither rich nor poor can conclude their dinner, though the latter often content themselves with molasses.

When it was time to go to bed, I was shown to a mat suspended hammock-fashion: it had no net, but fortunately there were no musquitoes. These hanging mats are greatly in favor in Peru, and considered as the most indispensable piece of furniture in a house. People lie swinging in them the whole day long; if visitors come in, mats must be found for them also; and the women perform various kinds of work while enjoying this kind of lazy exercise.

*March 24th. Savanetta*, five leagues. We had parted the preceding day from the letter-carrier, who had continued his journey without interruption.

Savanetta is a little dirty village, with wretched straw-roofed bamboo huts, and having every appearance of the greatest poverty; but it is said, nevertheless, that its trade is considerable. It is the chief staple place for provisions and goods brought from the Cordilleras. The high mountainous districts yield potatoes, butter, cheese, lard, eggs, etc.; and the sacks used for packing the cacao are also made in the mountains. All goods are put into little boats, or laden on the backs of mules; the former go by the Savanetta River to the Guaya, and thence to Guayaquil; the latter carry the salt, sugar, coffee, and some other wares, to Quito and the neighboring districts.

The women at this place are so slovenly as to be quite unpleasant to look at. They wear dresses in the French style, but like their ease much too well to put them on properly, and so let them hang all open, and even sometimes have the chemise very conspicuous above them. The negro women wear the same costume; but the Indians have a dress of their own—a colored woolen petticoat, and a woolen scarf three ells long and an ell broad, wound round the upper part of the body.

In the dry season the journey from Botegas is made by land; but at this time of year you go as far as four leagues beyond Savanetta in a boat. I was obliged, however, to hire the mules



Digitized by Google

here, and on this occasion it appeared that my servant had played me a trick. I had engaged him to go to Quito (whither he was going, at all events), under the express condition that I should pay for a mule for himself, but not another for his baggage; but when I was getting into the boat at Guayaquil, I noticed that he had rather a large quantity, though he pretended that it did not belong to him, but to the boatman; that they were things he had to take here and there, etc. Now, however, it turned out that they did belong to him; that he was going to Quito on a trading expedition, and could not do without a mule merely to carry his luggage—which mule was of course entered in my bill. Fortunately my journey did not, on the whole, come so dear as I had anticipated, and the charge for a mule to Quito was only ten dollars.

The night I passed at Savanetta was a very disagreeable one, and, though I had not come without recommendations, they did not enable me to form a very favorable idea of the hospitality of the country, which is indeed far below what I have experienced among the Arabs, the Bedouins, or even the savages of Borneo and other countries.

In Botegas one person to whom I had a letter defrauded me, as I have said, in the matter of the saddle; the other, in whose house I staid, gave me only a mat to sleep on, though every body else in the house had a bed under a musquito-net; and he then allowed me to depart in the morning, though it was nine o'clock, without offering me any thing to eat. At this place (Savanetta) I had to go into a sort of cook-shop, that I might not be quite starved, and sleep at night on the ground in the room with many other people, all comfortably enveloped in musquito-nets; but no one offered me one, though there were swarms of musquitoes.

*March 25th. Plagas*, four leagues. We did not get off till nine o'clock, and then went the first league in a little boat, which the people rather pushed and dragged than rowed; and after this we were kept waiting a whole hour for the mules. The place was a mere marsh; but, as we could do nothing else, we seated ourselves upon some building stones, and waited as patiently as we could. When at length we were again *en route* we found the

Digitized by Google

roads very bad, as we had continually to wade through morasses and water; but still the matter had been exaggerated to me in the description. A great compensation for the badness of the road was also offered in the sight of the fine woods through which we passed; although the trees were neither very tall nor very large, the forest displayed such a rich exuberance of the most varied and exquisite vegetation, as I have never seen equaled except in Brazil; and when a sunbeam now and then pierced through the clouds, it seemed to call into sudden life a crowd of the most gayly-colored butterflies and *libellulines*, to hover in swarms round the flowers. Some of these lovely creatures became my booty, for as a good sportsman is never to be found without his gun, I take care always to have my butterfly-net in readiness; and, as we rode very slowly, I could make prisoners without dismounting.

In Plagas I entered for the first time one of the *tambos*, that is, public houses, mostly wretched hovels, just large enough to contain the owner and his family, shelter a few guests from the weather, and furnish the *arriero* or mule-driver with a dram, his beast with fodder, and the traveler, if he is in luck, with a portion of *sopa*. We had not this good fortune, for the landlord had not expected any travelers, and had cooked so little that there was nothing to spare for us; and as to setting to work to prepare a meal expressly for us, that was altogether too much trouble. As, however, I had bread and cheese with me, and of water there was no lack, I made myself content; though for the night I had to make my couch in the veranda outside the sitting-room.

*March 26th. Torje*, six leagues. This day we got a more correct idea of the roads of this country during the rainy season, and were not at all surprised that people are unwilling to travel at this time—indeed never do, unless summoned by the most important business. We had to go much up hill, and the ground was so slippery and sticky that the cattle slipped all sorts of ways, from hole to hole, and from puddle to puddle; and it was well when they could find the bottom at all, and struggle out again, for very frequently they went in so deep that it was necessary to dismount, take off their loads, and pull them out. Precisely at

Digitized by Google

the very worst place we had to go on foot. I could scarcely get on at all, but slipped and fell almost at every step. I called to my servant for help, but I was only a woman, and unfortunately his mule was already paid for; so he quietly went on his way, and left me to my fate. Fortunately, one of the arrieros, an Indian, took compassion on me, dragged me out of the pool, and helped me on; but to every league we took full two hours.

Many deep, rushing torrents crossed our path, though in summer there is scarcely water enough to cover the bed of the river. The country was very fine, and we had splendid glimpses of valleys traversed by hills and imbosomed in mountains, the first range of the Cordilleras.

In the tambo at Torje we found quite splendid accommodation, namely, a boarded floor to sleep on and sopa to eat. Every thing was indeed disgustingly dirty; but one must not be hard to please in this country, but thank God when one can get a roof over one's head, and a hot dinner, more particularly at this time of year, when so many of the tambos are closed, or, if not, quite unprepared for the reception of travelers.

We were this day so thoughtless as to ride on before our arrieros, and the consequence was I could get nothing out of my luggage for the night, not even my blanket, and could hardly sleep for the cold, as the nights here are very sharp. The laden animals could not, on account of the horrid roads, get to Torje.

*March 27th. Bogia*, two leagues. This morning we could not get away till nine o'clock, as we had to wait for the mules. The roads were, if possible, worse than those of yesterday, and we had to climb a mountain of considerable height; but fortunately we had found at Torje a train of empty and healthy mules, that belonged to the same owner from whom we had hired ours; so the luggage was immediately taken from the tired animals and distributed among the fresh ones. But, notwithstanding this help, the people almost despaired in some places of being able to get on any how, and it was determined to enter the first tambo we might come to, let it be what it would.

When I got in I was so covered with mire from head to foot that I looked as if I had been taking a mud-bath; and when

Digitized by Google

I took off my cloak and shoes, and gave them to my servant to clean, he took not the slightest notice, but let them lie where I had put them. He rendered me, in fact, no service whatever; and it really seemed as if I had brought him with me for the pleasure of paying for the food of him and his mule.

I was obliged to wash my cloak and my shoes myself, and the worst of it was that I could hardly procure water enough for the operation; for, though there is every where in this region a superabundance of both water and wood, you never find any store of either in the houses; for the people are too lazy to bring in what lies actually before their doors. The water they fetch in small vessels that hold about two quarts, for it would be too hard work to carry a larger one. For washing the hands and face you get, at most, a tea-cupful; and I have actually seen the potatoes washed in the same water that had served to wash first themselves and then their dishes. With wood they are no less economical; and getting a fire to dry your clothes is out of the question, for there is hardly enough to boil the sopa.

The tambo at Bogia was a very sorry one, so small that there was hardly room in it for the family and the fire-place, and I had to make my bed on a wooden bench outside; but the projection of the roof is generally sufficient to protect you from the rain —a thing particularly necessary for us, for it rained almost incessantly the whole way. The heavy clouds only now and then opened for a moment, to afford us a glimpse of the wonderfully beautiful scenery we were passing through; but what enchanting glimpses they were of "mountains piled on mountains to the skies;" and the loveliest valleys lying cherished in their laps, far, far below us! so far that the dashing, roaring sound of the cataracts was entirely lost to us, and we saw only their light, silvery gleam. What must this journey be in the fine season, when even these moments were more than sufficient to compensate me for all the toils and sufferings I had to undergo!

This night about eleven o'clock I felt four regular shocks of an earthquake, proceeding from south to north, and following pretty quickly one upon another. I had scarcely time to arrive at the conviction that it was an earthquake, and to spring from my bed,

Digitized by Google

when the inhabitants came rushing out of the hut, and threw themselves on their knees with the usual cry of "Misericordia."

As soon as the danger was over, they informed me that this earthquake and two others that they had recently experienced proceeded from the volcano of Cotopaxi, which at present was in a state of activity such as had not been witnessed for fifty-seven years.

*March 28th. Tamboco*, six leagues. This day, as well as yesterday, we were climbing up the Augas Mountain; and a part of the way, called, moreover, the "*Camino Reale*," was, I think, without exception, the most breakneck path I ever traversed in all my journeyings. I had to alight from my mule, and, in order to keep my feet at all, was obliged to go barefoot, like the Indians, which was even more than usually disagreeable, as the mountain streams that poured in a most disrespectful manner over this "Royal Road" were intensely cold.

Instead of fine prospects we had now only mists and clouds; sometimes descending upon us in such thick heavy masses, that we could not see thirty paces off. Sometimes they left the tops of the mountains partially uncovered, but entirely hid all that lay below. Sometimes there would be a rent in the gray, shroud-like covering, and through this, as through a window, we looked down upon blooming landscapes smiling in the golden sunshine. The picture was especially striking from the strongly marked transition in the vegetation from the tropical to the temperate zone. Here flourished palms, cacao-trees, bananas, sugar-canes, and coffee, and, a little higher up, corn, clover,* and potatoes would remind me of my European home.

When you see such lovely, smiling landscapes, you are apt to imagine that the condition of the inhabitants must correspond with them; but the people here live in wretched hovels of twigs plastered with clay, in which there is no opening but the entrance, and that only serves to throw light on a scene of extreme destitution. There are in these habitations neither beds nor household utensils, nor even boxes and baskets, which are indeed unnecessary, as there is nothing whatever to put in them. The oc-

* Clover attains here a height of two and a half feet.

Digitized by Google

cupants sleep upon the naked ground, or at best on a sort of frame of bamboo with a mat thrown over it, and with no covering but the clothes they wear, and which they continue to wear till they drop off. Their food, too, is as poor and scanty as their clothing and habitation. The Indians live almost exclusively on barley roasted a little and pounded to meal, which they sometimes mix with water, and sometimes eat dry. If they are going on a journey, they never take any other provision with them than this; and it is also eaten by the old Spaniards; but they render it somewhat more palatable by the addition of sugar. They, too, use it as a traveling store, but then they commonly mix with it, besides sugar, cinnamon and pounded cacao-nut. Prepared in this manner, it is not only an agreeable, but also a very wholesome and nutritious kind of food; and it has the advantage of occupying a very small space, and of needing neither sauce-pan nor fire for cooking it. Soldiers, when on a march, seldom have any other kind of food than barley flour.

That the Indians are the very Pariahs of the country may be supposed, but among the old Spanish peasants, or even the proprietors of the haciendas, you seldom see any appearance of prosperity. Many of the people, however—for instance, the owners of the tambos—certainly need not live in quite so wretched a style; since for the sopa and clover which they furnish to travelers they charge a tolerably high price. A few spoonfuls of this wretched stuff, that has scarcely any thing in it but water and red pepper, costs a medio, that is, about threepence, and you pay proportionably for the food of your mule. In summer they often take several dollars a day; and they have scarcely any expenses, for every landlord is at the same time the grower of the productions that he sells.

This afternoon a small troop of llamas came up with us, and I felt quite pleased to see these pretty creatures, with their slender necks, gentle eyes, and stately bearing, all round me. I think my fondness for them must be partly ascribed to my early studies in "Robinson Crusoe"—a very favorite book with me in childhood—for with the sight of the llamas there suddenly came upon me a very vivid recollection of those juvenile days.

Digitized by Google

The tambo at Tamboco was a perfect palace compared with the preceding ones. It was built of unburned brick, and consisted of a large apartment, furnished with many wooden tressels for sleeping on. A part of it served, indeed, for keeping the agricultural implements in, and the whole was covered with dirt and filth; but at least one was protected from wind and weather, and not compelled to eat always in company with the keeper of the tambo.

A singular custom exists in this country, that when you arrive in a tambo where you are going to pass the night and get any thing to eat, you pay for it instantly, although of course the landlord has both your mules and your luggage in his hands. It certainly does not seem to indicate that the people have a very high opinion of each other.

*March 29th. Guaranda*, eight leagues. To-day, though we had here and there bad places, the road was, on the whole, tolerably good. We were now quite near the fine mountain chain, the highest point of which is the Chimborazo; but clouds and mist hid from us the noble grandsire and his giant relatives. We had to content ourselves with the sight of the nearest valleys and the luxuriant plantations that covered the hills.

Guaranda is a village lying in a beautiful, almost completely circular, valley at the foot of the Chimborazo, and I alighted at the house of a rather opulent proprietor of a hacienda, and met with a very hospitable reception.

I arrived just in time to witness a little ceremony—the burial of a child eight years old, belonging to rich parents. In small villages any thing will make a sensation and bring people together, especially in a country like this, where people are scarcely ever at work, and have always time enough on their hands; and I had therefore an excellent opportunity of seeing both the genteel society of the place and its opposite, the *laide* as well as the *beau monde*, assembled.

The body of the infant was placed in a sitting posture in a sort of upright box, draperied with white muslin, etc., decked with gold and silver fringe and flowers. It was carried on poles, and the head of the child fastened by a string passed round the neck, to the upper part of the box, but so loosely that it nodded

Digitized by Google

this way and that, and had a horrible appearance, as if it were hanging. A band of music followed, consisting of two violins and a harp, the latter resting on the backs of two boys, and from time to time the player struck a mournful, complaining sort of chord. Only when it reached the burial-ground was the body placed in a coffin.

The people here have a much more healthy appearance than in the warm regions near Guayaquil; and the children especially, with their red cheeks and large flashing eyes, were very pretty. There was also no want of beautiful girls and women, though they were chiefly to be found among the more opulent classes.

The pure Indians are far from handsome, but of no unpleasing expression, though their heads look compressed and their bodies stunted. Many of them have their eyes rather narrow cut; though fine eyes, nevertheless, are sometimes to be seen among them. Their noses are broad, but not so flat as those of the Malays, nor are their mouths so large and ugly, and their jaws are well formed, and their teeth dazzling white. Their complexion is a dirty-looking brownish yellow; but what disfigures them most is their hair, which hangs in ragged disorder quite over their faces. If it were neatly arranged, they would really not look so much amiss.

The dress of the old Spaniards, as well as of the Indians, is like that of Peru. The women wear shawls thrown over the head, so as to conceal the half of their faces; and even at home, they often take the same method of covering their untidy, dirty dresses; and they envelop themselves so in these shawls that they can hardly make any use of their hands; but they do not care about that, as they have not exactly a passion for work. In families where there were three or four grown-up daughters, I have seen the clothes and linen in a most deplorable state, and the children in rags, and looking really like beggars. That did not at all distress the ladies; but what would have troubled them would have been to lack the elaborate embroidery for the tops and bottoms of their chemises, or the same useless kind of work on their towels and pillow-cases.

In Guaranda we changed our mules; as travelers should nev-



Digitized by Google

er allow themselves to be persuaded to take the same from Savanetta to Quito—at all events, without resting a day or two here and there; for, with tired animals, it is not possible to cross the Chimborazo.

The 30th of March was one of the most remarkable days of my life, for on this day I crossed the grand Cordillera of the Andes, and that at one of its most interesting points, the Chimborazo. When I was young this was supposed to be the highest mountain in the world; but the discovery since then of some points in the Himalaya, which far exceed its height of 21,000 feet, has thrown it into the second class.

We set off at a very early hour in the morning, for we had eleven leagues, mostly over dreadful roads, and on a constant steep ascent, before us. For this distance there was no kind of shelter in which to pass the night.

At first it was really terrible. I was compelled, as before, to dismount at the worst places; and the sharp mountain air had begun to affect my chest severely. I was oppressed by a feeling of terror and anxiety, my breath failed me, my limbs trembled, and I dreaded every moment that I should sink down utterly exhausted; but the word was still "forward," and forward I went, dragging myself painfully over rocks, through torrents and morasses, and into and out of holes filled with mire. Had I been at the top of the Chimborazo, I should have ascribed the painful sensations I experienced to the great rarefaction of the air, since it frequently produces symptoms of the kind; indeed the feeling is so common as to have had a name given to it. It is called "veta," and lasts with some people only a few days, but with others, if they remain in the high regions, as many weeks.

After the first two leagues the way became more rocky and stony, and I could at least keep my seat on my mule. We had continual torrents of rain, and now and then a fall of snow, which mostly melted, however, as soon as it touched the ground, though it remained lying in some few places, so that I may say I traveled over the snow; but the clouds and mists never parted for a single moment, and I got no sight of the top of the Chimborazo—a thing that I grieved at much more than at my bodily sufferings.

Digitized by Google

From Guaranda to the summit of the pass is reckoned six leagues, and the mountain there spreads into a sort of small plain or table-land, around which it falls abruptly on every side except the north, where the cone of the Chimborazo rises almost perpendicularly. On this small, elevated plain a heap of stones has been thrown together by travelers; according to some, merely as a sign that the highest point of the pass is here attained; but others consider the stones as the memorial of a murder committed here some years ago on an Englishman, who undertook to cross the Chimborazo accompanied only by a single *arriero*. Perhaps he might have done so in safety, had he not had the imprudence, on all occasions when there was any thing to pay, to display a purse well filled with gold. This glittering temptation the guide could not withstand, and when he found himself alone with the unfortunate traveler in this solitary region, he struck him a fatal blow on the back of the head with a great stone wrapped in a cloth—a common method of murder in this country. He concealed the body in the snow, but both deed and doer were discovered very soon by his offering one of the gold pieces to change.

Wearied as I was, I alighted from my mule and got a stone to furnish my contribution to the heap; and then I climbed a little way down the western side of the mountain till I came to water, when I filled a pitcher, drank a little, and then took the rest and poured it into a stream that fell down the eastern side, and then, reversing the operation, carried some thence to the western. This was an imitation, on my part, of the Baron Von Tschuddi, who did this on the water-shed of the Pasco de Serro, and amused himself as I did with the thought of having now sent to the Atlantic some water that had been destined to flow into the Pacific, and *vice versâ*.

The precise height of the summit of this pass I could not ascertain, as some said it was 14,000, others 16,000 feet. Probably the truth lies somewhere between the two. The perpetual snow-line under the Equator is at the height of 15,000 feet; and to reach this we should have had, at most, two or three hundred feet more to ascend, as it seemed almost close to us. The thermometer stood here at the freezing point.

Digitized by Google

On this plateau all vegetation ceases; but within three leagues of Guaranda you still find agriculture; then follow scanty woods, with many beautiful flowers; but I did not see here any of such firs as I saw on the lofty regions of Sumatra and Java. The highest plant of this kind measured only three feet; but there were some thin, crippled little trees that struggled up the mountain as far as 14,000 feet, though only on the western side; on the eastern they had long ceased. These little trees had a very singular appearance, as they were almost entirely deprived of bark, and had no moss.

On the small plateaux of the Chimborazo bleak violent winds often blow, that drive sand and stones in the travelers' faces; and it is therefore customary for them to provide themselves with silk masks, with small pieces of glass over the eyes. In the months of August and September the passage is even dangerous to life, for the winds are sometimes so furious as to blow both mules and riders off into the air.

We had still five leagues to go from this plateau before we reached the station for the night—a place called *Chacquiporgo*, where there was a single miserable house; but, though the road was now good and the descent gentle, the constant rain and the rough gale made it an extremely disagreeable ride. I do not think I was ever in my life so tired as on this evening. I suffered also much pain in my chest, my teeth chattered with cold, and I was so stiff that it was the utmost I could do to drag myself from my mule to the place where I was to sleep. I was covered with mud, my hands and face not excepted; but my servant brought me no water to wash, and I was quite incapable of getting it for myself; so, wrapping myself in my cloak, I sank down on the sleeping-place; but even there I found little rest, for my chest pained me so much that I was obliged continually to sit up, and it was only after some hours that I was able to eat a few mouthfuls of bread and cheese. I did not, either now or in the morning, get any thing warm to eat or drink; for, as in this season no travelers were expected, the landlord had left the place.

This house is the only one that has been erected by Government for travelers between Guayaquil and Quito. It consists of

Digitized by Google

two chambers, with wooden benches and bedsteads, and a large place for the *arrieros*. In no country in the world that I am acquainted with has there been so little done for the accommodation of travelers. The tambos are so small and dirty, that they really look more like pig-sties than human dwellings; and, as I have said, they offer nothing more than a shelter from wind and storm, and a little miserable meal of sopa. For the poor *arriero* there is not even this much; and he may think himself fortunate if he finds near the tambo an open shed or a roof resting on four stakes to keep off the rain, though he is still exposed to all the winds. His lot is a very hard one; he has to walk the whole day by the side of his mules through these dreadful roads, and when in the evening he reaches some place where he can unload them he has mostly to go himself and cut them fodder, for this the landlord never takes the trouble to do unless the clover-fields are very distant. Then, when his hard day's work is over, he has nothing but barley-meal to satisfy his hunger, no bed but the damp earth on which to stretch himself, and no covering but his ragged poncho.

Not less to be pitied are the poor animals he drives; and if Lima is the "hell of asses," not the less is this true of Peru and Ecuador; and not of asses only, but also of mules, horses, and *arrieros*.

A load of from eight to ten arobas* is usually put on a mule or horse, and five or six upon an ass, and that frequently when the back and sides of the poor creature are perfectly raw. One day I remember I noticed, all the while I was riding, an unpleasant smell, and in the evening when I alighted I found my dress covered with blood that had proceeded from a wound on my poor beast. On bad roads I often saw people riding double, even on asses.

How differently do the Turks, the Persians, the Hindoos, even the cannibal Battakers of Sumatra, provide for the wants of the wayfarer. In the caravansaries of the former, in the serais of the Hindoos, there is one room for the traveler and another for his attendants, besides a covered stable for the cattle. The Battakers have erected in every village a soppo, which is open without ex-

* The aroba is twenty-five pounds.

Digitized by Google

ception to natives and strangers, and in neither case is there any thing to pay. How very necessary are such philanthropic institutions in such a country as that between Guayaquil and Quito, where in summer travelers and long trains of laden animals are continually passing, and at what a trifling cost could many wooden houses be erected, where there is such abundance of building material always at hand!

*March* 31*st*. *Ambato*, eight leagues. The remarkable difference between the eastern and western sides of the Cordilleras had struck me on the preceding day. On the west the mountainous character was predominant, and the valleys were mostly deep narrow ravines and chasms, by which the mass appeared to be cleft, but at the same time there was the most luxuriant vegetation and the finest woods. On the east the mountains seemed to be pushed back by great barren table-lands, whose monotony was most wearisome to the eye. The fine woods disappear, the flowers become scarce, and large tracts are covered by a lichen that every animal disdains. Three leagues from the top of the pass I saw, on looking down, small pastures here and there; but it was not till we had descended seven leagues that any arable land appeared. A tract of nine or ten leagues is therefore uncultivated, of which a great part might certainly be made productive, and perhaps would be, but for the difficulty of the approach to it and the thinness of the population.

We rode this day between avenues of cactus and aloes; the former nine or ten feet high, the latter about twenty, and resembling some I had seen in Naples, with the flower-stem shooting directly out of the middle of the leaves.

The plateau of Ambato is among the finest; it is framed in by the Chimborazo, the Tungaragua, and other majestic mountains; and the temperature is so warm, that the banana and other southern fruits prosper on it.

The little town of Ambato is situated in a hollow of the plateau, and when seen from above, lying amidst its gardens and fruit trees, affords a surprisingly pretty prospect. I stopped several times to enjoy the pleasure of looking at it. The town covers a great deal of ground; but the houses, when you come close to

Digitized by Google

them, appear most deplorable little hovels, with no windows, and only one door. Near the *Plaza* there are some a trifle taller; and here I alighted, at the house of a hacienda owner, but the good people did not seem to understand that travelers coming in dripping wet and dirty, as was my case, like to be shown to some place where they may wash themselves and change their clothes, or that, after a ride of thirty miles fasting, one would be glad of something to eat. I had to sit down, wet and muddy as I was, among the family, and wait with patience more than two hours for the next meal.

The rest of the company, having been all day swinging in their hammocks and gossiping, rather liked to have a new face to stare at; but, as I do not speak Spanish, I could afford them no other entertainment.

*April* 1*st*. *Latacunga*, eight leagues. Ascending from the bottom of the hollow, we came to a beautiful mountain stream, falling into a natural grotto, and which, after some hundred yards, again made its appearance. We had to cross some chasms, on most perilous-looking bridges, and go through others so narrow, that there was scarcely room for two mules to pass one another; and the *arrieros* whistled, screamed, and made all imaginable noises to testify their presence before entering one of these natural hollow ways. These places excepted, the road was good; and, for the first time since we had set out, we had no rain all day.

A great part of the elevated plain of Ambato is cultivated, but there were few villages or habitations. The Tungaragua was now appearing more and more distinctly through the clouds, and, unconnected with every other mountain, rose as a colossal cone majestically before us as we entered on the plateau of Latacunga; a much finer and larger one than Ambato, with a town of the same name at its entrance. The Chimborazo gradually now became less distinct, and other peaks, among which were the Cotopaxi and the Iliniga, became visible.

At Latacunga, which is also a very straggling town, I again took up my quarters in the house of a hacienda proprietor, where I was received, as indeed I had been before, in a friendly manner; but I was allowed, nevertheless, to depart in the morning without

Digitized by Google

having so much as a cup of coffee or chocolate offered me, although the mornings were cold, foggy, and often rainy, and my hosts knew that I should not come to any place where I could get refreshment before the evening. I had now been much among the hacienda owners, and had several times passed whole days in their company, so that I had had opportunities enough of becoming acquainted with this class of men and their mode of life, the penury, disorderliness, and dirt of which is beyond description. The house of any tolerably well-off German peasant would be a far preferable place of sojourn to one of these haciendas. The former is often so clean, that you might with pleasure sit down to table and partake of the simple but well-cooked meal. But in these more genteel abodes the table is covered with a cloth full of holes, and so dirty that it would puzzle you to find a white spot in it. The most necessary articles for the table were wanting, too; for instance, I recollect sitting down to dinner in a hacienda with eleven persons, and we had not three whole knives and forks of the commonest kind among us. One had a fork, another a spoon, a third a knife; and when the fortunate possessor of the spoon had finished his soup, he accommodated his neighbor with a loan; and the same system was pursued with the other implements. A broken bedroom-ewer served to hold the water for drinking, and a single glass sufficed for the whole company. The children, little bright-eyed, plump, blooming things, whom it was a pleasure to look at, mostly ate with their fingers, but with an excellent appetite; their hands and their pretty faces were dirty, their clothes torn, their shoes ragged, or sometimes entirely wanting. A negress in tattered garments, or her half-naked offspring, waited at table.

In this same house I was shown to a sleeping apartment that had certainly not been cleaned within the memory of man, and which had for its entire furniture, besides the bed, two broken chairs and some dilapidated fragments of a table. Every thing I wanted I had to ask for, and a wash-hand-basin could not be had for asking, so I was obliged to go before the door to wash myself. In another of these mansions I had scarcely been half an hour in bed than I sprang out again, literally and truly covered with ver-

Digitized by Google

min, and passed the remainder of the night on a chair. In the morning my skin was marked all over with red spots, as if I had an eruptive disease. In almost every house, nevertheless, there were grown-up daughters, who, without working at all hard, might have kept every thing in excellent order; but they like much better to sit all day long with a great shawl thrown over head, shoulders, and arms, doing no mortal thing but, as we Germans say, "stealing the time from God Almighty." With all this beggarliness is frequently mingled a good deal of luxury in matters that serve for show. In one of these houses the reception-room was furnished with looking-glasses and carpets; in another was a pretty good piano, and a handsome English dressing-case, etc.; the ladies showed me rich dresses, Chinese shawls, and so forth; and these things, having to be transported from such a distance across the mountains, are enormously expensive. I was the more surprised at all this finery, as the hacienda owners in this country are not wealthy. They have plenty of land indeed, but without either roads or markets; great towns there are none near, and, on account of the difficulty of transport, it would not answer to send their produce three or four days' journey.

*April* 2*d*. *Machacha*, eleven leagues. We continued all day in the plateau of Latacunga. The roads were good, and usually led between hedges of cactus and aloes, mingled with an abundance of beautiful flowers; and, encircled as they are by a garland of glorious mountains, these plateaux would be exquisitely beautiful if nature had not capriciously denied them wood and water. There is little cultivation—possibly because hands are scarce; but the land does not seem to consist of such rich soil as I had seen on the western side of the Cordilleras. The greater part of the valleys are clothed, indeed, in fresh, soft green; but there is much dust and sand, and tracts covered with masses of rock and stones, which probably the Cotopaxi in his fury has at some former period flung hither.

These giant volcanoes occupied my attention the whole day. Vast columns of smoke rose up from their craters, and then rolled over all round, forming something like the trunk and crown of a gigantic tree; or volume after volume of cloud would come surg-

Digitized by Google

ing up, and then disperse in the air, and the whole picture disappear as rapidly as it had been formed. The Cotopaxi was clothed, up to its crater, with a light covering of snow, and the opposite Iliniga with so thick a one, that it was evident the rays of the sun had no effect upon it. This night I passed very uncomfortably in a tambo.

*April 3d. Quito*, eight leagues. In the morning I was preparing for my departure, and just about to mount my mule, when I turned to take one more look at the volcano and bid it farewell, for the road now led downward to the lofty table-land of Quito, when it rewarded my attention by a magnificent eruption. Thick, heavy clouds of smoke burst up, through which flames darted like forked lightning, rose high above the smoke into the sky, and then poured down a fiery rain upon the earth. What a spectacle would it have been at night! But as it was I was abundantly satisfied, and thanked God that, among the many wonders of nature, I had been permitted to see this surpassingly beautiful one.

If, instead of coming the way we did by Ambato, a traveler should go by Riobamba to Quito, he would pass much nearer to the Cotopaxi, and would be able to see also the ruins of a small building dating from the time of the Incas. I must own, however, that, judging from a drawing I have seen, I think he would be scarcely rewarded for the circuit he would have to make, or, at all events, not during the rainy season.

The weather this day was splendid, and a part of the road very good; but then again, for about three leagues, as bad as we had ever had. There were deep clefts, etc., steep hills to cross, and huge stones lying in the midst of the road. Not even close to the capital does the present Government of this country pay any attention to either roads or bridges, and, if you find here and there a bit of road better than usual, or a solid stone bridge, you may be quite sure it dates from the time of the Spaniards.

Digitized by Google

## CHAPTER XVII.

Quito.—Residences of the People.—Things to be Seen.—Church Festivals.—The Clergy and the Government.—The Indians.—The Theatre.—Return to Guayaquil.—The Chimborazo.—A Bull-fight.—Deadly Peril.—Panama.—Journey across the Isthmus.—Aspinwall.

QUITO lies in an elevated plain, fine and extensive certainly, but by no means equal to that of Latacunga, nor surrounded by such giant mountains. You do not see the town till you come within two leagues of it, and then the sight has nothing in it at all imposing. The houses are low, and covered with sloping tiled roofs, and neither domes nor towers break their uniform monotony. The mountains Panicillo and Pichincha, against which the town is built, have neither trees nor shrubs, nor indeed have any of the mountains around. The only beauty of this region consists in the wall of mountains rising one above another, which forms a *setting* for the plateau. Looking down into the valleys you certainly see beautiful carpets of verdure and many cultivated fields, but in this heavenly climate you expect a more striking vegetation, superb woods, luxuriant shrubs, and gorgeous flowers, which you do not find. The mountains are covered with short grass, and what cultivation there is on them you discover on a little closer examination; but the traveler who has read before coming to this city the mostly very exaggerated descriptions of the beauties of its situation, will certainly feel much disappointed.

This, I confess, was my case—the nearer I came the lower sank my enthusiasm. The immediate environs of the city certainly show fields and meadows, but neither gardens nor fruit trees; the houses in the suburbs are small, half decayed, and beyond all description dirty; the streets are full of puddles and filth, and grievously offensive to one's olfactory organs; the people clothed, if you may call it so, in the most disgusting rags. They not only stared, but laughed and pointed with their fingers at me as I came

Digitized by Google

along, and sometimes ran after me, for strangers are rare in this forgotten country; and, if they are not dressed exactly like the natives, as I was not (for, although I had the poncho, I had not the little straw hat), they become objects of mockery to the populace. Nearer to the Plaza the houses improve a little in appearance; they are of one story, and, instead of windows, have glass doors into the balconies. The square itself has some handsome buildings—among which are the Cathedral and the palaces of the Bishop and the President; both of which have their façade adorned with rows of columns. Unfortunately, the President's palace is half in ruins, especially the flights of steps in the front; but at least it is not disfigured, like that in Lima, by having little shabby booths stuck against it. The square is ornamented with a fountain, though unluckily the fountain has the trifling defect of having no water.

In the city of Quito, which is said to contain 50,000 inhabitants, there is not a single inn; and, though I had several letters of introduction, I had only one ready at hand, as the others were locked up in my trunk, and that again packed in waxed cloth.

We stopped at the house of M. Algierro, the gentleman to whom my letter was addressed; but we found it deserted, for the owner had gone with his family a few days before to his hacienda. I did not at the first moment know which way to turn; my worthless servant did not trouble himself in the least about me, and a mob soon began to collect, laughing, screaming, and asking all kinds of curious questions. They seemed to think that, as I was without masculine protection, they might give full swing to their impertinence. The unpleasantness of my position was increasing every moment, when a gentleman came up, presented me with one of those little straw hats which the populace of Peru seem to consider an absolutely indispensable decoration for a traveler, and told my servant to bring me to his house. As soon as I got there I quickly unpacked my trunk, took from among my introductory letters that to the American chargé d'affaires, Mr. White, and, having arranged my dress a little, hastened, under the guidance of an Indian boy, to his house. My servant had absented himself without leave. I had not, however, permission to walk unmo-

Digitized by Google

lested; for my costume was still not to the liking of this highly civilized people, as I wore a mantilla and a silk bonnet, instead of having a shawl thrown over my head; and, moreover, I was alone, for the Indian boy did not count as an escort. Fortunately Mr. White's house was not very far off, and in a few minutes I was in safety. Mr. and Mrs. White immediately invited me to stay with them; and the Spanish minister, M. de Paz and his wife, also showed me the greatest attention.

In Quito I went a good deal into the houses of the old Spaniards, and found that among the wealthy there is, at least in the reception-rooms, a great deal of luxury. The rooms are very large, which, judging from the outside of the houses, you would not expect; but here, as in Peru, the real façade is toward the back, and looks on a handsome court, decorated with flowers, fountains, and so forth.

The ladies appeared amiable, but very ignorant, which may be in some measure attributable to the out-of-the-way situation of their city; for it is very seldom, indeed, that a good teacher can be procured there, or that a stray artist or man of learning comes wandering that way. The good people scarcely hear of such a thing as art, science, or literature; and I do not suppose a Quito lady ever by any chance takes up any book but a devotional one. In native talent and capacity they are said, like the ladies of Peru, greatly to excel their masculine companions. They take part in all kinds of business, and especially in politics, in which they seem far more interested than the men; and it is to be observed that the women and girls are punished for political offenses just as much as men, and often imprisoned for months, or even years, in convents. I became acquainted here with a young and very interesting woman, the daughter-in-law of General Algierro, who was sentenced to a year's imprisonment, but managed to keep herself concealed till the matter was pretty well forgotten, and so escaped.

The banishment of the Jesuits, which took place two years ago, was opposed by the ladies with all their might; but on this occasion the men were obstinate, so they gained the victory, and the good fathers had to depart the country.

Digitized by Google

The churches are the only things worth seeing in Quito, and among these that of the Jesuits, the Franciscans, the Dominicans, and the Cathedral are the most distinguished. They are in the same style as the St. Augustin's Church at Lima, richly decorated and gilt from the roof to the floor, with beautiful wood carvings, the statues only excepted, which are real caricatures, although I have heard frequent mention of the fine sculptures to be found in Quito.* The high altars and the pillars round the tabernacle are covered with plates of silver; and there are other churches which, though smaller, are no less costly in their adornments. All the saints figure on holidays in superb dresses; and the costume of the Virgin Mary on Holy Thursday is said to be worth 200,000 dollars, as she wears a rosary entirely consisting of large fine pearls.

The hospitals for the sick, insane, and leprous I found beneath criticism; and I could not help thinking that, if a little of what the finery in the churches cost had been spent on these institutions, it would have been rather more pleasing in the sight of God. I took some scent with me when I visited them; but I could have used a whole bottle of eau de Cologne in each, for the air was almost intolerable, and the pestilential smell was enough to make the healthiest persons sick. The wards are merely long, narrow passages, with niches in which the poor patients lie on oxhides stretched over wooden tressels, but without pillow or covering; the filth was indescribable; the air, as I have said, poison; and each of the wards had only one small window at each end, and even these were fast closed.

In the hospital for the insane, one department of which is devoted to lepers, the madmen are left to run about, quite at liberty, in a court-yard open to the street, but the leprous sick are locked in. What is no less strange than horrible, however, if a pair of these miserable, diseased beings take a fancy to get married, they are allowed to do so; and in this abode of wretchedness weddings are of no unfrequent occurrence. Happily for posterity, marriages of this sort never, I am told, produce any children.

I saw no medicine given to any of the patients either in this

* I visited several of the ateliers, and found every where the same frightful wooden figures as in the churches.

Digitized by Google

or any other hospital; and, though there is an apothecary's shop attached to it, Heaven help those who have to take any of the beverages therein concocted. The people in charge of it have never the least idea where to find any thing, and have no labels on the bottles to distinguish one drug from another. I happened to want some spirits of turpentine to preserve my insects in, and some flour of mustard for myself; for, perhaps in consequence of the keen air of the mountains and the other hardships of the journey, my chest was very painfully affected for a fortnight after my arrival, and I was so weak that I could hardly drag myself about. The apothecary, however, could find neither the one nor the other for a long time, and had to sniff at some dozens of bottles in search of the turpentine, having only the smell to guide him. The mustard we thought was not to be found at all; but, to reward our patient and persevering search, it was at last discovered wrapped up in a cloth. The prices at this shop were, nevertheless, about ten times what the same articles would cost in Germany; so high, indeed, that the poor can never think of getting any medicine at all (though possibly that may be all the better for them), but are obliged to have recourse to such domestic remedies as they are acquainted with. The college is not large, but sufficient for the number of pupils; and, as it contained, I was told, a museum, of which I had also heard mention at Guayaquil, I went to see it. To my no small astonishment, however, when I asked to see it, I was led into a perfectly empty room, which it appears was destined for a museum, if ever there should be one in Quito, and has had the name bestowed upon it in anticipation. A single mummy is shown to visitors, but its repose is seldom disturbed.

To get a general view of the city and environs it is advisable to ascend the not very high mountain Panicillo, whence you can look over the entire plateau, with the ranges of mountains by which it is bounded, as well as many isolated groups, though none of them have very remarkable or picturesque forms. No river is to be seen, and the whole region appears to be very poor in water. A single little brook, falling from the Pinchincha into a ravine, has to provide all Quito with what is required for drinking and washing; and morning and evening it is turned

Digitized by Google

into open channels or gutters that run through the streets, and serve thus to wash away some portion of the accumulated filth. On the Panicillo there are to be seen the remains of a fortress that was built under the Spanish government; and near this mountain is the considerably higher one, the Pinchincha, an ancient volcano, but extinct apparently these many hundred years.

Two days before I left Quito, however, a chasm opened in its side—the side, moreover, next the town—from which a little smoke arose; and it may be imagined what uneasiness this occasioned among the inhabitants. I could never learn whether, after I left the place, the subterranean forces made any further manifestation of their power.

Living is very cheap in Quito, and yet there are not here, more than in Peru, Chili, or New Granada, any copper coins.

The medio, or sixteenth of a dollar, may be considered virtually the smallest coin; for, though there is one called a quartillo, which is half the medio, it is so scarce, that you scarcely ever get to see it. It is very common to give bread or eggs for small change, and nobody ever refuses to take these articles in place of money.

Houses completely furnished, with looking-glasses, carpets, lamps, etc., may be hired in Quito; and a very good one, with nine or ten rooms, may be had for fifty dollars a month—a very low price indeed, when the expense is considered which must be incurred in transporting these things across the Cordilleras; for, though there are plenty of sculptors in Quito, there is nobody capable of making an ordinary chair or table.

Servants also are cheap enough. You may get a cook for six dollars a month, and a less qualified man or maid servant for three; of course with their food. The usual plan of housekeeping is to allow the cook a certain sum to provide every thing for the family. Where it consists only of a married pair, one child, and a few servants, he receives only one dollar a day; and for this he provides two abundant meals: in the morning, soup made of meat, preparations of maize, and yams, as well as two dishes of meat, with potatoes, eggs, bread, butter, milk, etc.; for the second meal, fowls, soup with rice, three kinds of meat, with potatoes and bread; and in the evening some sweet dish, with bread

Digitized by Google

and milk to the tea. This, it will be owned, is pretty well for a dollar worth only eighty cents.

I happened to be at Quito during Passion Week, and had, therefore, an opportunity of being present at some of the most important religious festivals of the year.

The first solemn procession took place on Palm Sunday; it was to the Cathedral, and represented the entrance of the Saviour into Jerusalem. It was opened by a body of the clergy; then followed the President, his staff officers, and all the official authorities; and after them came a wooden figure of Christ as large as life, bound upon an ass, which entered with the procession into the church. It was certainly the first time I had ever seen a creature professedly of this species allowed to enter the sacred edifice; but in many places it is not uncommon to see dogs in churches, so I do not know why one should be shocked at seeing an ass.

On Monday the Indian procession was to take place; for, though all the inhabitants of the republic of Ecuador profess alike the Catholic religion, the old Spaniards will by no means allow themselves to be placed on the same footing with the Indians, and accordingly the latter have a procession to themselves. This sounds deplorable enough, and yet the spirit is the same which induces people in English churches to keep special reserved seats; and woe to the poor man or woman who should presume to take possession of one of these aristocratic places.

In the churches of Peru there is at least no distinction between rich and poor when people are once in the church; and if the slave finds a place empty by the side of his master, he may sit down in it. There are, however, few benches for any one to sit on, for it is customary to take with you little carpets, on which you kneel.

The Indian procession did not take place after all when I was there, for it appeared it had been forbidden by the bishop on account of the extraordinary manner in which it had been got up in preceding years, and the whimsical absurdity of the costumes adopted, which made the whole affair more like a masquerade than a religious ceremony.

The grandest procession took place in the afternoon of Holy Thursday. It was opened by troops of military, and at various



Digitized by Google

points were introduced figures as large as life, forming a sort of scenic representation of various incidents in the life and sufferings of Jesus. In the whole I counted no less than six of these scenes. In one appeared Christ on the Mount of Olives, with angels bringing him the cup to drink, and the disciples asleep in the background; in another he was bearing his cross; in a third being scourged, etc.; and the grief of the Virgin was represented by three daggers sticking in her heart, though she wore, nevertheless, a long velvet robe with a quantity of jewels, and the above-mentioned costly rosary of large pearls. The figures in these scenes were completely dressed, even to their wigs, and stood on a sort of stage borne on many poles by Indians, somewhat to my astonishment; for, as the Indians are not deemed worthy to join in the procession with the old Spaniards, it does seem surprising that they should be allowed to bear the image of the Saviour.

The rear of the procession was brought up by the canons of the Cathedral in black robes with trains twelve feet long, which swept the ground; and behind each train walked four boys, who had nothing else to do than to see that it remained spread out in properly majestic style.

I can not say I felt myself much edified by the contemplation of this procession; on the contrary, it struck me as a mere theatrical amusement.

In the evening of Good Friday the churches were dazzlingly illuminated with hundreds of wax candles, and on this occasion also there were represented scenes from the life of Jesus, such as the Last Supper, the Miracle of the Loaves and Fishes, etc.; representations that were productive of somewhat painfully discordant feelings, for the subjects suggested were of too serious and solemn a kind for laughter, and yet the style in which they were treated was scarcely calculated to awaken any other feeling.

It would be impossible to describe the ludicrous effect occasionally produced by the jumble of costumes of ancient and modern times, and the odd attitudes and expression of the puppets; for instance, in the scene where Jesus "suffers little children to come unto him." The latter were enveloped in cloaks like banditti, and with little straw caps on their heads; and in the Marriage

Digitized by Google

of Cana the figures of the bride and bridegroom threatened every moment to topple over. But the whole thing was too shocking to laugh at; if this is the style in which Catholicism is treated, one can but pity the poor people who are subject to its sway; every moral and religious idea is lost sight of, and the most disgraceful methods are employed by the clergy to raise the sums required for the expenses of the numerous churches and the trappings of their state. They can not be surprised if some day the eyes of their flocks should be opened, and the most enlightened among them go over to the Protestants, while the Indians fall back into their primitive heathenism. But these priests are men who find no warnings in history, and will bend the bow till it breaks. Why does not the Pope send some more worthy of their sacred calling, who might put an end to the scandalous doings going on in this country, where I have been assured, on the best authority, there is not, among dozens of priests, a single honest man to be found? It is not surprising, if such is the character of their teachers, that the people should be in general worthless and depraved.

The clergy, indeed, lay the blame of this upon the Government, and undoubtedly the two go hand in hand. These countries are much too demoralized, and stand on too low a grade of civilization for a republic, which requires a people at once thoughtful and inspired by true patriotism. Here covetousness and selfishness are the only springs of action in public affairs. The higher class is only eager for place, the lower for plunder; and neither one nor the other ever thinks for a moment of the public welfare. Any other form of government, even a despotic one, would be better than this caricature of republican institutions. I am myself too old to hope to see any important improvement in these regions; but the best thing I can expect for them is to be swallowed up by the American United States, which have already made a beginning with Mexico. In California, indeed, I saw much that was bad, but these offenses were mostly those of private individuals, such as might occur under any government, and especially in a country where the gold fever was raging, and which was consequently overrun by adventurers from every part of the world.

Digitized by Google

In Ecuador the lot of the Indians—of those who are really the legitimate possessors of the soil—is peculiarly melancholy. It might be supposed that this State was in advance of others, since, as I have already mentioned, during my stay in Guayaquil, slavery was entirely abolished; and the phrase "perfect freedom" doubtless sounds very well, but to the Indians there it is a mere empty word. Their situation is worse than slavery; for they have not one, but many masters, and yet no one of whom is bound to feed and clothe them, and the only advantage they obtain from what is called their emancipation is, that they must provide for their own wants. Every male Indian, also, must pay a poll-tax of three dollars a year, beginning when he is seventeen years old, and continuing till he is fifty—a tax from which the old Spaniards, whether peasants or not, are entirely free. A money-tax even of this amount is extremely oppressive on those who have no property at all, and in a country whose position, surrounded as it is by high mountains and with roads all but impassable, renders it excessively difficult to earn any in the way of trade.

The Ecuadorians maintain indeed that, with the exception of this tax, the Indians possess the same rights as the rest of the community, as they are capable of holding land, that is to say, if they can get it; but why should they desire to have land that they have no means of cultivating, and when they can not maintain themselves to the next harvest? Their usual plan is to hire themselves out as laborers to the owners of the haciendas, who give them a small piece of ground, as well as what is needful for its culture, and then pay their tax—keeping, of course, a strict account—in returns for their services. The Indians generally get also provisions, clothing, and brandy from their master, frequently in advance, so that they are never out of his debt, and can not leave him—otherwise there is nothing to prevent their doing so; but it must be added that, if they die, their debt dies with them, as the master has no claim on the family.

The Indians are exempt from military service; but they are obliged, when troops are on the march, to carry provisions and baggage on their backs without receiving any compensation but abuse and blows. If one of these free Indians chances to pass by

Digitized by Google

a barrack in which the service of some laborer is at the moment required, a soldier will rush out and snatch his hat from his head, as a sign that he is wanted. If he does not obey willingly, he is soon compelled to do so by violence—a brutal outrage so common that I myself witnessed it several times during my short stay in Quito. If an Indian comes down for the first time from the mountains, any one who meets him may compel him to come for a certain period into his service; for which indeed the Indian is ostensibly paid, but what the payment is likely to be in such a case may be imagined. I saw in a house where I went an Indian and his wife serving for a dollar a month *without food* or clothing. These poor creatures reminded me exactly of the Pariahs of Hindostan; they eat every thing that is thrown away by the rest of the household—for instance, the outside leaves of cabbages and the refuse of the herbs; these they boil up with a little barley-meal, and eat it so without even the addition of salt. They sleep on the bare ground in a corner of the kitchen or in the open veranda, scarcely half covered by their ragged ponchos. They are despised not only by the old Spaniards, but by the mere mongrel races; and even the negroes consider the Indians as far beneath themselves, and treat them accordingly; yet they are actually the best and most upright of the inhabitants of the country.

It happened during my stay at Quito that a theatrical representation was announced to take place in the town—a very rare occurrence, for it is seldom that a company of actors can be induced to cross the Cordilleras. I, for my part, was mightily pleased, and thought I should at least find a troop equal to the itinerant village actors in my own country.

The museum was to be the theatre; wooden benches were placed in it, chairs in the galleries, and candles—tallow candles, alas!—which did not greatly improve people's dresses.

At the entrance of the room where the tickets were to be taken a sentinel was parading, who, planting his weapon before the entrance as the people came up, called out "*A donde va?*" (Where are you going?) in such a thundering voice, that one involuntarily gave a jump backward. The proper thing, however, was to answer "To the theatre," and then you were allowed to pass on.

Digitized by Google

At the actual entrance to the theatre, however, stood a second soldier, armed like the former, who also planted his musket before us, and uttered the same martial cry. I never saw such an absurdity in any other place. The company was exceedingly republican in its aspect. There were Indians with their wives and babies; negroes, who did not exactly diffuse perfume around them; street-boys, who quarreled and fought among themselves for the places; and among these officers and gentlemen, with their wives and daughters—the former wrapped in their ponchos, the latter with the customary large shawl thrown over the head. In the midst of all these there was one party of ladies and gentlemen as full dressed as if they had been going to the opera in London or Paris; the ladies with low dresses—*very low*—and laden with jewels, feathers, and flowers; the gentlemen in black dress-coats and white kid gloves; and very odd they looked among this very mixed and exceedingly dirty company.

To my great disappointment, it turned out not to be a dramatic piece at all that we were to see, but only a conjuring performance, and that so poor in its way that every child might have done as much. There was really no illusion at all. But the audience was content, and applauded with all its might, and even, in its enthusiasm, rose up and stocd on the benches. In one of the tricks a pistol was fired, and then all the babies set up a squall simultaneously, so that the great conjuror had to stop his performance till the mothers could manage to appease their respective progeny and hush them to sleep again.

After the first act was over I left the house, for I really could not bear it any longer. The only pleasure I had in the affair was in seeing the negroes and Indians freely admitted with the rest of the audience. When they had once paid for their places they enjoyed equal rights, even with that highly-decorated party above mentioned. What puzzled me was where in the world these poor beggarly-looking creatures and street boys could get the money to pay their admission; for the first places were half, and the second a quarter of a dollar, which, for Quito, was by no means a low price.

Before my departure I visited the hacienda of General Algierro,

Digitized by Google

in almost every respect a splendid exception to all I have seen in Ecuador. It is the handsomest house in the country, and the most perfect order and cleanliness reigns throughout it and the estate. The eldest son, Mr. Carlos Algierro, received his education partly in Paris, and is not only a very accomplished and elegant young man, but bears (as well as his whole family) a most high and honorable character. In this house I found a selection of the best works of French literature; and the father and son have deserved well of their country by the establishment of a factory where calico is made. They brought the necessary machinery from Belgium, and above 900 beasts of burden were required for its transport across the mountains from Botegas to *Chillos*, as the hacienda is called; the larger machines were, nevertheless, carried by men. The cotton is brought from where it is grown, and only leaves the factory as finished calico or cambric. The whole establishment is under the superintendence of a Belgian. Besides this, there is a factory in the country, where the coarse cloth used for the ponchos is made.

Chillos lies five miles from Quito, in a fine fertile valley, inclosed by magnificent mountains, and over which the summit of Cotopaxi is visible.

The letters given to me in Lima for the President and the high official persons here were not of the smallest use. The chief magistrate of this high and mighty state of 600,000 inhabitants was much too important a person to favor me with an interview, and, though I forwarded to him my introductory letter, he never vouchsafed me the slightest reply. Another great man of this small state to whom I was recommended, a Mr. Larrea, carried his politeness still farther; for he invited Mr. White and his lady to an evening party while I was their guest, without taking any notice of me. Under these circumstances, I could not, of course, think of carrying into execution my plan of a journey to the Amazon River, for without the efficient support of the government (I do not mean pecuniary support, but the providing trustworthy guides) I could not possibly undertake it. The wild Indian tribes through whose lands I should have had to pass give travelers neither boats nor guides willingly, and every thing has to be taken

Digitized by Google

by force. If you can not do this you must make your own boats, and either bring your food with you or shoot it as you go. To my great vexation, I had to renounce all hopes of this journey, and determined, therefore, to go to Bogota, the capital of New Granada. The way to it lying through the Cordilleras, was said to be superb in summer, but in the rainy season terrible. I resolved to go, nevertheless; for to wait for the fine weather would have detained me too long, as that does not in these regions set in till June, and it was now only April.

I made a bargain, therefore, for a saddle with Mr. White's cook; and on this occasion I had again reason to observe the tendency to fraud and trickery that characterizes this people. I could not at first see the saddle, as it was in another house; but the seller asked three dollars for it in the presence of two gentlemen, and I agreed to pay him this price, provided that, when produced, it should appear worth it. When he brought it, however, and I handed him the three dollars, he pushed them back, saying he had agreed for four. These and many other such attempts at fraud, with which I will not weary the reader, made me most heartily desirous of getting out of the limits of the South American republics.

The severest toils and hardships are never sufficient to spoil my enjoyment of a journey; but to have to do with people of this sort is beyond my patience. I was incomparably more comfortable among the cannibals of Sumatra than among the *soi-disant* Christian rabble. Alas! that I should so often have to declare that some of the worst people I have ever met with have been called Christians.

I had hired the mules for my journey to Bogota, and I then went to the Spanish minister, M. de Paz, to take my leave. But this gentleman exerted his utmost eloquence to dissuade me from the undertaking. He told me that, although the distance was only 250 leagues (that is, 750 English miles), it could not be traveled at the present season in less that fifty days; that I should have the greatest difficulty in getting across some of the rivers; and that as a woman I should be exposed to the most scandalous extortions and ill treatment from the people of the country; since

Digitized by Google

at that distance the government could do little or nothing to protect me, for no respect was paid to its mandates. I could not but listen to his representations, and my desire of getting out of these countries in as short a time as possible coming in aid of them, I altered my plan, and made up my mind to go back to Guayaquil; and I must acknowledge that I believe M. de Paz, by persuading me to renounce my first intention, saved my life. My health had suffered severely from the repeated attacks of the Sumatra fever, and I scarcely think I could at this time have borne up under fifty days of unintermitted toil and hardship, with constant rain and perpetual change of climate.

On the third of April I left Quito, and in the company of a single *arriero*, for I had made a vow to engage no more servants for myself. The journey proved a very favorable one, and I had the good fortune to see the Chimborazo three times in all its beauty; first, on my arrival at Ambato; then on leaving it; and then on the passage across the mountain itself. The sun himself seemed enraptured with this glorious work of God, and, pouring over it the full splendor of his beams, displayed the virgin snows of its summit in the most dazzling robe of light! I felt really entranced in gazing upon it; but the sublime spectacle was, unfortunately, of short duration, for clouds and mists again gathered around it, and hid this sanctuary of the Cordilleras with their impenetrable vail.

I remarked that the Chimborazo does not terminate in a peak, but has one great dome or cupola, and three smaller ones, and that between these and the great one there extends a considerable surface, sloping from west to east.

The most striking view of the mountain is from Ambato, which lies much lower than Guaranda, and whence it really seems to pierce the very heavens, rising into them in a wonderfully symmetrical, rounded form.

The enjoyment I derived from the contemplation of this magnificent mountain had made me unmindful of toil or danger; but when, just as we reached that small plateau where the Englishman, traveling like me with a single *arriero*, had been murdered, the whole region became covered with clouds, I awoke to a sud-



Digitized by Google

den consciousness of the desolation of the solitude through which I was journeying. But this day, the fourth from Quito, concluded, like all the rest, in perfect safety, and we reached Guaranda without the slightest accident.

Here I came upon a scene that was new to me. It was Sunday, and the people were entertaining themselves with a bull-fight, which, however, was just as silly and deplorable of its kind as the conjuring performance I had seen in Quito. A rope was fastened round the horns of the animal, and held by many men at each side, so that it could not move a step further, right or left, than they chose to let it. They then threw various colored handkerchiefs and other articles at the bull to irritate him, but without success; the creature merely gazed at the assembled crowd, and remained perfectly quiet. At last they flung a noose round his neck, and tied his feet together; and when the victim was thus fettered, boys and men rushed at him and tormented him in all sorts of ways, while many who were even on horseback galloped round him as if in triumph. It would be hard to imagine any thing more contemptibly stupid and at the same time more disgustingly cruel. What would the mild and merciful Hindoos have said to such a spectacle?

This precious sport lasted several hours—the men displaying all the while their astonishing bravery in going up to and defying the poor animal, who could not touch them, until at last darkness put an end to the ennobling diversion. It would seem that in other points, too, the morals of the place are not exemplary.

I had to remain a day in Guaranda to get some fresh mules; and I now understood enough of the Spanish language to make out what was passing around me; and such things as I did hear! the women, to my astonishment, discussing, in the presence not only of their husbands and children, but of strange young men, matters that with us would scarcely be spoken of between one woman and another. Some of the gentlemen, too, were so free and easy as to pull off their traveling trowsers without the slightest hesitation before the whole company, which, though they had others underneath, was not quite agreeable.

In Guaranda I met with an Italian, whom I begged to make a

Digitized by Google

bargain for me about the mules, and to stipulate expressly that the journey was to occupy four days. When the rainy season is passing away, as it was then, it can indeed be done in three; but I knew we should pass through many woods and groves that were abundantly peopled with insects and butterflies, from which I promised myself many prizes; and, in order to have more time, I agreed to pay more than the customary price for the mules. The owner demanded to have the payment in advance, but I wished to give him only the half, in order to retain some check on the *arriero*. My Italian acquaintance, however, assured me that I ran no risk, and said I might as well pay at once, which advice I unfortunately followed. But hardly had we gone a day's journey from Guaranda than the *arriero* informed me that I must make three days do, as his master had given him orders to that effect. In vain did I appeal to the assurance the Italian had given me, to the larger amount I had paid; the money was out of my hands, and, as the *arriero* informed me, his master had given my treacherous adviser, the Italian, a bribe to persuade me to pay in advance.

The road from Guaranda to Savanetta was still more dangerous than when I had come, as we had now to make a rapid descent. The animals slipped and stumbled at almost every step, and continually fell into holes, of which the road was full. Just as I was on a very steep declivity, down went my mule into one of these; and my saddle-girth breaking at the same moment, I was flung, saddle and all, right over his head. My amiable companion, the *arriero*, burst out laughing, and appeared to enjoy it amazingly, and fortunately I suffered no serious damage.

My greatest peril, however, was on the River Guaya. From Savanetta to Guayaquil—a three days' journey—I had to go in a small boat; and during the voyage, happening to step incautiously on the side, I slipped and fell into the river, which, by-the-by, is full of caymans.

I was not excessively terrified, as, though I can not swim, I thought it likely the boatmen could, and did not doubt they would save me. This was my instantaneous thought; and after this I was conscious of rising twice to the surface, so that they must

Digitized by Google

have seen me. The caymans I had forgotten. When I rose the first time, I looked vainly round for help. I could see the boat, and also that no one in it stirred, and then I sank again. Now, indeed, I felt terror, but luckily did not lose my senses; and, remembering to have heard that in such a case you ought to put out your hands before you and use them as oars, I did so as far as my strength permitted. I was beyond all human help; but behold! when I rose for the second time, I found myself quite close to the boat, and had only to cling to it. The boatmen contemplated me, indeed, with the most perfect tranquillity, and no one put out so much as a hand, or even an oar, to help me; but, fortunately, one of my fellow-passengers, an Indian, took compassion on me, and assisted me into the boat; and I was saved.

I must confess I feel even yet a cold shiver all over me when I think of this incident. Through all my travels I seem to have enjoyed the Divine protection, and to have been preserved by it through countless perils; but never did I feel the merciful hand over me so immediately and unmistakably as in this instance. I scarcely know how to express my feelings in words, but I am most profoundly sensible of the great cause I have for thankfulness.

Scarcely was I safe in the boat before two of the boatmen plunged into the water to bathe, and remained a long time swimming about in the water, exactly as if they wanted to show me that they could have helped me if they had liked.

When I mentioned my accident in Guayaquil, and complained of the ill behavior of the boatmen, it did not appear to excite any surprise; on the contrary, the wonder seemed rather to be that they should have let me get into the boat again, instead of pushing it away; for it happens here not unfrequently that these fellows push a traveler purposely into the water in order to get possession of his property.

In Guayaquil I received a characteristic parting salute from a noble Ecuadorian. The boat in which I had come from Savanetta belonged to a rich merchant of the name of Alvaro, who was going at the same time to Guayaquil, but in another boat; and, as in paying the amount of my passage my very small quantity of

Digitized by Google

luggage had not been expressly agreed for, this wealthy merchant refused to let it be given up to me till I had paid half a dollar more.

People are eager enough for money in most places, but any thing like the mean greediness of these Ecuadorians I certainly never met with elsewhere.

From Guayaquil I returned by the steamer to Panama, and met with a most cordial reception from Dr. Antonrieth; and a few days afterward I crossed the Isthmus to Aspinwall, a short journey of only 117 miles, but, as I have said already, a very expensive one. The railroad was now nearly complete, so that the troublesome passage of the river was avoided, and there remained only a ride of sixteen miles; but this little bit cost fifteen dollars, as the luggage had to be paid for at the rate of fifteen cents a pound.

The fare by the railroad was twelve dollars and a half, but a ticket was immediately offered me gratuitously by the company, which is an American one. In a few months the railroad will be complete, and the difficult though short passage be made in a few hours. In Aspinwall you get a perfectly Californian reception from porters, landlords, etc., and have to pay in the best inns four or five, and in the cheapest two, dollars a day.

This is quite a juvenile little town, having only been in existence about a year and a half. It has a completely North American aspect, and the houses are all of wood, and were brought ready-made from the States, by which plan they came much cheaper than they would otherwise have done, with the immoderately high price of labor here. Wherever the Americans see a chance of a good speculation they are sure to be on the spot immediately; but they are sometimes inclined, as here, to make rather too good a use of the opportunity, and have no mercy upon travelers; in this respect, however, I believe they are pretty much like all other nations, civilized or uncivilized. In the evening of the 31st of May I left Aspinwall by the fine steamer *El Dorado*, Captain Gray, bound for New Orleans.

Digitized by Google

## CHAPTER XVIII.

**New Orleans.—Public Buildings.—Hotels.—The French Market-place.—Public Slave Auction.—Slave-dealers.—Visit to a Plantation.—Slavery.—Instances of cruel Treatment of Slaves.—Free Negroes and colored People.—Indulgence toward white Criminals.**

We reached the mouth of the mighty River Mississippi, without the slightest accident, in five days—the distance from Aspinwall being 1350 sea-miles, and we had now ninety more up the great stream to New Orleans. The Mississippi rolls its dirty yellow waves for many miles out to sea, and while yet far from the shore we could perceive our approach by the changed color of the water. This river at its mouth appears boundless as the sea, and even higher up it spreads itself out so far over the low, flat land that no sign of it is to be seen but here and there a small sand-bank. By degrees the land comes more and more into sight, and the fisherman ventures to build on it his small wooden cottage. Then come artificial earthen banks and dikes, which confine the stream within its proper channel; but it gives an uncomfortable feeling to the traveler to see the river six or eight feet above the level of the land, and instead of looking up to the shore, to look down upon it. How easily, it seems, may this vast volume of water burst its bounds and spread devastation over the habitations of the thoughtless settlers. Soon after the fishermen's cottages come rich grass-lands, then single bushes that by degrees form groups, then small woods, and lastly signs of the industry of man in plantations of sugar and maize, alternating with forest; and as the shores extend the culture becomes more varied and abundant; and the plantations succeed one another in an unbroken series. The neat houses of the planters, the sugar-mills with their lofty chimneys, the pretty-looking cottages of the slaves, form, on the whole, an extremely agreeable landscape, which would be far pleasanter than it is, if one did not remember that the greater part of its population (all indeed but the planters) are in bondage. About half way between

Digitized by Google

the mouth of the Mississippi and New Orleans, we passed Fort Jackson, and toward midnight dropped our anchor before New Orleans, the largest town in the State of Louisiana.

Late as the hour was, most of the passengers hastened ashore, having relations or friends to meet. I had none, and therefore lingered in my cell till the following morning.

On landing, I got a little foretaste of republican equality. Among the passengers was a very beautiful girl, about twenty, with a dazzlingly fair skin, and fine black hair, which showed a very slight tendency to curl, just enough to give a sharp observer some suspicion of the purity of her white blood.

Scarcely had she set foot on shore than she was stopped by a police officer and hurried away to prison, where I was told she would have to wait till her friends came to claim her, and show that she was free.

I had noticed her when we came on board at Aspinwall, as I was struck with her beauty and modest deportment; but she disappeared almost immediately, and did not make her appearance again during the whole voyage. On my inquiring after her, and asking whether she was sea-sick, as she never came to table, I was asked by an American gentleman, with a scornful air, how I supposed she could presume to sit down with us. "Our ladies," he added, "would have left the table in a body if she had." And the ladies who would have been guilty of this stupid inhumanity do nothing all Sunday but go to church and read the Bible! Truly, I think they must enter as much into the spirit of it as a parrot does into that of the speeches he utters so fluently.

On the last day of the voyage, when we were getting close to New Orleans, the poor banished girl came several times on deck. I entered into conversation with her, and found her so amiable and accomplished that I can only wish all white girls were her equals in these respects.

The city of New Orleans is built on marshy soil, in many places as much as eight feet below the level of the stream. It has a handsome appearance, being regularly built, with many fine brick houses and streets, as well as handsome squares with pretty gardens; but the streets are, with few exceptions, very dirty.

Digitized by Google

Along the footways there are certainly little canals or gutters of running water; but they are partly dried up, and partly, as is evident to more senses than one, used as sewers, so that in passing them I was continually obliged to hold my handkerchief to my face. The people of New Orleans are by no means exact as to where they throw filth, and just as often as not find the street most convenient. In rainy weather the streets are often flooded; so that when we consider the marshy character of the country for miles round, the uncleanliness of the town, and the glowing heat of the sun, it does not seem in the least surprising that the place should be frequently visited by yellow fever.

New Orleans counts about 150,000 inhabitants, of which about one third is American, one third French, and the remainder made up of Germans and other nations. Under the name "American" is always understood one who is descended from the English; though, as it appears to me, it should belong to the child of any emigrant who has been born in the country, or to no one, for the real "American" is the Indian.

New Orleans is for the commerce of the Southern States what New York is for the Northern. It is considered in commercial importance the third city of the Union; but as a place of exportation it stands first.

The river is covered for miles with shipping, and 800 steamers run between here and the Mississippi and its tributary rivers. Most of these vessels are of as much as 500 or 600 horse power, and have two stories, and beautiful galleries running round them, so that when many of them are lying together you might think you had a town before you. And yet when I was at New Orleans was far from being the most busy season, which is late in the autumn, when the harvest is over for sugar, cotton, and the other chief articles of export, and they are lying ready to be transported to all the regions of the earth. In the year 1853 there were exported from here 5,000,000 of hundredweights of sugar, and 3,250,000 bales of cotton. Lately the planters have begun to speculate in the guano manure, by which they realize a profit of 100 to 150 per cent.; and what a prodigious effect must this have in time upon production!

Digitized by Google

With the exception of the Mississippi itself, the mightiest stream in the United States, and the world of shipping that extends along its banks, there is not much to see at New Orleans; and the monotonous level of the country round is not broken by so much as a hillock twenty feet high. Among the buildings, the hotels, especially that of St. Charles, the Mint, the Bank, the Freemasons' and other lodges, are the most remarkable; and I may mention also the Charity Hospital and the Catholic Cathedral—all which are of freestone. The latter, which is particularly handsome, is built in the Gothic style, and has two very fine elaborately-wrought iron gates. The interior is neat and simple; but its effect was marred to me by its having pews and reserved seats like the churches in London.

The St. Charles Hotel is in astonishingly grand style: it has a magnificent portal with a colonnade, and the interior corresponds well with this imposing entrance. The reception-rooms are lofty and stately in their proportions, and fitted up with every luxury. The reading-rooms contain all the newspapers of the world. There is an innumerable throng of attendants, and the table such as could leave nothing for the most fastidious epicure to desire. The charge is three dollars a day; but, considering what is furnished for this, it must be regarded as cheap. But for those who desire to have a sitting-room exclusively to themselves, the charge is enormous—eight dollars a day for the room only; and, of course, very few incur this charge. An American is always employed the greatest part of the day in his business, and, when he does come home, he loiters a little in the saloon or reading-room, where people are reading, writing, playing, or singing, and children romping quite at their ease, and no one troubling himself at all about what others are doing. At the meals there is equal freedom; nobody is confined to certain hours; breakfast is going on from seven in the morning till ten, luncheon from twelve till two. During this time people come and go just as they please, and ask for what the bill of fare contains. At dinner there is very little conversation, for the American, as I have said before, considers even dinner as a business, and swallows it so fast that he has no leisure to talk. Besides this, people who do not know each other,

Digitized by Google

and have not been introduced, do not speak, and to do so would be regarded as an impertinence; so that a stranger may live at one of these great hotels, and take daily breakfast, dinner, and supper in a numerous company without making one acquaintance or speaking a single word.

The Charity Hospital is very well conducted—apartments, beds, and linen white and clean. Part of the attendance on the sick is performed by the Sisters of Mercy, who are accused of showing rather too much zeal for proselytism at the bedsides of their sick and dying patients. But this is an accusation to which almost every sect is equally liable; they are all too apt to think that salvation can only be found within the limits of their own particular form of faith and practice. Besides this public hospital, there are several private ones, where the patients pay a dollar a day.

The Mint is the finest building in the United States; but even this is to be eclipsed by the Custom-house, at present in the course of erection, which occupies a whole block.*

The La Fayette Water-works consist of a large basin, filled from the Mississippi, and from which water is carried into every house; the cost for each family being from six to ten dollars a year, according to the consumption.

The market-places, especially that called the French one, are very handsome and convenient. The halls are large and airy, and divided into avenues devoted to the sale of various articles—meat, vegetables, fish, etc.; also, of roasted and otherwise cooked provisions there is no deficiency, and all are displayed in neat and pretty style. Tea, coffee, and chocolate may be had, too, in the market; and a large cup of any one of these beverages, with three small cakes, costs only five cents; and not only the market people and salesmen, but many other men of business, come here to get their breakfasts. The French market is especially amusing to visit early on Sunday morning, as the negroes and negresses then come streaming in from all the country round with the produce of their gardens, or the little manufactures made by themselves

* The streets in the American towns are formed into regular quadrangles called "blocks."

Digitized by Google

and their families for sale. They are particularly skillful at basket-making. The slaves you see at this market certainly do not look as if they had so very hard a lot as is generally supposed, and such as doubtless many have; but those I saw were well dressed, brought abundance of goods for sale, and were excellent customers to the coffee-houses.

During my stay at New Orleans, I several times visited the slave-markets, as well as the place where they are sold by public auction. The principal auctions take place every Saturday, in a magnificent hall that will hold conveniently 500 or 600 persons, and which, on the other days of the week, is used for auctions of houses, lands, etc. All round the hall are tribunes, three feet high, on which the auctioneer and the poor creature he is to sell take their places; and the slaves are always dressed to as much advantage as possible, and placed so that they can be seen perfectly by all buyers. The auctioneer reads a paper stating their age, bodily constitution, etc., and setting forth their various virtues and capabilities. He then mentions the price, and the auction begins. A young mother, with one child in her arms and another at her side, was put up when I was there, at 600 dollars, and the highest bid was 1280, which the seller declined as too small a price by several hundred dollars. Girls of twelve or thirteen years of age I saw sold for about 600 dollars, and they looked up with cheerful, pleased faces at their purchasers, and seemed delighted with their smart clothes. Very likely, poor little creatures, they regarded it as the "proudest day of their lives." To me, however, the scene was too painful a one to look at long, and I left the place.

At the slave-dealers' the slaves were waiting in court-yards for customers; they were well dressed, and not doing any work; and as I wished to see them, I talked as if I were likely to make a purchase of a cook and a man-servant, and immediately the dealer rang a bell to summon the slaves, and placed them in two rows, the men on one side, and the women and girls on the other, and then began to describe and extol his wares. For a good cook he asked 1200 dollars, and for one that was, as he said, not completely trained, 1100.

Digitized by Google

These slave-dealers are, inconsistently enough, despised and avoided by every one, so that they are almost excluded from human society. But since the gentleman slaveholder buys and sells slaves as well as the dealer, since he equally lives upon the labor of these poor creatures, and regards them equally as mere cattle, I am really at a loss to conceive on what ground he can regard the dealer as so much viler than himself. But society is full of these capricious distinctions!

In order to have an opportunity of judging of the condition of slaves on the plantations, I visited several of them, and at one—that of Mr. Cook, near Donaldsonville—I made some stay.

I am, of course, like every person with the ordinary feelings of humanity not warped by early prejudice, an enemy to slavery; I regard it as a disgrace to our common nature, and hold that a willing owner of slaves can have no claim to the title of Christian, if indeed he has to that of man. Hating slavery every where, I most especially detest it in a republican country, where people value so highly their freedom and equality of rights, that they would think themselves justified in shooting any one who should attempt to detract from them, but who yet thus openly set at naught every principle of religion and morality.

It was with these sentiments I went to visit the plantations, and therefore certainly with no disposition to look with particularly favorable eyes on the "peculiar domestic institution," as it is called; but I am bound in truth and candor to state, that on those I visited the slaves appeared to be by no means in the unhappy position I had imagined. This was especially remarkable on Mr. Cook's plantation, perhaps because this gentleman and his wife are among the best and most benevolent of the planters; and even their youngest children seem to be imbued with the same kindly spirit. I noticed one of them, a little fellow of six years old, putting by at dinner-time a portion of every thing that was given to him; and when I asked him who that was for, he answered, "That's for a little negro girl that plays with us. She is not quite well."

The negro cottages on this estate stood apart from each other, and contained a large room, in which either a family or two or

Digitized by Google

three unmarried people lived. Their beds were good, and provided with pillows and blankets, and even musquito-nets, and each had at least one table, several stools, and wooden tubs and other vessels. A very large cottage in the middle of the village is used for a nursery, where the young children are taken care of while their mothers are at work; it is under the management of a strong, lively-looking negress.

After a lying-in the mother is allowed full four weeks to remain at home; and as long as the infant requires the breast, occupation is found for her near her cottage. There is even a hospital for the negroes, consisting of two spacious apartments; and a physician visits it once a week, or every day if necessary.

I went several times without any of the family to the negro village, and always found the people looking very comfortable. Many were sitting before their doors with a famous lump of white bread in their hands, and occasionally hot roast pork. At six in the evening they left off work, and came home merry and laughing to their supper—an abundant portion of meal prepared with maize flour, which was exceedingly good. When the meal was over, they went from one hut to another, gossiping and joking, and not seeming at all aware that their lot was so miserable a one as it is declared to be.

The house slaves appeared at Mr. Cook's to have very easy places; I never saw that they were scolded, far less punished; yet I certainly took care to keep my eyes open, and I could not help thinking that if slavery were every where what it was here, it must be an incomparably better fate than that of many of our work-people and peasants in Europe. The serfage of Russia is undoubtedly far more severe. The Russian peasant is the slave of his master, the slave of the government, the slave of every Jack in office, and not unfrequently of the common soldier also. He must give his labor without payment to the owner of the land; he must pay taxes to the government; he must submit to all kinds of ill treatment, and even blows, from government and military officers; and with all this, he must earn his own living; and nobody gives him a garment to wear, even though his own should drop off in tatters, nor pays his taxes for him, nor offers him so

Digitized by Google

much as a morsel of bread, if his little bit of ground fails to yield its produce. Of his treatment just as terrible stories might be told as any that can be related of the American slaveholders; and for the services he renders, cuffs and kicks are often his only reward. If his wife or his daughter should attract the attention of his lord, woe be to her and the whole family if she resist his wishes. The Russian serf is bound to the soil on which he is born, and can only leave it by serving in the army twenty-five years; he has to labor in the making of roads and bridges, and in transporting goods and travelers, without receiving any compensation. No legal tribunal can be said to exist for him, for the very person against whom he would usually have to complain would sit as the judge in his own cause. He has not, like the American slave, a master who, having purchased him at a high price, will at least provide for his physical welfare; and, on the whole, of the two lots, that of the Russian peasant is assuredly the worst.

The government of the United States is, however, unpardonable, for not doing more to ameliorate the condition of the slaves. The laws relating to them are bad and defective; and even these, little as they could do for them, are not put in execution. The Americans say: "The government would have enough to do, if it troubled itself with these things! It can not turn spy, or do any thing that might interfere with the liberty of American citizens." It seems to me, however, that the government does contrive to be informed of infractions of the law in other matters—to know which is the landlord who pours out an unlawful glass of beer on a Sunday, or who is the guest that drinks it, or when the Maine Liquor Law* is violated; and it might therefore, if it had a mind, keep a more watchful eye on transgressions of a much more serious character. But perhaps the crime of torturing a human being to death is thought a less heinous one than drinking an irregular glass of beer on a Sunday.

How do the Dutch authorities in India contrive to protect

* The Maine Liquor Law—so called because it originated in that State—prohibits all use of spirituous liquors. The States that have adopted this law are called Temperance States.

Digitized by Google

slaves so well? A despotic government can find means to ameliorate the condition of the unfortunate class robbed of the first of human rights; and a free State, with whose principles the very existence of a slave is, in the view of mere common sense, irreconcilable, not only permits and favors slavery, but does not attempt even to soften its character by good laws. In the United States, a slave can not give evidence in a court of justice, nor, strange to say, even lay a complaint; and a man may lawfully be torn from his wife and children (when they are above thirteen), or children from their parents, and sold separately. What heart-breaking scenes must not this alone give rise to! Would that it were possible to subject the legislators to some similar fate, that they might learn a little mercy! Of hundreds of stories of the ill treatment of slaves by the whites, I will merely mention two or three from a book published in New York in 1839, and called "American Slavery as it is."

Mr. G——, a tutor in the family of a planter who had the reputation of being a mild master, writes, in July, 1832, the following anecdote: "One morning, when breakfast was just over, and grace had been said, one of the children asked for some more sirup or molasses; a female slave in attendance put a portion on its plate, rather larger than usual, but not more than the child had often eaten before. But the master flew into such a violent passion with her that he sprang up, and, holding her hands with one of his, he struck her with the other, till he at last sank down exhausted by his exertions; and then, observing that his hand was too weak, pulled off his shoe, and went on striking the poor creature with his heel. At last she began to scream, and tried to protect her head with her elbows; and thereupon the master called another negro, and commanding him to hold her hands, continued the beating with all his might, till the victim sank upon the ground, and Mr. G——, on whom she called for help, thought she must have died. She was able, however, to get up, and, going out, washed the blood off, and came back to continue her attendance, with her head, ears, and eyes so swelled that no one would have known her. For such a trifle as this the planter was not called to account at all.

Digitized by Google

There is another story of a Mr. Benjamin Jacob Harris, a slaveholder of Richmond, in Virginia, who was brought to trial for beating a negro girl of fifteen to death, while his wife made a piece of iron red hot and burned her in various parts of the body. The verdict in this case was, "Died in consequence of an oversevere chastisement;" but the murderer was acquitted. Some years afterward this same Harris killed another of his slaves, and was again acquitted, because no one had witnessed the deed but negroes!

A captain in the United States navy, being angry with one of his negro boys, put him on a chair, tied his hands together with a rope, and hung him up to a beam, so high that he could only just touch the chair with his toes. The master then beat the boy in that position till he fainted, and very soon afterward died. And this cowardly ruffian, too, was acquitted.

In Goochland, in Virginia, a superintendent of the estate tied one of the slaves to a tree, and, after beating him cruelly, put some straw round him and actually burned him to death. In this case the criminal was not a white, but a colored man; so, though he was not hung as he deserved to be, he was punished, but, as his victim had been only a slave, merely with some months' imprisonment. This book contains more than a thousand of such cases; so that one can scarcely help wishing the unfortunate negroes might one day combine and take signal vengeance on their oppressors.

In this book it is stated that a meeting was held by the slaveholders to discuss the question whether it was more profitable to keep slaves well, and so spare the capital expended in their purchase, or to overwork them and to wear them out in seven or eight years. Unfortunately, the vote was in favor of the latter method; and many slaves died in consequence of the immoderate labor to which they were subjected.

The law in South Carolina allows a master to work a slave fourteen hours a day in winter and fifteen in summer, while the convicts in the prisons are only obliged to labor on the average nine hours; but most Slave States have no law on this subject, and the planter may work his slaves to death as soon as he likes.

Digitized by Google

Concerning the instruction of the slaves, the humane white man's law only interferes to forbid it. To teach a slave to read or write is a *punishable offense;* so we see that in this case the law does not object to spying into private affairs.

Every effort is made to keep the negro on the same level of barbarism on which he, or rather his forefathers, stood when brought from Africa.

With respect to religious instruction the law is silent; and some few of the planters' wives keep Sunday schools for their negroes, and read the Bible to them, besides teaching them to sing psalms and hymns, leaving them, I suppose, to reconcile for themselves the moral and Christian precepts they hear taught from the book, with those they see put in practice before them—no very easy task! Clergymen also go occasionally into the plantations and preach to the slaves, but must do no more.

One very strange thing is to find that, while the whites of America degrade their negroes to the level of the brute, they are still constantly in the habit of confiding to them the most precious of their possessions, namely, their children. From a negro nurse their infants derive their first nourishment; she watches over their early childhood, and not unfrequently becomes the confidante of the growing girl: for all this the despised race is found perfectly adapted. But must not so close an intercourse with such rude and sensually disposed women as the negresses have a very injurious effect on the minds of the children? Must not the moral sensibility of the girl or boy suffer greatly from the speech and example of these people? And is not this practice a piece of unaccountable thoughtlessness, an entire forgetfulness of duty on the part of the parents? But they probably think as they were brought up themselves so may their children be, and the practice of devolving thus their heaviest cares upon others is too convenient to be abandoned. That there are exceptional cases of parents not thus negligent it is hardly necessary to say.

I am very much inclined to think that the system of slavery, by the consequences it entails, in a great measure avenges itself on the whites themselves. Their children are accustomed to be constantly waited upon; it would be a kind of disgrace so much



Digitized by Google

as to tie a string for themselves, or pick up any thing they had let fall. The slave is the hand of the child; and it follows quite as a matter of course that the child becomes imperious, capricious, idle, and frequently malicious; loses all energy for action, almost even for thought, and, alas! too often all kindly feeling also. A boy or girl brought up in the Slave States may be distinguished very disadvantageously from others who have been differently circumstanced; and it is needless to say how powerful through life is the education received in childhood.

The lot of the free negroes and colored people is scarcely preferable to that of slavery, not even in the Free, much less in the Slave States. Partly by law, and partly from the absurd prejudices of these tolerant Christians, they are excluded from society, and belong to no class—neither to the slaves nor the citizens. They are the pariahs of the United States; and as if to enable them to feel still more deeply the degradation of their position, they are allowed to visit schools and receive education. This is really almost a refinement of cruelty; for by education ambition is awakened, and the free negro becomes acquainted with the rights of men only to know that he is excluded from them. The law does not allow him to become a citizen of any State, nor have a vote at any election; it will not receive him as a witness, nor suffer him to become connected by marriage with any white family. Must not such invidious distinctions and prohibitions have a tendency to imbitter the feelings of these people toward the favored classes? and while it is the first duty of every government, whatever may be its name, to promote morality and good feeling among its subjects, it here does so much the reverse, that if a white man who has children by a colored woman would wish to acknowledge them and give them the rights of children, he may not do it; and if he wishes to retain the good opinion of his white fellow-citizens, he will not even educate them; should he, however, choose to SELL the children, and the mother with them (no very uncommon occurrence), he may do so without forfeiting, in the esteem of the world, his character as a man of honor.

I often spoke with Americans on this subject, but could never get them to acknowledge that there was any thing wrong in it;

Digitized by Google

and they always concluded with saying that if the free negroes did not like their treatment, they might emigrate to Europe, or go back to *their own country.* And where is, then, their country? Is it Africa? where they were not born, where their families do not live, where the people do not speak their language? Surely not. For fifty years no slave has been brought hither from Africa, and all the negroes now in the United States are born Americans, and are merely descended from Africans. America, not Africa, is their country; and in my opinion they have as good a claim to the name of American as the whites, who are descended from European immigrants; what is denominated their native country they often do not so much as know by name. As for emigrating to Europe, who would give them the means? And what could they do in a quarter of the world already so much overpeopled as to send out every year 100,000 wanderers to all parts of the earth? In America there is still need of hands and heads; and it is to emigration the United States owe, in a great measure, the power and importance they have attained.

There are actually people here who maintain that the system of American slavery is very beneficial in its results to the natives of Africa. The free negroes, they say, are educated, instructed in religion, and then sent to the negro Republic of Liberia, on the coast of Africa, where they may convert their countrymen, and perform the office of missionaries.

A wonderfully clever contrivance, no doubt; but what if these envoys should relate to their African converts how they have been treated by Christians in the country from which they have brought their Christianity—how they have been degraded to the level of beasts of burden, cruelly punished for the smallest offenses, worn out with unrequited labor, and sometimes tortured even to death! how, even when free, they have been despised, refused the commonest rights, hunted out of society, not allowed so much as to sit down at a table, or take a place in an omnibus, by the side of the lowest vagabond of a white, but shunned as if their touch was contagious! how far would all this go in inspiring respect and love for the Christian religion? It is almost a pity that there is not some country where we white Christians could enjoy the same

Digitized by Google

benevolent treatment as the negroes in the United States; it would doubtless prove so highly beneficial to our religion.

There have been hitherto fifteen Slave States—Florida, Georgia, Texas, North Carolina, South Carolina, Virginia, Kentucky, Tennessee, Alabama, Mississippi, Louisiana, Arkansas, Missouri, Maryland, and Delaware—as well as the District of Columbia. Perhaps, too, their number may increase, and of course ultimately to the great benefit of Africa!

One of the most striking contrasts that can be imagined to its treatment of negroes and colored people may be found in the extreme indulgence of the American government toward white criminals.

I was three weeks in New Orleans, and during this time few days passed in which either a murder or an incendiary fire did not take place; but these things attract little attention. I remember speaking with the horror and disgust I felt at a murder that had just taken place, in which a drunken workman had quarreled with his wife and cut her throat. Bnt I was laughed at for the warmth of my expressions, and told that when I had been here five or six months I should not think so much of such an ordinary matter. A few nights after, indeed, a second case of the kind did occur, and the man after the commission of the deed attempted to hang himself. A murder arising out of a quarrel, or committed in drunkenness or under the influence of jealousy, is seldom severely punished, and drunkenness especially appears to be considered quite as an excuse.

But even where this very excellent apology can not be offered, if the criminal has money, and knows how to make friends, he can generally get off. There was, for instance, a very disgraceful case of this kind in Kentucky a few months before my arrival, in which the murderer entirely escaped punishment. The case was this: A boy who attended a certain school was in the habit of doing his work very badly, or not at all, and then excusing himself by obvious falsehoods. The teacher one day, irritated at this behavior, called the boy a liar. The boy related this, and probably, according to his custom, with the addition of much that was exaggerated and false, to his father and brother; whereupon the

Digitized by Google

latter, a youth of nineteen or twenty, armed himself with a pistol, gave his brother a large knife, and going to the school-house, after the exchange of a few angry words, shot the master. The father, being a rich man, bought over the jury, and the murderer escaped without the slightest punishment. This case was, however, so very notorious, that the people took the matter up, and expressed their opinion upon it so energetically to both the father and the jury, that the latter had to retire from their offices, and the former to sell his possessions and quit the State; but it is a bad thing when judicial power is thus in the hands of the populace.

Incendiary fires are very frequently the acts of the owners of the building themselves, who first insure it for more than its worth, and then manage to get out of it all the most valuable property; so that they often make a considerable profit of the transaction.

When I made any remarks upon trespasses of this kind, I was told that "America was a young country, and would improve in time." It seems to me, however, that when it was still younger, in the time of the great Washington, many things were better managed than they are now.

A good administration of justice is the first duty of a State, and of the greatest influence on the morality of the citizens; and the corruption of justice is the ruin of the people.

Wherever men struggle for offices merely with the view of enriching themselves, where every thing is to be bought, and where the rich can commit crimes almost with impunity, there surely will patriotism and morality speedily disappear.

At the separation from the parent State, America was like a pure and spotless page, while that of Europe was soiled with a thousand stains. What might not have been written upon the former? What might not America have become? so richly endowed by nature, so free from the numerous evils and abuses that have taken such deep root in the Old World—with no nobility, nor army, nor Church, to struggle with; but, alas! the spotless page has been defiled, and many a blot has fallen on it!

To a stranger entering the United States by New Orleans the impression made can hardly be a very favorable one. Person-

Digitized by Google

ally, I had every reason to be satisfied, for I received much hospitality and many friendly services from various families resident in this city, especially those of Messrs. Dürmayer and Höffer, with the latter of whom I spent eight days; but I was most heartily glad, nevertheless, to get out of it. This, too, is called a city of wonders, and not the least wonderful thing in it is the hearing slave-owners and slave-dealers talking aloud about human freedom and the rights of man.

## CHAPTER XIX.

Departure from New Orleans.—Napoleon.—Voyage on the Arkansas.—Little Rock.—Company in the Steamer.—American ill Manners.—Emancipated Children.—Fort Smith.—The Cherokee Indians.—St. Louis.—The Highlands.—The Farmers.—Lakes Pepin and St. Croix.

On the 23d of June I left New Orleans in the magnificent steamer *Belfast*, which was going up the Mississippi; and Captain Taylor, who was also owner of the vessel, when he heard my name, which he said he was well acquainted with through the newspapers, politely declined taking any payment.

The internal arrangements of this steamer were very splendid. Rich carpets covered the floors, and enormous looking-glasses the walls; and velvet-covered chairs and sofas, and a beautiful piano, adorned the saloon. Sleeping-cabins, beds, etc., left nothing to wish on the score of either convenience or luxury; and there were four rich and abundant meals, with pastry, ice, and so forth; yet the price was very reasonable, namely, for the passage from New Orleans to St. Louis, above 1200 miles, only twenty-five dollars, and the same distance down the stream only twenty. The Americans complained of it, nevertheless, as too high. I was myself only going half way, as far as the little town of Napoleon, and thence up the Arkansas, which falls into the Mississippi, to Fort Smith.

We stopped at many towns and villages on the way, of which the most considerable was Baton Rouge, a place of 30,000 inhabitants, and, although much smaller than New Orleans, regarded

Digitized by Google

as the capital of Louisiana, as it lies more in the centre of the State. The Government House, which is quite a palace, stands on a hill commanding a view of the town, and possesses a fine pillared portico. The town of Vicksburg, lying on a low hill, seems somewhat to exceed Baton Rouge in size. In the evening of the 26th of June I reached Napoleon, having now gone 700 miles from the mouth of the Mississippi; and in the whole of this distance I had not seen a single view that could be called agreeable, far less beautiful. The river, certainly a most majestic one, rolls on its mighty course between rich primeval forests; but the perpetual uniformity of the banks becomes excessively wearisome, and it is a kind of journey that one is glad to make in a swift steamer. The first 100 miles from New Orleans show an uninterrupted series of plantations of sugar, cotton, and maize, stretching over wide plains bounded in the background by forests. The latter are fine and close, but exhibit no giant trunks. Near Baton Rouge the ground rises into what may here pass for a hill, an elevation of about fifteen or twenty feet, but it soon sinks again into the dead monotonous flat, until you reach Vicksburg, where there is again a trifling rise. For the planter this is doubtless a fine prospect, as he regards it from quite a different point of view from the traveler, and sees in this boundless extent of land the rich promise of the future harvest. The only striking thing in this country must have been the inhabitants, and they, since the whites have been crowding hither, have entirely disappeared. No wigwam is now found hidden in the dark recesses of the forest; no picturesque Indian, armed with bow and arrow and scalping-knife, starts up suddenly at your side; even the few natives you meet with in the towns have very much the air of exotic plants, and, dressed as they often are in old European clothes, have lost half their peculiar character.

The journey lasted, as I have said, only three days; but during that time we had two melancholy events on board. A man died of the cholera, and a free negro, who used to wait at table, quarreled with one of his companions and struck him dead. It appeared that the man who committed the deed had his sleeping-place close to the ship's bell; and his comrade had, by way of

Digitized by Google

joke, tied his feet to it when he was asleep, and then suddenly shouted in his ear that it was time to lay the cloth. The sleeper awoke and sprang up, thereby of course setting the bell in violent motion, and getting, as might be expected, a very sharp reproof in consequence. Irritated at this, he began to quarrel with his comrade, and, seizing a large stick, struck him several times over the head with it so violently that he split his skull, and the man died in two hours afterward.

The passengers spoke of this occurrence with an air of the most perfect indifference, and boys of nine or ten years old went to look at the dead body, and came back as gayly as possible to tell what they had seen. I knew that human life was held rather lightly in America, but I did not expect to find the feelings of the young people blunted at so early an age as this.

The little town of Napoleon has only quite lately arisen in the forest, and is still entirely surrounded by it. I remained there only one day, and then shipped myself on the little steamer *Thomas P. Roy* for Little Rock, the chief town of the State of Arkansas, about 300 miles off—a distance that took us 42 hours.

On the Arkansas, as well as most of the tributaries of the Mississippi, only very small vessels can be used, as these rivers are in summer very deficient in water, and even the smallest steamers have to cease running for some months.

From the steamer I had left to the one I now entered the difference was great indeed, for the *Thomas P. Roy* was not only very small, but very disorderly. Here were no separate sleeping-cabins, but the gentlemen slept in one common cabin, and the ladies in another. This time, however, there were no ladies but myself and one with two children. But my astonishment may be imagined when in the evening her husband also came into our cabin and took possession of a berth. We had a temperature of 108° Fahr., yet I was obliged to keep the heavy curtains of my berth closely drawn; and in the morning I had to perform the very difficult feat of dressing myself behind them; and having to go thus with all my clothes on to the wash-hand-stand, my ablutions, as may be supposed, were of a very imperfect and unsatisfactory description. The ladies in this part of the world do not appear to

Digitized by Google

be very fastidious on these points, and I remember that afterward, when I was traveling on the Ohio, I once saw a young lady call into the ladies' cabin a gentleman (with whom she could not be very closely connected, since she addressed him as Mr. ——, and was addressed by him as Miss ——), and without ceremony ask him to fasten her dress, though there was a female attendant and plenty of women present who could have rendered this service.

Every thing in this boat was on the most parsimonious scale. Only a very little morsel of ice was put into the water at dinner, while in the *Belfast* iced water could be had at any hour of the day. The coffee and tea was drunk without milk, though we stopped several times every day, and milk is in this country so cheap that you may have a quart for a cent. For dinner we had on the first day roast fowls and potatoes; but the second only ham and potatoes; and the prices were actually higher than on the splendid Mississippi steamer.

Both sides of the Arkansas are clothed with thick woods, which indeed seem still to cover the greater part of the country. The river itself is so full of trunks of trees sticking up, or what is still more dangerous, only just covered with water, that the greatest caution is required; and at night it is only with a bright moonlight and high water that the navigation can be attempted.

Little Rock counts only 3000 inhabitants, and is more like a pretty little forest village than a town, as the houses lie far from one another, in the midst of trees and gardens.

I met here with a surprising musical prodigy, in the person of a child only six years old, Marie Schär, the daughter of German parents. She has only been five months receiving instruction, and already plays quite astonishingly; and she only needs to hear a melody once or twice to be able to play it. The accordion she managed in a masterly manner, though on that she had had no instruction at all. Unfortunately, in this out-of-the-way place her talents will have little chance of cultivation.

I waited in Little Rock till the 1st of July for the pretty little steamer *Colonel Drenner*, which was going to Fort Smith, 300 miles further. In this boat there was much more order, and very fair entertainment.



Digitized by Google

The passage up the Arkansas is more agreeable than on the Mississippi; for, although its rank as a river is far below the former—in fact, it is so poorly supplied with water that the steamers were continually getting upon sand-banks, and there was often much trouble in getting them off again—the eye finds here some enjoyment in the more varied landscape and the rising hills and mountain chains. They do not, indeed, yet reach any considerable height, but they are a great relief after the deadly uniformity of the Mississippi. Here all is, as yet, in the fresh wildness of nature. The primeval forest is still standing, and you see only here and there a small field of Indian corn, and a log-house half hidden among the trees,—a solitary outpost of civilization; but the inhabitants are seldom to be seen.

The hills increase in size; and now comes a group of rocks, when we have gone about seven or eight miles; but no one of them appears to have much claim to the title of "Big Rock," bestowed on one of them by the Americans, for none exceeds the height of thirty or forty feet. The "Dardanelles"* are some ten feet higher, and stand in a line like soldiers on each side of the river. The passengers were all enchanted with this picturesque spectacle, and thought there could be "nothing more beautiful in the world." In the background appeared Mount Magasin, 500 feet high, and distinguished by a long, narrow, smooth ridge from all others.

But, though without any very striking features, there is something in the deep solitude of the yet untrodden wilderness, where even the smallest villages are few and far between, and where not even the sound of the falling axe is heard, that is impressive and almost sublime; and the impression is not lessened, perhaps rather heightened, by the contrast of one of the greatest works of human art—the steamer—rushing, foaming through for a moment, and disturbing the solemn silence which, as soon as the sound of its paddle-wheels has ceased, settles down again as death-like as before.

* The Americans, as is well known, are fond of bestowing the names of the most renowned places, and even persons, of antiquity on the towns, villages, and natural features of their own country.

Digitized by Google

Although the forest was every where dense and luxuriant, and the few fields there were bore fine crops, the State of Arkansas is not counted among the fertile regions of America; and it is for this reason that it is, as yet, so little settled. When America shall have suffered the mournful fate of Europe and become overpopulated, the stream of emigration may turn this way; but as yet there is no need to be sparing with land, and there is more of the richest, finest soil than there are hands to till. The company in the boat did not appear to be of a very refined or highly intelligent class; and I got amazingly laughed at because, when we stopped to take in wood, I used to go into the forest to catch insects. Very few of the people I met had any notion at all of a museum.

If I had found the company at the hotel somewhat overtaciturn, I had certainly no such complaint to make of this; for they gossiped all day long, and asked me endless questions about my family connections — my religion — my motives for traveling so much — and, moreover, where I got the money for my long journeys. They did not confine themselves to talking either, but went into my cabin to look at my collection of insects, and not merely to look at, but to handle and often spoil them. Most troublesome of all were the children, who screamed and roared if their parents did not immediately comply with all their wishes, and do just what they pleased. Unluckily, they sometimes refused at first and afterward complied, which is, I think, the very worst plan they could have adopted. With children it should be always "Yes" or "No," and the word once spoken should be maintained. In this way, as a child soon learns that its screaming answers no purpose, and does not help it to what it wants, it soon ceases to scream.

Another fault in American education is, the introducing children too early to the usages and behavior of grown-up persons. In some countries of Europe the children remain children too long, which is not desirable; but the attempt to ignore childhood altogether is a far worse mistake. Here the little girl of eight years of age behaves like a grown-up young lady, and the boy of ten declines being treated as a boy any longer. In the Southern States, the girls often marry at twelve; and the same age is con-

Digitized by Google

sidered suitable for the boys' entrance on business. In some of these States the law even sanctions the runaway matches of young ladies who have attained this mature time of life, and who may choose to enter into a matrimonial connection without their parents' consent. The natural consequence of this emancipation of children, even from the most legitimate authority, is, that not merely their intellectual culture is very imperfect, but that the timid modesty, the bloom and freshness of youth, is soon lost among the girls, and that the women are sadly deficient in the tender feminine grace which is the truest ornament of our sex.

In no country in the world, perhaps, are there so many educational institutions, public and private, as in the United States; and yet there are, as far as I have seen, very few really cultivated and accomplished girls or women; for I scarcely count being able to play a little on the piano and sing a French song as constituting a claim to that title. Their knowledge is for the most part extremely superficial, though they exhibit true republican daring in making the most of it. I felt a cold shiver run over me whenever I saw a piano in the saloon of the steamer, for young and old ladies seated themselves at it without the smallest hesitation, and favored us with songs in uninterrupted succession the whole day long. Of geography they knew so little, that when they asked me, as hundreds did, what country I came to the United States from, and where I was born, and that I answered I came from Peru, and was born in Vienna, I found they did not know the position of either; their geographical knowledge seemed confined to Paris and London, some general notion of Germany, and, since the commencement of the Russian war, of St. Petersburg and Constantinople.

In many of the schools in which I attended examinations of the highest classes in geography, the questions did not go beyond the United States, so that one might have thought there was no other country in the world.

At first I was exceedingly surprised at this ignorance, having understood from the parents that the children had begun to attend the schools as early as four years old; but I subsequently got a little more insight into the matter. Very few of the par-

Digitized by Google

ents are themselves highly cultivated, and they think when they have sent their children to school they have done enough. The mothers of the opulent classes are not brought up to be very domestic in their tastes and habits, but pass the greater part of the day swinging themselves in a rocking-chair and reading a novel; or they go out shopping, and spend hours in turning over the costly goods. To take the education of their children on themselves would be far too much trouble—they have "no time" for it: and the schools are very lax in their discipline; for if the child were compelled to work more than it liked, and complained of the school, its complaints would be sure to be attended to; and if it expressed a wish to change the school for another, the change would be made accordingly. The teachers are therefore compelled to be very cautious how they offend the small personages, by insisting too much on attention to the studies, for if they did they would soon find their school empty.

After I had become aware of all this, I no longer wondered at the superficiality of the ladies' knowledge, but, on the contrary was rather surprised that they were as well informed as I found them.

On reaching Fort Smith, I found that the water was thence too shallow to allow of my traveling by it any further, and I therefore hired a horse, intending to ride to Fort Gibson, in the neighborhood of which I expected to find the Cherokee Indians; but in the night I was again attacked by my old enemy, the Sumatra fever, and was obliged to renounce my project.

The Cherokee Indians are distinguished above all others by their personal advantages and educational progress. They live in towns and villages under a constitutional form of government, have good schools, and even a newspaper; and they frequently send their sons into American commercial houses. Their chief is married to a white girl of respectable family, for a marriage with an Indian is not here considered disgraceful.

I met many of these Cherokees at Fort Smith, whither they come sometimes on business and sometimes on pleasure, and they used frequently to dine at the hotel where I was staying. They spoke a little English, used knives and forks, and generally be-

Digitized by Google

haved themselves with great decorum—with the exception of sometimes taking a piece out of the dish, and carrying it straight their mouths.

These men were mostly handsome, both in face and figure; and, but for their complexions, might have passed for Europeans. Their skins, however, I must own, were not very pretty, being of a dirty-looking brown color, and very much like leather. Both men and women wore European clothing—a sort of wide, short blouse, with a large collar, handsomely trimmed; and one had a piece of red stuff wreathed round his head, like a garland. The ladies, unluckily, were by no means so good-looking as the gentlemen.

The 4th of July came during my stay at Fort Smith, and with it the celebration of the Declaration of Independence; on which occasion there was a negro-ball, and both slaves and free negroes took part in it.

The costumes were European, of course. The gentlemen were in black, with white neck-cloths and white waistcoats; the ladies in *tulle*, and other pretty white dresses; and there was no lack of gold chains and jewelry, or of ribbons and flowers in the hair. The ball-room was well lit and decorated, the refreshments abundant; but the European toilets, with the black and variously-colored faces, gave to the whole scene a somewhat comic effect.

As soon as I was sufficiently recovered from the fever, I returned to Napoleon by another handsome steamer, the *Crescent City*, the captain of which also declined taking any payment from me.

The shores of the Mississippi, as we proceeded farther up, still preserved their monotonous character; thick boundless forests covered the plain, and no glimpse appeared of any more varied scenery—not even of considerable plantations—nothing but here and there a wretched-looking hut, with a pile of wood ready for the passing steamer.

Above the town of Memphis the banks of the river rose abruptly about fifty feet, and this is considered, consequently, the finest scene on the river. Our worthy Captain John called me up on purpose to admire it, and there was no end to the raptures

Digitized by Google

of the passengers. But after a few hundred yards, as if nature was quite exhausted by such an effort at the picturesque, she fell back into her former dismal uniformity.

At Teddo, 300 miles from St. Louis, and consequently 1000 from the mouth of the river, you first get something like a fine view. There is a large handsome Catholic college here, and a Catholic church, in the Gothic style, as well as some imposing-looking brick houses. The river is here divided by some pretty islands into several branches, forming bays, and what looks like a lake, while in the background appear ranges of hills; so that people who have never seen any other country than the dreary regions on the lower part of the river are much struck by it; but it will not bear any comparison, for instance, with the scenery of the Danube.

At the town of Cairo, 280 miles below St. Louis, the Mississippi receives the waters of the Ohio, distinguishable for a long way by their pure green color. After a struggle the waters begin to mingle—single waves of the muddy Mississippi trouble the purity of the Ohio—they become more and more frequent, and at length the bright pure water entirely disappears in the murkier fluid; just as we often see in life the evil principle gain, for a time at least, the upper hand of the good.

The small town of Cairo lies on a tongue of land between the two rivers. It resembles a great many other of the American towns, which mostly exhibit marks of the haste with which they have been constructed. They consist of scattered wooden houses, in which a few small rooms are formed by thin partitions, that can keep out neither the cold of winter nor the heat of summer; both of which, as it is well known, reach greater extremes in the United States than in other countries of similar latitude.

The American takes a fancy to settle here or there, sets to work and builds rapidly what is absolutely necessary; and should his wants increase, he builds more. But it often happens that the place does not correspond with his hopes and expectations, or some other idea has presented itself to his speculative mind, in which case he abruptly leaves the settlement, even when he has been doing very well, in order to follow up his new project, and

Digitized by Google

plant himself somewhere else. The Americans call this "going ahead," or keeping moving; and I myself met, in the steamer, several of these "moving" families, who confessed to me that they were leaving their homes for no other reason than because they had lived in them for some years.

On the 14th of July we reached the town of St. Louis, which had been visible for some hours before, as the river in this part makes many windings; but there was nothing very attractive in the dull mass of houses that lay along the banks, and extended over a slight elevation. The large American towns have fine buildings, many churches, etc.; but these are only seen when you go through the streets. There are seldom any majestic domes or lofty towers to greet you from afar. The country round St. Louis is flat and sandy, and the woods lie several miles off.

I stopped at the house of Mr. Charles Boice, a judge, with whom I had become acquainted at New Orleans, and who, hearing I was going to St. Louis, had had the kindness to invite me to his house.

The town of St. Louis had, when I visited it, no less a population than 120,000, although fifteen years ago it did not count nearly a tenth of that number. As usual, the hotels, the bank, and the custom-house are the most remarkable buildings; but there are also some private ones well worth notice; for instance, a house in "4th Street," which is built entirely of white marble found in the neighborhood of the town; and the Catholic church, though simple, is extremely pretty. My first walk was to this church, my inducement thereto being the following description which I had read in the St. Louis Directory for the year:

"The Cathedral at St. Louis is unrivaled in the United States for the elegance and costly magnificence of its sacred vessels, its pictures, and decorations; and few churches in Europe are in possession of similar treasures. There are pictures by Rubens, Raphael, Guido, Paul Veronese, and many others by the first masters of the Italian school."

From this description I was led to hope for the enjoyment of a fine picture-gallery, as well as of other precious works of art; but, to my infinite astonishment, I found that these treasures existed

Digitized by Google

almost solely in the imagination of the writer. There were no works of art but four oil pictures, and of these only one that could possibly be ascribed to any of the old masters. It is common enough to find exaggeration and coloring in the statements of travelers, but such a piece of downright falsehood as this I had not before met with.

The prison is built of massive stone; the interior consisting of a great hall with two stories of cells, each adapted for two persons, but without any kind of furniture but an ox-hide to supply the place of a bedstead. The prisoners before trial may, as far as their purses permit, procure themselves every indulgence, but after conviction this is no longer allowed. This at least is the letter of the law; but I myself saw the convicts in possession of more comforts than the other class, for the golden key is as powerful in these free countries as any where else in the world.

The prison diet would not have been bad if the mode of preparation had been a little better; but it was both unhealthy and wanting in cleanliness, and the people were fed quite like dogs. There was one great tub into which all sorts of food were thrown together; and when this was brought into thé hall, a disgustingly dirty negro took out, sometimes with a ladle, sometimes even with his hands, a certain portion, threw it into a pan, and pushed this through a little opening in the cell doors. The air in the hall was very impure, and in the cells almost unbearable. Executions take place always in the court-yard of the prison.

There are many institutions of a charitable kind, such as for forsaken children, for poor old people, and for the reformation of women of bad character, etc.; all of which appeared to me admirably managed—the establishment for the poor especially, for whom much is done in the United States. Many societies of the kind are formed by the ladies only, who superintend and provide for them in a very effectual manner; and in this respect the ladies of America deserve the most cordial praise.

The sugar refinery of the Messrs. Belcher is extremely well worth seeing, and is the largest in the western country. More than six hundred tons of molasses are made into refined sugar every week; and in this operation 700 men are employed, and

Digitized by Google

140 horses and mules. I saw here one of the deepest Artesian wells that have, I believe, ever been made; it has already reached a depth of 2200 feet, and the boring is still going on; for though there is already an abundant supply of water, it is so impregnated with sulphur that it can not be used. The market-hall of St. Louis is handsome, but not equal to that of New Orleans.

*Bellefontaine*, as it is called, is one of the prettiest cemeteries that I have ever seen—consisting of a magnificent natural park of many hundred acres of land, in which art has had nothing more to do than to clear away the underwood and cut down a few of the trees. In this ground only places for family graves are sold, and these at a pretty high price. Each is adorned with flowers, and surrounded by a light, elegant iron railing; and in the centre stands a handsome marble monument, often of Italian workmanship. As yet, however, there are very few of these places filled. The whole park is intersected by beautiful paths for walking and driving, and it certainly would not be easy to find a more charming walk. I only regretted that there were no seats, so that one might take a book and linger there a much longer time.

I remained some weeks in the house of Mr. Boice, and during the whole time was very attentive to the treatment of the servants, who were all slaves, and, to my great joy, I found that they were treated as if they belonged to the family—well clothed, well fed, and with even, as it appeared to me, too little work; for half a dozen slaves certainly had not as much as would have been done among us by two servants. Mr. and Mrs. Boice, it is true, are among the most excellent people in existence, and their children uncommonly well brought up. Could such masters as these be secured for slaves, their lot would doubtless be happy enough.

I made a little excursion from St. Louis to a town called Highland, thirty-two miles off, and situated on the other side of the Mississippi, in the State of Illinois. For this purpose I had to take a place in the stage-coach—certainly no very agreeable mode of traveling here; for the Americans, who are commonly so careful, almost covetous of their time, manifest with these machines a really heavenly patience. The passengers do not, for instance,

Digitized by Google

collect at any common starting-point, but the coach drives about to the respective houses to pick up passengers—a plan that in a large town, of course, occasions a dreadful loss of time—as you go driving here and there, sometimes for two or three hours, before the actual journey begins. Just as much time is lost over the changing horses. They are never ready; and the gentlemen go into the inn or liquor shop, and pass half an hour there at each stage. The horses are also watered on the road.

The little town of Highland is about fifteen years old, and contains 5000 Germans and Swiss, by whom it has been founded. Before this, the country round was entirely prairie; but now it is covered with luxuriant wheat, oats, and maize fields. I was received here in a very complimentary manner.* A Mr. Bernais, who had formerly been attached to the French Embassy in Vienna, was waiting for me at the station, to conduct me to his house, and in the evening I had a serenade from the Musical Society of the place; and the cordial feeling manifested toward me—the German language that I heard on all sides—the German songs and musical compositions performed for my entertainment, and really in an admirable manner—all this made me fairly forget in what a strange and distant part of the world I was. I seemed to have been somehow conjured back into a place in Germany.

Five or six miles beyond Highland, the prairies are still in a state of nature. I went to visit them, and found them very different from my previous conception, formed only on description. I had imagined an immeasurable level surface, covered with grass six or seven feet high, and the passage through which was extremely difficult. I found, however, on reaching the prairie, that the land was of an undulating form, and, though thickly covered with grass, herbs, and weeds, these nowhere exceeded the height of two or three feet; and it was perfectly possible to walk, or even drive, all over the prairie. The prospect from one of the hillocks of twenty or thirty feet high was charming. I could

* I hope I shall be pardoned for mentioning little particulars of this kind. I do so for the sake of making my acknowledgments for the kindness I have received, in the course of my travels, from people of all nations.

Digitized by Google

never have imagined that a landscape without river, mountain, or lake could have been half so beautiful. The waving outline afforded the eye the advantage of a distant prospect and of perpetual variety. On some of the slopes lay pretty farm-houses, in the midst of blooming plantations; and in the foreground the little town, shaded by groves of fruit and other trees; and in the far distance appeared the dark forest to frame in the picture.

On the great estates of Mr. Kopfli an experiment was made, a few years ago, of planting vines, and they succeeded admirably; but it was found that the expense of making the wine was so great that it could be had cheaper from abroad, and the matter was therefore given up for the present.

I visited several of the farms, as I much wished to become acquainted with the mode of life of the class of farmers in America; and I certainly became convinced that, for any one who possesses property sufficient to buy land, build himself a house, and cover the expenses of the first year, there is here the finest prospect opened. Land, in the districts still unsettled, may be bought of the government at a dollar and a quarter per acre; and with his own land the farmer may do precisely what he will. Nothing in this fine, free country is a monopoly; nothing is forbidden or highly taxed; and, one very trifling rate excepted, he has no duties or burdens whatever.

The farmers, with their men, perform all the out-of-door labor, for you never see in this country women at work in the fields, or dragging home fodder for cattle, or carrying their productions to market, etc. The Americans treat their women far too tenderly to allow them to undertake any such severe labors. The women perform the domestic employments, milk the cows, make butter, etc. They live extremely well, and are always well dressed; indeed, that matter the good ladies carry somewhat to excess, and make their appearance on Sundays in grand state, with gold watches, rings, chains, and so forth.

The food of these farmers is excellent and most abundant: at breakfast, cold meat and ham, with bread and butter, tea and coffee; in the evening, a similar meal; and roast meats, etc., at dinner. The same viands are set forth every day, by which the

Digitized by Google

ladies are spared much trouble in contriving a variety of dishes. Almost every farmer's wife has in her house a nice spare room to receive her friends in; but there is, nevertheless, not so much hospitality among them as I expected to find.

If a stranger happens to come in when the family are at their meals, he is invited to join them, but should he arrive at any other time, not so much as a glass of milk will be offered him. I was told, too, that though you may pass a night at one of these farm-houses, you are expected to pay for your accommodation, so that I do not see exactly where the hospitality is.

I can not leave Highland without mentioning my obligations to the amiable family of Bandelier. Every one with whom I became acquainted learned my passion for insects; but since I had quitted the Dutch Indian settlements, no one had been so complaisant as, either for friendship or payment, to assist me with any contributions; indeed, when they possessed any specimens, they seemed sometimes quite afraid to show them to me; and I could hardly help laughing at the anxiety they manifested in displaying to me a few butterflies and beetles, as if they feared they ought to offer them, yet were by no means willing to do so. It was in vain that, when I asked to see them, I distinctly stated that I did not desire to have them, but merely to look at them; they evidently did not trust me. Many people had unfortunately "sent them to a museum," or "presented them to a friend" only a few days ago.

The young son of Mr. Bandelier, however, a lad of fifteen, made an honorable exception. He showed me his collection with the greatest readiness and pleasure, and pressed me, with really touching sincerity and earnestness, to take from it whatever was of any use to me.

From Highland I drove ten miles to Lebanon, to see a newly-founded town, which as yet consists of nothing more than a row of little wooden houses on the edge of the forest: the way to it lies mostly through the prairie. Four miles further is the farm of Mr. Hekers; and with astonishment I recognized in him a distinguished and highly cultivated man, who was compelled, for political reasons, to quit his native country of Baden, and is now

Digitized by Google

as completely occupied with rural affairs as if he had been born a farmer. To see him in his rustic dress, working among his men, no one would imagine what his former life had been; and his wife surprised me even more by the calm and cheerful resignation with which she has entered on her new life and accommodated herself to her change of circumstances. It must have been hard enough for them both, at first, to renounce all intellectual intercourse, and associate only with those whose "talk is of oxen."

On returning from this excursion, I lingered a few days more at St. Louis; and then, on the 29th of July, continued my journey in the beautiful steamer *Excelsior*, which was going 800 miles farther, to St. Paul.

Thirty miles above St. Louis, you come to the mouth of the Missouri, which here pours itself into the Mississippi, and brings all the dirt into its waters, for which it is so notorious. Above the Missouri they are perfectly bright and clear.

On the 30th of July, early in the morning, we arrived at the tiny little town of Hamburg, consisting of at most a dozen houses, but in an extremely pretty situation, on a hill about 100 feet high.

Still more beautiful is the position of Clarksville; and we passed several villages, all consisting only of a few wooden houses, or rather cottages, but which, in consideration of their future greatness and population, are already called towns. The American lives, indeed, so much in the future, that he has little enjoyment of the present. Between Hamburg and the small town of Quincy, the passage on the Mississippi is much pleasanter. The river here abounds in islands, great and small; chains of hills show themselves; the woods become much finer, the trees taller and of larger girth. At Quincy the plains again come into the foreground, and at Keokuk the water became so shallow, that the greater part of our lading had to be transferred to a towing-boat. The town of Madison, with the fort of the same name, may be considered a considerable place for this part of the country, as it numbers 3000 or 4000 inhabitants; and still more important is Burlington, which boasts of brick houses, forming broad streets.

Rock Island and Davenport, lying opposite to each other, and

Digitized by Google

only separated by the Mississippi, have also some right to be called towns. None of these towns or villages, however, have any striking or attractive features; the land is still little broken on either side of the river, and the woods only cleared here and there in small patches, just to make room for the towns. There is little land cultivated near them, unless it lies further in the interior than I could see.

We remained for the night lying opposite Davenport, and toward eleven o'clock there arose such a violent storm that it threatened to become a perfect hurricane. The flashes of lightning succeeded each other without interruption, the thunder rolled wildly through the roaring of the wind, and the officers and the captain hastened down from their cabins on the upper terrace to the lower floors, fearing the storm might carry them away, as well as the chimney of the engine, as it had done in a similar case three weeks before. We saw the shattered remains of it lying on the shore, as well as a brick house that had been unroofed by the hurricane.

On the morning of the 4th of August we turned into the Fever River, and landed at the little town of Galena, not far from its mouth. The position of this town is very charming; one part of it winds round the foot of a beautiful hill, and the other stretches in picturesque groups of habitations up to its summit. From Galena we turned into the Mississippi, which had now decreased considerably in breadth; but its banks have improved in beauty, if that term could be applied to them at all hitherto; but, in fact, the whole way from New Orleans to this river, a distance of 1600 miles, the aspect the Mississippi presents is enough to drive a painter to despair: all one can do is to try and fill the imagination with the idea of the grandeur of passing between primeval forests and prairies on one of the mightiest rivers of the whole earth, and through regions that, twenty years ago, were untrodden save by the bear and the buffalo, and the wild Indian hunter who pursued them, though now towns and villages are shooting up in them like mushrooms.

This is a grand thing to think of at first, but after a few days one gets tired of the perpetual monotony of the scenery.

Digitized by Google

The company on this steamer was very mixed indeed. There were two girls, of about twenty years of age, whose behavior left very little doubt of what class they belonged to, and who, when they passed me as they were leaving the boat, clapped me on the shoulder and bawled in my ear, in the most impudent manner, that I was just like their grandmother, which, as far as my age went, I might have been. At dinner several of the ladies pelted each other with the gnawed cobs of Indian corn, and it was often not easy for their neighbors to avoid getting a share of the compliment. In the evening they all took possession of the rocking-chairs, and began rocking themselves with all their might. I should have liked to have been artist enough to make a drawing of them in those positions, and showed them what they all looked like. There were ten of these chairs, and the ladies placed them in a circle, threw themselves back in them, many even held their hands over their heads, stuck their feet far out, and then away they went full swing. There was certainly nothing very delicate or feminine in their appearance while they were engaged in this exercise.

I have been told I must not judge the manners of the Americans by what I have seen on board the steamers, and I am willing to believe it; yet did I not, in fact, see more of the natural character in the unrestrained freedom of such meetings than in the fashionable parties of New Orleans and New York? In the parties, I should never have found out what a pleasure the gentlemen take in sticking their feet up upon chairs, or even upon tables; nor witnessed the performances of the fair sex on the rocking-chairs. In private society, I should never have known who had so little respect for themselves or their company, and so little genuine love of cleanliness and order, as to come to table in dirty linen, torn dresses, dirty boots, etc. I should not have seen gentlemen chewing tobacco like common sailors—laying the bones of fowls, after they had picked them, on the table-cloth by their plates, and doing other things that I hardly like to describe. I should not have seen how ill brought-up the children were; and I should never have had occasion to remark that astonishing zeal in favor of their own particular orthodoxy, whatever that might

Digitized by Google

be, which induced ladies and gentlemen, the moment I came on deck, to come up to me and ask to what Church I belonged! "Really, Sir," or "Madam," I used to reply, "I do not wish to question you about your Church, and I should be glad if you would follow my example."

If I asked for a book in the presence of one of these zealous personages, they would present me with the Bible or a religious tract; and I must own, this rude and abrupt manner of forcing their opinions upon me gave me any thing but a favorable opinion of them, and did not at all dispose me to listen to what they might have further to say; indeed, I used to shun these proselyte-makers as I would a pestilence.

Early in the morning of the 6th of August we entered a small lake, from the midst of which rose a little island; and the whole region lay before us so still and romantic, the island looked so secluded from all the world, that there only wanted a cell and a hermit to complete the picture.

This small lake forms a kind of entrance to a larger one, called the Pepin Lake, which is about twenty miles long, and four broad. Both are formed by the Mississippi, and the sight of the larger almost made me amends for my long and tedious voyage up the river.

To the southwest its basin is surrounded by a chain of lofty hills, some of which fall in precipitous rocky walls of 300 or 400 feet in height. To one of these, called Marden's Rock, a melancholy tradition is attached of a young Indian girl, who, though betrothed to one of her own people, had become warmly attached to a white man, who, having lost his way, had come into her wigwam. When the time approached for her wedding, finding that she could not otherwise escape, she had rushed to the top of this rock and plunged into the lake below, which restored to her bridegroom only her inanimate corpse.

The other side of the lake is partly encircled by hills, partly by gently swelling slopes, with a range of mountains in the background; and villages and farms lie scattered about the shore. I was never weary of looking at this beautiful landscape reflected in the smooth watery mirror beneath, and considered the rate of



Digitized by Google

the steamer much too swift when it carried us through it to a third lake, that of St. Croix, formed by the river of the same name, and which is longer, but considerably narrower, than Lake Pepin. It is drawn, like a long white scarf, through hills, and plains, and woods, and leaves scarcely room for a few small islands in its channel.

---

## CHAPTER XX.

St. Paul.—St. Anthony's Falls.—The Fur Hunters.—A Drive in a Stage-coach.—Stillwater.—St. Croix.—Return to Galena.—American Patience.—Chicago.—Lake Michigan.—Milwaukee.—The Subterranean Railway.—The Mormons.—Lake Superior.—The Indians.—Lakes Huron and Erie.—Cleveland.—The Falls of Niagara.—The Village.

On the morning of the 7th of August we arrived at St. Paul, the capital of the district of Minnesota. The town is divided into two parts; one of which lies on the shore, and the other on the upland above. Like all the other places in this district, it is not more than five years old, has arisen with astonishing rapidity, and already counts more than 5000 inhabitants. Between the wooden houses stand some stately-looking edifices of brick, and, scattered round to the distance of two miles, lie pretty country houses in gardens planted on the land that is only just cleared of forest.

Minnesota is not yet incorporated with the United States, but is only a territory. In order to be recognized as a state, a tract of land must be inhabited by a certain number of whites—from 60,000 to a 100,000—and as long as this is not the case it remains only a territory or district. In these any one may settle, taking land wherever he can find it, without asking any one's consent, or having any thing whatever to pay, and being entirely free from taxes. As soon, however, as the territory is declared a state, he must pay a dollar and a quarter an acre for all the land he has taken, or give it up.

Before the declaration a general meeting of the inhabitants takes place, to determine by a majority of votes for or against

Digitized by Google

the introduction of slavery. In Minnesota the question has been determined in the negative, not so much from philanthropic considerations as on account of the nature of the climate. This is healthy, and perfectly adapted to Europeans, who can here perform all kinds of field labor as well as at home; and, where this is the case, their work is cheaper than that of slaves.

The Territory of Minnesota contains 166,000 square miles, or 106,000,000 of acres of land; and, although it has been known to the whites more than 100 years, it was only in 1849 that the government made a regular examination of it, and declared it very fertile. It then purchased the land from the natives (a few small portions excepted), and sent the greater part of them to the Indian Territory. In these cases the government pays the Indian chiefs usually about five or six cents the acre, and the expenses of measurement, of transporting the people to the new grounds, of negotiating with them, making them presents, etc., are reckoned at so much more; so that the land costs ten or twelve cents, and is sold to settlers, as I have said, at one and a quarter dollar per acre.

For these few years past the population of Minnesota has been going on with astounding rapidity, and it will probably in a short time become a State. In the year 1852 there were scarcely 20,000 whites in it, but the year after nearly double that number. Hitherto the only exports have been boards and timber of every kind, the first being floated down the river to St. Louis, whence they are sent further. You see in this country steam and water saw-mills at work in places where the smoke of the Indian's wigwam and the traces of the wild buffalo and the deer have hardly disappeared. Here nature and human industry are brought into close conflict; and never was land so eagerly seized on as in Minnesota. Large quantities of corn, potatoes, and so forth, are nevertheless imported from the neighboring States, as the settlers are still too much occupied with clearing the forest and with the saw-mills to grow all that is required; but in a few years they will be able to raise not only all that is wanted for home consumption, but for export also, for the soil is extraordinarily rich.

It is a beautiful and happy country, which one may, with a

Digitized by Google

good conscience, recommend to all emigrants, especially such as bring with them strong hands, willing industry, and a love of order. Here the settler has no deadly climate to encounter, and may hope for a speedy reward to his industry; and not, as in some countries, look forward to a long life of toil, of which his children only can reap the fruits.

I came to St. Paul with an introductory letter to a Mr. Holingshead, who has built himself a house at a short distance from the town, on a hill, whence he can overlook the pleasant panorama.

The surface of the whole country is undulating, and still occupied in great part by prairie and forest. The waving form affords a wide extent of view, and Mr. Holingshead pointed out a hill whence it is said you can see for 100 miles round, and which serves as a convenient landmark for wanderers who happen to lose their way. Mr. Holingshead was so good as to invite me to a drive of nine miles to the most celebrated falls of the Mississippi, those known as St. Anthony's.

We went by the prettiest roads, over plain and hill, between prairies and thickets, and lately broken-up lands, where the newly-arrived settler had only just set up his log-hut in the midst of his fields. Every step that brought me nearer to the falls increased my curiosity, for I had heard them mentioned by the Americans as among the most remarkable scenes of the kind. I could not, indeed, expect any great mass of water, as the river was so shallow near the falls that we could drive through it; but what was wanting in volume would, I hoped, be made up in height.

I was soon standing on the edge of these renowned falls, and I certainly was beyond measure astonished; not, however, at their grandeur, but their insignificance. There were not *falls*, but only one fall, and that not above twenty feet high. Its breadth was indeed considerable; but that only served to make it look still lower than it was. It was also much disfigured by a number of trunks of trees that had floated toward it, and by a saw-mill. The prettiest thing about the fall was the rock over which it fell, which was as smoothly perpendicular as if it had been cut by a chisel; but there was nothing romantic to view in the environs, merely the forest, which shut out every other prospect.

Digitized by Google

Here, then, was another of the scenes which the Americans make such a talk about, but which I must say I think only those who have seen very little could extol so highly.

I do not like to echo what others would say out of mere complaisance, but always to state simply what my own feelings and opinions are, though without the slightest wish to represent them as the only correct ones.

On leaving the Mississippi Falls, we made, on our return to St. Paul, a little circuit, to see the "Fall of the Minne-ha-ha!" or "Laughing Water." This little cascade is scarcely three feet broad, but falls sixty feet over a rocky precipice into a basin below, which is inclosed by wooded hills or walls of rock. The whole bears a great resemblance to an extinct crater of a volcano; but there is nowhere about it the least trace of lava or any thing that might strengthen such a conjecture. Between the rock and the water of the fall there is room to pass; and, on the whole, this miniature cascade pleased me better than the celebrated one of the Mississippi; possibly, in some measure, because I expected nothing from it, while of the St. Anthony's Falls I had heard much laudation. The view from the top of the Minne-ha-ha Fall was extremely pretty. The eye wandered far over the undulating prairie country, on the one side to the River Minnesota, on the other following the course of the Mississippi, as beyond the fall it winds through a narrow rocky channel.

We passed on our way Fort Snelling, which is built of stone on a solid rocky foundation, and, with its corner towers, must certainly be to Indians impregnable. It is here that the Minnesota pours itself into the Mississippi.

We found encamped near this fort a party of the fur-hunters, as they are called. These people lead a curious life. They associate constantly with the Indians, and even choose their wives from among them, occupying themselves entirely with hunting and barter trade. They remain for weeks and months together in the thick forest, wander far up toward the north, and endeavor to make acquaintance with all the tribes of natives, from whom they get furs in exchange for glass beads, colored handkerchiefs, etc. When they have collected a sufficient load, they pack it on

Digitized by Google

a small two-wheeled car drawn by one horse, and proceed to the nearest large town to sell it, bringing with them on their return tea, coffee, sugar, and whatever they need for their own consumption, as well as goods for their barter trade with the Indians.

They encamp during their journeys in little tents under the open sky, and become so attached to their wild way of life, that they will not exchange it for a settled situation of the greatest comfort. Although they often get a great deal of money for their furs, they mostly come back from the towns quite poor; for, like the gold diggers of California, they can not resist the temptations offered them, and soon find themselves at the end of their hardly earned treasure. He among them may be accounted as a prudent man who keeps enough to purchase goods to continue his Indian trade.

We brought back from our excursion most excellent appetites, and found at Mr. Holingshead's house a most excellent dinner awaiting us. Afterward I went with Mrs. Holingshead to see a grotto two miles from St. Paul, which runs for half a mile into a sand-hill; but a brook that rises in it, and has no actual bed, makes it wet and damp all over, so that a walk in its interior is not very agreeable, especially as there is not much to reward the trouble, for there is nowhere any trace of a dripping-stone to be seen. The prettiest thing about it is the kind of irregular hall that forms the entrance, and which, being very cool, is a favorite resort of the townspeople on hot days for purposes of social recreation.

On the 9th of August I left St. Paul, in order to go to Lake Superior—a journey which is made partly on the River St. Croix and partly by land. I had arranged to go in company with a gentleman who was traveling the same way, and was to wait for him two days at Stillwater, a place about sixteen miles off, to which I was to go in the stage-coach. The company consisted, when I got in, of a young man who never spoke a word, and a young woman who never held her tongue, and who in the course of a quarter of an hour had made me acquainted with the whole of her affairs. When we had gone about two miles our company received an addition. It was a young woman who,

Digitized by Google

to judge by her dress, might have been thought to belong to the wealthy classes, as she was "clothed in silk attire," with abundance of ornaments; but her behavior enabled us only too soon to certify her position. She had on one side of her face two blue spots that looked very much as if they had been received in a fight; she chewed tobacco at a prodigious rate; and, pulling from her pocket a bottle of brandy, she proceeded to refresh herself with it, and then, with great politeness, offered it to us. She talked to every one, though from the silent gentleman and myself she received no answer; but with the gossiping young woman she was soon engaged in conversation. This society, however, did not suit the lady's views, and she soon called to the coachman to stop, got out, and joined the men on the outside.

We stopped to dine at an inn, and as this person was a *white* we were compelled to endure her company at table—another instance of the wisdom of classing people by the color of their skins.

For this sixteen miles' journey we took, including the dinner-time, six hours; but the way was so extremely pretty, that I could with pleasure have repeated it (only not in the stage-coach). It led through park-like meadows, past small lakes said to abound in fish, and then, again, we had beautiful views over the wide prairie and the Lake of St. Croix.

At Stillwater I was received in the most friendly manner in the house of a Mr. Skullenberg, and there I waited, according to agreement, for my traveling companion; but, to my great surprise, he neither came nor wrote—the very first instance of a failure in politeness toward a woman that I ever met with in an American.

On the 12th of August I went on board a very tiny steamer for St. Croix. Stillwater lies at the end of the lake, so that we soon got into the St. Croix River, which is only navigable for very small vessels; and at the town of St. Croix it forms rapids and waterfalls, and above this is so shallow and full of rocks, that the smallest boats can hardly make their way. The views around of wildly picturesque rocks and woods are beautiful; but a traveler anxious about personal accommodation would perhaps scarcely find compensation in them for all the inconveniences of these

Digitized by Google

small steamers. These regions are as yet visited by few besides wood-cutters and dealers in wood, who come on board ragged, dirty, and not unfrequently drunk; and, since there is only one cabin, you must perforce associate with them. Our table was miserably served, our table-cloth disgustingly dirty, the place of glasses was supplied by tea-cups, and, what was far worse, I had a drunken man opposite to me, and could hear another snoring in one of the berths; so that I shall not easily forget this passage. We ran aground on sand-banks several times, and did not reach St. Croix till the following day, although we had left Stillwater at eight in the morning; and I had the satisfaction of passing the night on a very dirty bed, that was, moreover, as hard and lumpy as if it were filled with stones.

*August 13th.* At nine o'clock in the morning we got in; and the steamer stopped in a basin so completely inclosed by rocks sixty or seventy feet high, that the entrance can hardly be seen. One of these rocks, which stands rather apart from the rest, bears the name of the "Devil's Chimney."

As soon as I landed I tried to find some one to guide me to the two falls of the St. Croix, the Taylor and the Upper Fall—of both of which I had heard much at Stillwater.

When we Europeans talk of a waterfall, we understand a tolerable mass of water throwing itself from a considerable height. But the Americans are more easily contented, and make up by the grandeur of the name for what is wanting in the thing. A sort of rapid, of scarcely three feet in height, before which the steamer stopped, but which I should have scarcely noticed, was pointed out to me as the Taylor Fall; and about a mile further we came to the Upper Fall, which was perhaps seven or eight feet high, and to which also the name of rapid would have been more applicable.

The town of St. Croix consists as yet only of a hotel, a dozen wooden houses, and a few saw-mills lying in the neighboring forest; but the people have hopes that it will shortly rise into a considerable town; only, it is to observed, that wherever in America there are a few huts standing the occupants always cherish the same expectation.

Digitized by Google

The weather at St. Paul and Stillwater was already cold, cloudy, and rainy, more than it is with us in the month of November; so that I was strongly advised to give up the idea of going to Lake Superior by land; and, in consideration of the probable recurrence of my constant torment, the Sumatra fever, which might under these circumstances be dangerous, I hearkened to this advice, and returned to Galena, on the Mississippi, a distance of 300 miles; from Galena I went by stage-coach to Warren (25 miles); and thence, 175 miles further, by rail to Chicago, where I arrived on the 20th of August.

There is not much to be said concerning this journey: the country is mostly undulating in surface, a great deal covered with wood, and, where cultivated, extremely fertile. I found, however, more interest in observing the Americans themselves, who unite so many contradictory qualities, that they were a constant enigma to me. At one moment the merest trifle, a word, is sufficient to set their blood boiling and to excite them to fury, and even the commission of murder. At another time they manifest the most extraordinary and invincible patience. For example, with their servants, who really often appear to be more masters in the house than those who bear the name, they will beg for the performance of the commonest service as if it were quite a favor. Assuredly I should always desire to see servants treated with kindness, and as if they belonged to the family, but I would nevertheless insist upon their performing as exactly every duty they had undertaken as I should mine toward them; but here people do not seem at all of this way of thinking.

On the drive from Galena to Warren the patience with which nine gentlemen submitted to the whims of the coachman did, I must own, considerably disturb mine. At the last stage where we changed horses travelers are accustomed, when they arrive in good time, to take tea, or some other refreshments. We, however, were very late, and, as we feared we should miss the train on the railroad, we desired the coachman, who also is changed at every station, to drive on immediately. He, however, on his side, having probably an understanding with the landlord, *ordered* us—that is really the right word—to take tea, and refused to go



Digitized by Google

on for half an hour. We were not obedient enough to do as we were bid, and take the tea; but the coachman disappeared, and all our calling was of no avail. When at length he came, the gentlemen requested him, in the most polite manner possible, to be good enough to make what haste he could; but though the road was excellent, and the horses quite fresh, we scarcely went beyond a walk. No entreaties nor prayers, not even bribes—for some tried that method—had any effect; yet, with the exception of an occasional muttered exclamation, that was not a blessing, from some of the gentlemen, there was no notice taken of his behavior. I, as a woman, could of course do nothing; but I could not help wishing for some half a dozen of my so-called phlegmatic countrymen; I think they would have managed matters better. Fortunately we got to Warren just three minutes before the departure of the train, and as no one had any heavy luggage, we were able to get into the carriage. A few minutes more would have cost us a whole day, for it was Saturday, and in the State of Illinois no trains run on Sundays.

The town of Chicago lies in a plain on Lake Michigan, and is chiefly remarkable for its rapid growth. In 1830 a single log-house was built on the spot; and as four years afterward there was reason to think it might be an advantageous place for a town, people began to settle there rapidly, and now there are 60,000 inhabitants.

The whole State of Illinois has made very rapid progress; and as the climate is good, the land excellent, and the prairie very easily transformed into fields, the concourse of immigrants is very considerable.

The Americans are the most enterprising people in the world; they are making railroads in all directions; every lake and river is in their territory covered with steamers; and the means of communication are in existence often before there is any population to profit by them. But it is precisely these means of communication that make settlement so easy and rapid; and land is cleared, farms established, and towns and villages built as if by magic.

On the 22d of August I went, by Lake Michigan, to Milwau-

Digitized by Google

kee (ninety-six miles), in the State of Wisconsin. This town also is of very recent origin, having been founded in 1838; but it now contains 35,000 inhabitants, of whom one third are Germans.

I found here for the first time a good German hotel, kept by a Mr. Weststein, where we had excellent entertainment and handsome clean rooms for the very reasonable charge of a dollar a day. In all the towns that I had visited hitherto, when I asked for a German hotel, I was shown to nothing better than a dirty public house, evidently intended for the poorest class of travelers.

I remained in Milwaukee for some days, and experienced from the Germans, and especially from their wives, the utmost kindness and attention. The engaging friendliness of their manners, and the trouble they took to please me, I shall certainly never forget. Every afternoon a party was made by Mr. Nopastek to visit some pretty spot in the neighborhood—Melm's Gardens, Pest's Pavilion, and so forth; the prospects were extremely pleasing, and though the country is wanting in hills and mountains, this disadvantage was compensated by the magnificent mirror of the lake, whose surface extended beyond the horizon.

Besides my German friends, I became acquainted here with a young American lady, whose husband, Mr. Booth, is the editor of a vehement Abolitionist paper, and lately took part in an insurrection that occurred on account of a fugitive slave. A negro who had made his escape from one of the Slave States was discovered and put in prison, and was about to be delivered up to his master, who had arrived a few days after him; but, on the day appointed for the slave to be given up, a party of Abolitionists assembled, with Mr. Booth at their head, stormed the prison, set the negro at liberty, and assisted him to escape to Canada.

Mr. Booth was arrested, but subsequently released on parole, and giving personal security for 2000 dollars until the termination of the proceedings against him. Should the decision be unfavorable to him, he will probably be imprisoned for six months, and have to pay a fine of 1000 dollars.* The laws are in general very conflicting, or, rather, very easy to evade in this coun-

* The free negroes in Milwaukee have presented Mr. Booth with a handsome testimonial for his exertions in defending their poor hunted brother.

Digitized by Google

try; and even for grave offenses, fraudulent bankruptcies, incendiary fires, and murder, the criminal may always flatter himself with the hope of escaping punishment. But favoring the escape of a fugitive slave is another thing; and although any where else than in slaveholding countries it would be regarded as scarcely an offense at all, perhaps even a meritorious act, it is precisely against this offense that American judges are inexorable. How revolting is the very thought of this fugitive slave law in a young republican state that might be a model for all the world.

In Illinois there has been a secret society formed for assisting slaves to escape from the neighboring States and get to Canada, and for this purpose there are several stations at which carriages and horses are kept in constant readiness to transport them as quickly as possible across the frontier. This is denominated the "Subterranean Railway;" and if the slave is only fortunate enough to reach the first of these stations, he may generally consider himself safe. Should the pursuit be so hot that it is not considered safe to send him on, he is kept concealed, and every means afforded him to effect his escape.

On the 26th of August I left Milwaukee by the steamer *Troy*, which traverses the whole extent of Lake Michigan as far as Sault St. Marie, a distance of 304 miles.

Lake Michigan is certainly a magnificent piece of water, almost like a sea, for it is 400 miles long and 80 broad; but its shores are extremely dull and monotonous, presenting nothing to the eye, in fact, but a boundless plain. They nowhere rise above thirty feet, and the towns, which alone vary the perpetual sameness, are very uninteresting, as they are all exactly alike.

Toward the end of the lake are some islands, called "Beaver Islands," one of which is inhabited by a branch of the Mormon sect, the great body of them, as is well known, occupying a country far in the interior near the Salt Lake. We stopped here, as we had done at many other places, and I went ashore in order to see some of these people, whose mode of life is described as so entirely different from that of any other Christian sect. I had heard that they not only ate their food and worked in community, but that they have both goods and wives in common; that the moth-

Digitized by Google

ers kept the children till they were three years old, and that they were then taken away from them, etc.

But when I questioned an aged and venerable-looking Mormon whom I met upon these points, he declared that the only part of my information that was correct was, that of their working in common at field and other labor. He informed me that they had among them a chief or priest, who was also a prophet, and could cure diseases by merely laying his hand on the patient; but to the cure of broken legs the divine power of the holy man did not extend. This priest alone was under no necessity of working; but he did work, my informant added, more than the most industrious of the community; for he was occupied, not only the whole day, but the greater part of the night also, with writing. When I asked what it was that he wrote—whether it was religious tracts or translations to send abroad for the propagation of his opinions—the reply was that no one knew what he wrote—"it was a holy mystery!"

Further, I learned from this man that, when their prophet died, another was immediately appointed by God, and his will made known by an angel; but in this instance, nevertheless, the prophet has himself played the part of the angel, having appointed his successor, who, as he tells the good people, was made known to him in a dream.

On the 28th of August we reached the end, or rather the beginning, of Lake Michigan, which is connected with Lake Superior by the River Sault St. Marie, a river of only a few miles in length. Immediately before its entrance into Lake Superior this river forms strong rapids or falls, and its bed becomes full of rocks and reefs, over which the water rushes with tremendous force, so that the navigation is interrupted for the space of a mile. When I arrived a canal with locks was in process of construction, which will take ships from one lake to the other. The expenses of this undertaking are estimated at 650,000 dollars. Lake Superior lies 792 feet above the level of the sea, and some 30 feet above Lake Michigan.

At Sault St. Marie I had to wait a day for the steamer which goes to Lake Superior, and I staid at a small but very neat

Digitized by Google

boarding-house, kept by a Mr. Johnson, who appears to be so thoroughly worthy a person, and his family not less so, that no traveler, I think, could fail to be contented and comfortable with them.

Late in the evening of the 29th of August the steamer *Baltimore* set out on its tour round the lake. The night was very foggy, and, through the thoughtlessness of the steersman in keeping too close to the shore, we ran aground on a sand-bank, opposite a place called White-Fish Points, and had to wait for daylight, and get out the whole cargo. Even then it was not till after twelve hours of very hard work that the vessel could be made to float again. We were scarcely 100 feet from the main land, and might as easily have run on that as on the sand-bank; but such careless doings as this, and much worse, are so common in the United States, that no one takes the least notice of them.

On this occasion I saw the village of White-Fish Points, which is inhabited by Indians exclusively engaged in fishing. A few Americans have taken up their abode among them, in order to barter for their fish, which is salted and dried. Lake Superior is, it seems, celebrated for the abundance of fine and well flavored fish that it contains; and, in consequence of food being thus plentiful, the whole shore was in former days thickly peopled by Indians. When the French Jesuits visited it in the 17th century they found wigwams with a population of 2000 persons. Now they are almost all gone; the native race has faded away and vanished before the white man and his brandy, and some of the last lingering remnants have been lately transported to the Indian Territory. Around all this vast inland sea it will soon be rare to find a native Indian.

Lake Superior is the largest body of fresh water in the known world, being 855 miles in length by 160 in breadth, and containing consequently 32,000 square miles of surface. Its greatest depth is 900 feet. It was discovered by the Jesuits in the year 1641, and thirty years afterward the surrounding lands were taken possession of by the French government.

The copper found near it was first mentioned in 1659, when the natives brought to the Jesuits a mass of pure metal weighing

Digitized by Google

from 600 to 700 pounds. It is, however, only within the last ten years, that is, in 1845, that regular mining operations have been commenced.

The mines all lie several miles from the lake, and the deepest shaft is less than 700 feet. The largest mass of copper ever found is said to have weighed fifty tons.

We had to enter so many bays, and stop at so many little recently-established villages, or towns, as the Americans call them, to carry them provisions and various necessaries, that we certainly went full 500 miles before reaching the end of the lake.

At La Pointe, in the neighborhood of which lie twelve islands called the Twelve Apostles, we accidentally fell in with a great number of Indians; for in the month of September the American government makes a yearly distribution of provisions, clothing, money, etc., to the chiefs and principal men of the tribes living in the neighborhood; and, as this distribution takes place at La Pointe, the Indians who expected presents had assembled there.

I saw here a considerable number of the Chippewa and Sioux Indians, and they were strong, handsome men, and much taller than those I had seen before in the southwestern countries. They had, however, broad cheek bones, lank hair, that fell partly over their faces, and a very ugly dirty-yellowish skin, that looked like leather. How they ever came by the name of "Red-skins," I can not imagine. There certainly were among them many who appeared of that color all over; but on any close inspection it became evident that they were painted, though the color was certainly very well rubbed in. But notwithstanding the little defects I have mentioned, many of these savages had handsome regular-featured faces; they wore their hair combed smooth, European dresses, and some had acquired a certain amount of education. Some spoke French or English, could even write those languages, and had also learned some handicraft, or devoted themselves to trade; but the majority preferred going half naked and living very wretchedly, to submitting to work; and the Indians inhabiting the cold countries are just as unwilling to labor, either in tilling the ground or in mechanical arts, as the tribes of the warm South.

Digitized by Google

It was not till the fifth day of our voyage that we arrived at *Fond du Lac*, the extreme western point of the lake. I had now traversed its whole extent, but I could not share the general enthusiasm of the company on the subject of the landscape. If we came in sight of a few wooden huts clustered together here and there, the exclamations went from mouth to mouth, "Ah! how beautiful! how splendid! What a picture might be made of it!"

The shores of Lake Superior are certainly far more picturesque than those of Lake Michigan; they still slumber for the most part in the profound repose of primeval nature, and the dark forest and the chains of hills gave them a kind of beauty; but there was too much monotony in the scenery, and the hills were too insignificant in height, to inspire me with much admiration. The St. Ignacio, on the Neepigan Bay, is said to be 1300 feet high, but we had not the good fortune to get a sight of this Colossus.

The newly-settled villages are all very insignificant, consisting at present only of small log-houses in the midst of the woods: very little land is yet cleared, and the poor settlers depend on the steamers for almost all the necessaries of life.

Among the travelers here I met again with some ladies and gentlemen who were uneasy in their minds on the subject of the religion I professed, of how I came by the money for my traveling expenses, and so forth; and I must own I was tempted to give them sharp answers, in order to have done with their very impertinent queries. On the second day of our voyage, there came on board a lady about thirty, who was certainly rather too youthfully dressed for her age, as she had long ringlets falling on her shoulders, and a round straw hat; but scarcely had the other ladies cast a glance on her than one of them came to me and warned me by no means to speak to the stranger, as it was thought she did not look like a person of good character. I said I thought there could be scarcely sufficient ground in her looks only for so grave an accusation; but no one except myself exchanged a word with her.

In the evening, as usual, preparations were made for dancing quadrilles; and when the music began for the third, a gentleman led out the excommunicated lady, but no other pair stood up.

Digitized by Google

The gentleman inquired what was meant by this seemingly intentional insult, asserting, at the same time, that he knew the lady—that she had been on a visit to some relatives, and was now returning to her husband at Fond du Lac—and that her character was perfectly unblemished. Nobody gave him one syllable of answer, and after waiting some time he and his partner were obliged to sit down.

I hoped that at least these extremely virtuous ladies would have the delicacy not to dance any more after this, by way of making some slight amends for their offensive behavior; but my hopes were vain. Scarcely had the object of their scorn and her champion retired, than they all stood up at once, and the dancing began again with as much spirit as ever.

The next morning I was attacked again with the old question of what religion I belonged to. Whereupon I felt so wrathful as to reply, "Certainly not to the same as you and the rest of the ladies here; for my religion would have forbidden me to insult an unoffending fellow-creature." I suppose this explanation was satisfactory, for they did not ask me any more questions.

At Fond du Lac there are already five *beginnings* of towns, situated in a semicircle on the shores of the lake, and so near that, when finished, they must almost touch each other; but I doubt whether this will ever be the case, as, except the copper mining, there is not much to be done in this part of the country, for the soil is bad. They will probably undergo the fate of the town of Trinidad, in California, and perish as untimely abortions—die, one might say, before they were born.

On the 6th of August I returned to Sault St. Marie, after having been ten days in the steamer with the same party. The ladies had all by this time grown astonishingly fond of one another, and one who lived in St. Marie even invited me to come and take a cup of tea with her. But the moment the anchor fell the new friends seemed to cool toward each other considerably, and hurried away in different directions, scarcely taking time to say good-by.

The lady who had invited me also forgot, perhaps intentionally, to indicate the address of the house where the cup of tea was

Digitized by Google

to be obtained; but this did not afflict me greatly, and I betook myself very contentedly to the comfortable boarding-house of Mr. Johnson.

On the 7th of August, at an early hour, I went on board the steamer *Illinois*, in order to continue my journey northward. The first part of it lay along the River St. Marie, which forms in its course many little lakes, and bathes some very pretty shores. This river leads to the Strait of Mackinac, and this again to the next largest American lake, namely, Lake Huron, which is 260 miles long and 160 broad, and contains 20,000 square miles. It lies 578 feet above the level of the sea. The environs of this lake are prettier than those of the Michigan, though still rather monotonous. They are undulating and covered with wood, and here and there intersected by pleasant ranges of hills.

The next day we left Lake Huron, and entered the River St. Clair, on one bank of which town follows town in rapid succession, interspersed with meadows and fruitful fields, while in the other lie numerous saw-mills, and several Indian villages. Even the Indians seem here to be roused from their customary indolence, for the land round their villages is cleared and planted. The river had a very animated appearance, for there were many sailing vessels, mostly laden with timber, being towed by steamers through the short river into the small Lake of St. Clair, which is so full of sand-banks and shoals that it can only be navigated in the daytime. The shores of this lake are so flat in many places that the water is continually flooding them, and forming sloughs and morasses. From Lake St. Clair the River Detroit leads into Lake Erie—the whole distance from Lake Huron being not more than eighty miles. Toward noon we landed at Cleveland, the pride of the State of Ohio, situated at the entrance of Lake Erie; and in the few hours of my stay Dr. Langsdorf made me acquainted with the town and its environs.

Cleveland consists, in fact, of two towns, Cleveland itself and Ohio, which is only separated from it by a ravine, and, having been lately included in the former, has thereby lost its distinctive name.

The view of these two prosperous towns, with the beautiful

Digitized by Google

ravine, about fifty feet deep, between them, richly covered with shrubs and trees, and with a pretty river winding through it, was really very pleasing.

The actual entrance into Lake Erie is by a canal. In the town of Cleveland I most admired Euclid Street, as it is called, consisting of pretty, tasteful houses, which might be called villas, as they are now separated from one another by groves and meadows; but in a few years these will, probably, have given place to new houses.

The steamer *Crescent City* was one of the most superb vessels I was ever on board of. Whichever way I looked there was nothing to be seen but velvet and gold, and costly carpets, and enormous looking-glasses; and a lofty cupola of beautiful colored glass shed a rich light over all these grandeurs.

There were 1200 passengers on board; and, in consequence of this great number, people lived rather as in a town than a ship, and went about no more troubling themselves about one another than if they had been on a public walk. But these steamers are, nevertheless, not altogether convenient in their arrangements, as the Americans do not care so much about that as they do for magnificence, luxury, and show. The windows, for instance, round the galleries, were of colored glass, so richly ornamented with arabesques that they were of no use to look out of, as you could see neither lake nor landscape through them, and even the light they admitted was so dimmed that you could hardly see to do any thing. In the cabins of the lower story, intended for first-class passengers, there were five or six berths, and for fifty or sixty ladies there was only one small washing-room, and that fitted up with but two wash-hand stands. One had to stand waiting and watching for an opportunity just to wash one's face and hands; and it was necessary to bring both glass and towel, for glass there was none, and the few towels were wet through. The attendant appeared to be only there for the look of the thing, for she sat dressed like a lady on a sofa, doing crochet work, and took no notice of any body. Fortunately the voyage on Lake Erie did not last long, for on the morning of the 9th we came to Buffalo, a pleasant town of 60,000 inhabitants. But my impatience to see the renowned Falls of Niagara, now only twenty miles off, was so

Digitized by Google

great, that, bad as the weather was, I went on directly to the place called Niagara Falls Village, and arrived quite safely at a pretty little boarding-house, situated close to the rapids of the mighty stream, which here divides into two arms, and then rushes on with stormy swiftness to its fall. I had been, however, so shaken lately by repeated attacks of the fever,* that when I got there I was compelled to give up all thoughts of going to the fall that night, and betake myself at once to bed.

---

## CHAPTER XXI.

The Falls of Niagara.—Lake Ontario.—The Thousand Islands.—Montreal.—Quebec.—The American Railroads.—New York.—Things Noticeable.—The Hotels.—Black Minstrels.—Emancipation.—Proceedings in Courts of Justice.

*August 10th.* This was a day never to be forgotten in the annals of my life—one of those which brilliantly rewarded me for all the toils and hardships by which they were purchased; for on this day I beheld one of the most sublime and wonderful scenes of God's beautiful world—the Falls of Niagara! What the eye sees, what the soul feels, at this spectacle, can never be described: painter and poet would despair of success in such an attempt. Did a man meet his mortal enemy on this spot, he must at once forgive him; and should one who has doubted of the existence of God come to this, one of the noblest of his altars, he must, I think, return converted and tranquilized. Oh! that I could have shared with all my friends, with all mankind, the emotions awakened by this wonder of creation.

* I had hitherto been keeping it off, by constantly taking quinine, but only for short periods. In Buffalo the following remedy was recommended to me: A tea-spoonful of finely pulverized cayenne pepper and five or six tea-spoonfuls of white sugar dissolved in half a tumbler of good brandy; and of this mixture two tea-spoonfuls to be taken every hour, beginning when there is reason to expect the return of the fever, and going on till the whole has been taken. The first time I took this medicine the fever kept off for two months; and when afterward I had another attack, and took the same remedy again, the fever never returned.

Digitized by Google

I was first led by the obliging Mrs. Teuscher, my hostess, to the American Fall, and thought certainly that nothing could be more magnificent than that. The enormous mass of water falls over a vast, broad, perpendicular wall of rock, and sends up such clouds as if the whole river were dashing itself into spray; and yet scarcely 100 yards from the fall it flows on so smoothly and quietly that the smallest boat may glide over it in perfect safety.

Still more immense, however, is the volume of water on the Canadian side, and still more considerable the extent of the fall, which, as it has assumed the form of a horseshoe, goes by this name; and, on the whole, this must be pronounced the finest of the two.

During sunshine, beautiful rainbows are formed over both falls in the clouds of spray. The sound of the fall I did not find so deafening, nor distinguishable so far off as I had been told. According to descriptions I had read, the thunder of it could be heard for forty miles, but I really did not hear it myself for more than a mile.

The Horseshoe Fall is 2100 feet broad and 149 high, the American 1140 feet broad and 164 high; the volume of water falling is estimated at 670,250 tons in a minute. On the Canadian side you can pass for a certain distance under the fall, and for this purpose guides and clothes are kept in readiness. The view from beneath is something more than grand—it is dreadful in its beauty. The tremendous roar of the body of water rushing over your head, and lashed into milk-white foam all round you—the slipperiness of the constantly wet stone ledge you stand on above the abyss into which the water falls—the overhanging masses of rock which from time to time detach themselves—all this is really so overpowering, if not dangerous, that I would not advise every one to try it.

It was not till I had gazed a long time at the falls that I could give any attention to the environs. The river divides, as I have said, into two arms, of which one forms the American, and the other the Canadian side of the falls. The two are, nevertheless, quite near, and only separated by a small island, about a mile in length and half a mile broad, the character of which is quite in

Digitized by Google

keeping with the sublime scene where it is placed. It is covered by majestic trees, nearly the largest I ever saw in America (California excepted), for there were many among them whose trunks had a diameter of four feet. Hitherto this sanctuary of Nature has been respected by man—no hand has presumed to make a path through it, and Heaven grant it may remain so; but it is scarcely to be hoped that all future proprietors will resemble the present one, who is so remarkable an exception to the majority as to prefer the beauty of nature to the sound of dollars. Very large sums have been offered him for this spot; there were plans for building hotels, baths, places of amusement, upon it; but precisely for that reason he would not sell it. He determined that the sacred silence of the grove should be undisturbed and undesecrated by the restless movements of a busy crowd, and remain what it has hitherto been, the vestibule to the holy temple of this wondrous work of God.

In the rapids of the Horseshoe Fall there stands, not more than forty feet from it, a small stone tower, which is reached by a little bridge; and many an hour have I lingered there, gazing, fascinated by the sight of the rushing waters. During the five days I spent at Niagara I could scarcely tear myself away from them, and the longer I looked the more difficult it became; but so it is often with what is really sublime and beautiful; you need time to understand and to feel it.

Few years pass without a sacrifice of human life being offered to Niagara. A few months before I was there, for instance, three young men were rowing about for pleasure a little way above the rapids, and somehow their boat got entangled in the current and swept toward them, and then no human help availed to save it. One of the party, during the dreadful passage, succeeded in catching by the bough of a tree on the island and clinging to it. He cried for help; but his cry was scarcely heard at all through the roar of the torrent, and the night was too dark for objects to be distinguished. In the morning he was perceived; and since he could not possibly hear any call, the people on shore wrote on a board with very large letters that they were making preparations to save him. After many fruitless attempts, they at length suc-

Digitized by Google

ceeded, toward five o'clock in the afternoon, in getting a boat to him with a rope fastened to it. The poor creature contrived to get in, and he was just being dragged ashore, when unfortunately a wave dashed against the rope with such violence that it snapped, and the boat with the victim was hurried on with frightful velocity and dashed down the fall. No trace of a body and no fragment of a boat is in such cases ever seen again, for every thing is ground to atoms by the resistless force of the water.

Two miles from Niagara Falls village, a suspension bridge has been built across the ravine through which the Niagara hastens to Lake Ontario. The ravine is very narrow, and the river is said to be in this part 900 feet deep. The bridge is a masterpiece, and the wire ropes are of sufficient strength to bear the heaviest loaded wagon. It is well worth a visit, and indeed not only for the sake of the bridge, but for the beautiful prospects to be seen. From the bridge itself you look up the picturesque rocky ravine almost to the Falls, and on the other side to Lake Ontario, and across a part of the lake to lovely, smiling landscapes beyond.

The Indian village of Tuscarora, seven miles from the Falls, is now scarcely worth going to see, as the inhabitants, who have become Christians, go dressed like the whites, and build and cultivate their fields just like their neighbors.

I left Niagara Falls village on the 13th of August, in a stage-coach for Lewistown, which lies at the termination of the ravine, where the river increases so suddenly in breadth that you fancy you have reached the lake. At this place I went on board the steamer *Bay State* to go to Montreal. Seven miles below Lewistown the river Niagara terminates its short but stormy existence, and finds repose in the bosom of Lake Ontario. At its mouth there lies on the American side a handsome fortress, called Fort George, and on the Canadian another, somewhat inferior, called Fort Niagara.

At sunrise on the following morning the ship's bell rang to awaken the passengers, that they might not miss the sight of the "Thousand Islands" and the entrance into the River St. Lawrence; and at Ogdensburg we exchanged our steamer for a small-

Digitized by Google

er one, the *British Queen*, in order to get better over the rapids. The passage through the "Thousand Islands" is certainly pleasing, for the view is changed every moment, and one picture succeeds another; but the whole is not to be compared with the "Thousand Islands" of Lake Malar, in Sweden. There the setting of the lake is formed by magnificent mountains of the most varied forms, covered with dark green woods, between which you catch glimpses of the most picturesque colossal rocks, piled one on another, and of bright pastures and meadows between. The islands themselves, too, are uncommonly beautiful and varied in their character. Here all is flat, and islands and main land scarcely rise above the surface of the water.

The St. Lawrence forms several rapids, but they are not so strong as to hinder the passage of the steamers. Skill and boldness are indeed required to navigate them, but these obtain the victory; and our captain carried us fearlessly through them. The one called the Rapid of Lachine, where we arrived late in the evening, is rather dangerous; and as by the time we got there it was raining hard and the night was pitch dark, it was thought better not to cross it till the following morning, when we took in an Indian as pilot. This rapid has a less threatening appearance than some of the preceding ones, and its chief peril consists in the shallowness of the river at this part. Four men stood at the helm all the time we were passing it, and this is usually done. We arrived in good time at Lachine, which is only nine miles from Montreal; and fortunately by this time the weather had cleared up, and the sun lit up the beautiful hill of Montreal, at the foot of which lies the town.

It has a fine and singular effect, with its Gothic churches, and tin roofs, which glitter in the sunshine as dazzlingly as if they were covered with plates of silver. We entered a beautiful dock, and were brought by a sluice close up to the quay. But scarcely had I landed before I met with an unpleasant occurrence. I drove to the first hotel, Montreal House, and requested to have a room; but the personage to whom I addressed myself looked at me from head to foot, and then at length replied that he had none. The cause of this uncivil reception was, I knew perfect-

Digitized by Google

ly well, the circumstance of my coming alone and with merely a small carpet-bag, instead of having half a dozen trunks and band-boxes dragged after me. I went to another hotel, the Temperance House, and there received the same answer; so I thought it better to put an end to this. I took out, therefore, a gold piece of ten dollars, laid it on the table, and informed the polite host that I had not the least objection to pay beforehand for whatever I required. This talisman produced the desired effect; he pushed back the money, and desired that I should be shown to a room. But how doubly painful was this treatment to me, when coming from the United States, where the poorest woman is always sure of being treated with kind and respectful attention.

When I went into the streets of Montreal and asked my way, I either got no answer at all, or the person I addressed endeavored to get rid of me as quickly as possible with "I don't know." Certainly it did not appear to me that courtesy to strangers could be numbered among the Canadian virtues.

I had brought no letters of introduction, and knew no one in the place; so, as I desired to obtain some information, I thought the best way was to go to the principal newspaper office. In the United States I never found an editor of a newspaper who was not acquainted with my name, not even in the smallest town; and when I presented myself I never failed to meet with the most friendly reception. Here, however, I had a different experience; the editor of the principal paper knew nothing about me, and made me aware of the fact with the same courtesy as had distinguished the communications of his fellow-citizens. I found at last, however, some more kindly-disposed mortals, but thought it as well, by way of precaution, to assure them that I was not about to make any appeal to their liberality, and that the favors I was going to ask were of no pecuniary nature. The editor of one of the papers, however, the Belgian Consul, Mr. Josef, and Dr. Fisher, made me amends for the incivility of their countrymen.

Dr. Fisher, indeed, with whom I had been previously acquainted, invited me to stay at his house, kindly insisting on my coming



Digitized by Google

immediately; and to him also I was indebted for being presented with a ticket for a journey to Quebec and back.

The city of Montreal has 75,000 inhabitants, and is not, like the towns in the United States, divided into regular blocks, but shows in its style of building marks of being descended from an earlier time. The houses, with their steep, lofty gables, have an old French aspect, and they are built of free-stone in as solid a manner as if they were meant to last for eternity; but at the same time they are by no means wanting in taste and elegance. Near many palace-like stone edifices there stand, indeed, often little wooden houses in a very tumble-down condition; but the streets are neat and clean, and the business going on in them not distressingly hurried, but the people seem to take their time about it in a way they scarcely ever do in England or the United States. Every thing has an easy, tranquil air, and the by-streets, indeed, look somewhat desolate.

The churches are in the Gothic style, and the finest is the Catholic Cathedral, built on the model of Nôtre Dame at Paris. Of the other buildings, the most striking are the Jesuits' college, the banks, some of the hotels, the post-office, the market halls, etc.

The museum is not worth the trouble of a visit. An elk of unusual size and a few small whales caught in the St. Lawrence were shown to me as the most remarkable things in it.

The English hospital, as it is called, though an excellent institution, still leaves much to be desired; for instance, the place for the half-convalescent to take exercise in is merely a bare grass-plot, without tree or bench; and the air in the rooms was far from pure; though of course this is not quite so easy to remedy in a cold country, where windows must often be closed, as it would be under the tropics.

In the new convent of the Grey Nuns there are two very excellent institutions—one for poor aged men and women, who are taken care of till their death, and the other for children, either orphans or those who have been entirely neglected by their parents. I came there at ten o'clock in the morning, and, curiously enough, it was the *dinner* hour. The food, which was distributed by one of the nuns, looked very inviting, and consisted of

Digitized by Google

soup, meat, and one more dish, as well as excellent bread. The apartments were large and lofty, and the beds provided with curtains; the only thing that could be objected to was that the rooms were somewhat overfull.

A most beautiful prospect of the city and its environs is afforded from the tower of the Cathedral and from the summit of the Montreal Hill. I visited both these spots, and could hardly tear myself away, so attractive was the picture there unfolded before me. The venerable antique town, nestling so cozily round the foot of the hill—the harbor, with its ships and steamers, and all the busy life of the St. Lawrence, which, not far from Montreal, spreads out into a lake with many islands—the richly cultivated country around, and in the distance solitary mountains of at least 1000 feet high—all these things make one of the most charming views in all North America.

Mr. Josef was so obliging as to give me a drive in his carriage round the Montreal Hill, a circuit of nine miles, through a very favorite and frequented district, scattered over with pretty country houses standing in fine gardens.

Canada, as well as the United States, offers many advantages to European emigrants: the soil is rich; the climate, though cold, very healthy; the price of land even lower than in the United States; the taxes very trifling; and there is very little interference with any one's freedom. But there is unfortunately one drawback in a law which does much to deter all persons who are not English subjects from settling here. When, namely, an emigrant dies before he has attained the rights of citizenship, for which a residence, I believe, of ten years is requisite, he can not dispose of his "real" property—house, land, and so forth—but it all falls to the crown.

*August 18th.* In the evening I set off by the great steamer *Quebec* for the city of the same name; and this boat also, like the *Crescent City* on Lake Erie, was one of the splendid order, which are altogether too magnificent to be comfortable or convenient.

We got to Quebec at nine o'clock the next morning. The situation of this town is even finer than that of Montreal. It is partly built in the same style, indeed, or in a still older one, and

Digitized by Google

the streets are more narrow and crooked: it consists of an upper and lower town, to the former of which you ascend by long flights of steps, though there is also a winding path leading up to it; and even the lower town is somewhat hilly. The population amounts to 45,000 persons, of whom two thirds are French, descendants of the families who lived there when Canada belonged to France.*

I had taken a letter of introduction to Quebec, being rather uneasy lest the same thing should happen to me as at Montreal, and I should not be received at a hotel; and so indeed it proved, but for a different reason, namely, that as the session of Parliament had just commenced, they were all overfull already. The gentleman to whom my letter was addressed sent his nephew with me to a dozen boarding-houses, but they were all crammed with guests, for the town was full of strangers. He himself, I suppose, had no room for me, though he had a very handsome house; so I had no choice but to see as much as I could of the place in a day, and make up my mind to return to Montreal by the steamer in the evening.

The first thing I did was to ascend the promontory of Cape Diamond, which is 345 feet high and has Fort Diamond on its summit; and I learned on this occasion that the Quebec people are fully equal to the Montrealians in politeness to strangers. As I had so very little time to dispose of, I was anxious not to lose any of it in dining, so I merely went into a shop and bought some cakes. Opposite to the shop were the blackened ruins of some very large building, evidently burned, and I asked the girl in the shop what place it was; but she answered, "I haven't got any time to tell you about it;" though it was certainly not time that was wanting, as there was no customer in the shop but myself. I afterward learned that they were the ruins of the governor's palace. When I was about to ascend the hill to Fort Diamond, and perceived that there was no path, as the ground was all covered with grass, I asked a man whom I met whether

* The French founded the first colony in Canada in 1607, and it remained in possession of the country till 1759, when it was taken by the English.

Digitized by Google

it was allowable to go up, to which he responded "Try," and went on his way. I soon forgot these small annoyances, however, when I reached the summit of the hill and beheld the landscape that lay beneath me. The venerable city lay at my feet, winding in terraces up the sides of the hill; and the eye could wander for twenty-five miles up a lovely, smiling valley as far as the spurs of the Green Mountains, whose rounded heads and long spines partly inclose it; and then expatiate on the St. Lawrence, which here forms a spacious bay, and then winds on its way through green pastures and wooded hills.

Descending from the promontory, I next visited the governor's garden, which is very pretty and freely opened to the public; it is also provided with seats; and a very lovely spot it is to stroll and repose in, for you have all the fine landscape open before you. Among the buildings I chiefly noticed the Catholic church and the House of Parliament, which last has a very fine hall of assembly. At five in the evening I had to return to the steamer, and though I had been running about all day, and was of course excessively tired, I could not prevail on myself to leave the deck till late at night, so beautiful was the scenery on the banks of the St. Lawrence. In natural beauty and variety I think the banks of this river fully equal to those of the Rhine; but the romantic charm is wanting to them—no tradition lingers about them, and no ruined castles rise on the heights. There is one thing, however, most remarkable and peculiar, namely, the gorgeous tints assumed in the autumn by the leaves, which are of all shades and gradations of red, yellow, green, and brown, with others glittering like silver between them. I saw garlands made of nothing but these leaves, and they had a splendid effect.

On the 20th of August I got back to Montreal, and in the afternoon of the same day set off for New York. Hitherto, for all my steamboat journeys in North America—from New Orleans to St. Louis, from Milwaukee over all the lakes to Montreal, from Montreal to Quebec and back—I had had my passages free. In the United States, directly my name was mentioned every captain was most obligingly ready to receive me, without even thinking it necessary to ask the leave of any agent or director. In Mont-

Digitized by Google

real, as I have said, I had been favored in the same way through Dr. Fisher; and he endeavored to procure for me a ticket to the English steamer *Canada*, which navigates the small Lake Champlain; but this time it was without success.

I crossed the St. Lawrence from Montreal in a small steamboat, then went by the railroad to Rouse's Point (sixty miles), then by the fine steamer *Canada* across Lake Champlain, then a short distance down the River Hudson to Whitehall, and from Whitehall by rail to New York—on the whole, about 300 miles, which did not take more than twenty-four hours.

The banks of the Hudson appeared to me a good deal like those of the St. Lawrence, and the railroad from Whitehall to New York runs the whole way along the side of the river; but we went along at such a rate that I could only just catch a few glimpses of the flying landscape. The rate of the mail-trains in America is sixty miles an hour, of others from twenty-five to thirty. The carriages are extremely comfortable, and the prices wonderfully low; but these lines, like that from Callao to Lima, run straight through towns and villages, without having even a railing to separate them from the ordinary roads and foot-paths, so that it is no matter of surprise if there are many accidents. But the ideas of danger or of respect for human life appear to be quite foreign to the American mind.*

The entrance into the metropolis of America, New York, is, at least on this side, so little remarkable, that when I was still expecting the entrance, I found I had been long within the limits of the city. You drive a long way through places where there is nothing to be seen but piles of timber and rows of wooden

* Mr. Chapin, one of the most celebrated American preachers, says himself, in one of his sermons, in speaking of a great accident on a railroad, "And against this recklessness, I repeat, provision should be made by every measure which will enforce respect for human life—a sentiment which, I am grieved to say, needs to be more deeply and widely felt in our age and in our country. Life is precious, oh iron-hearted corporations! Against dollars you must balance life; and if a little gain is deemed of more consequence than a bolt more firmly driven or an additional officer at a dangerous point, say not that the community acts merely under excitement if it cuts the nerves by which corporations *do* feel."

Digitized by Google

huts, with here and there a brick house, looking as if it had lost its way among them, and through dirty streets full of all kinds of rubbish and filth.

At the terminus you exchange the steam-engine for horses; but the rails run through a great part of the city, upon which not only travelers are carried from one terminus to another, but also wagons, which, as I afterward learned, supply the place of omnibuses, and run in various directions. This very convenient arrangement is perfectly safe, since the wagons go slowly, can be stopped at any moment, and the line is not at all in the way in the broad street, since other carriages drive across it without the least difficulty.

The entrance into a great city, where you know neither the locality nor any of the inhabitants, has something in it—at least for a woman, rather formidable. I was, however, so fortunate as, at the very moment of my arrival, to meet with a friendly reception from Mr. Wutschel, and on the following day from Dr. Krakowitzer, who pressed me in the kindest manner to come to his house. But as this was situated at Williamsburg, a good way from the actual city of New York, and I received invitations from M. Aigner as well as from the Austrian Consul, who both lived in the centre of the city, I divided my time between these amiable families, who did so much to render my residence agreeable to me that it seemed as if I were living with old and long cherished friends.

The city of New York, with a population of nearly 600,000 souls, lies, as is known, upon an island, bounded on the east and west by the Hudson, on the north by the River Harlem, and on the south by the bay. The situation is a very fine one, and of all the cities I have seen in the United States it is the most populous and busy; indeed the activity and bustle of life in Broadway and Wall Street actually exceed that in the city of London. The throng of men, carriages, omnibuses, carts, wagons, and vehicles of every description, makes it often difficult to get through the streets; and, strangely enough, it is just during the most hurried business hours that the ladies choose to show themselves, in full promenade dresses, on the pavement of Broadway, where, as they

Digitized by Google

are constantly stopping to look at the goods in the shop windows, they add very seriously to the obstructions.

Many of the streets are very broad and shaded by large trees, which add much to their beauty; and the foot-paths are commonly, as in London, raised a few inches above the carriage-road. Even in the principal streets, however, there is much dirt, which in the hot summers of this country must act prejudicially upon the public health. It is customary, for instance, to put out the dust and refuse from every house in boxes and tubs before the doors; and as the carts that come to take it away often do not pass till near noon, you are continually annoyed by their presence. Little puddles, too, which collect between the pavement and the carriage-road, by no means send forth aromatic odors.

There are many imposing-looking buildings in New York, but their beauty consists chiefly in their size, or at most in a portico with pillars. The most remarkable, as usual, are the banks, the Exchange, and the principal hotels—the Metropolitan, the St. Nicholas, Irving House, etc. Among the churches, the Trinity, with its lofty tower, has a grand appearance; but the nave is rather disappointing, as it is neither long nor lofty. Among the houses, there are some built of marble and some of iron, but also many of wood.

Most families live here, as people do in England, in high narrow houses, which they keep all to themselves; but they are beginning to find out that it is rather inconvenient to be constantly running up and down stairs, as they must do when the dining-rooms are below stairs near the kitchen, the reception-rooms on the ground floor, and the sleeping-rooms on the floor above. The new houses are indeed furnished with all contrivances for alleviating this inconvenience. Water, both cold and hot, is led to the upper stories, and there is a contrivance to bring dishes also up to the first floor; and from every story you can, by means of a pipe in the wall, with a small opening in each room, speak in the easiest manner to the servants below: you just put your mouth to the opening and say what you wish, and receive the answer in the same manner. The houses, too, are lit all over with gas.

Of museums, picture galleries, etc., there is not much to be seen

Digitized by Google

in New York. There is a private museum belonging to a Mr. Barnum, not worth much, but perhaps deserving of a visit, where you find a collection of stuffed birds and beasts, Chinese dresses, a dwarf, some remarkable animals, a mummy in good preservation—in short, a little of every thing. In this museum I saw placards stuck up warning visitors against pickpockets, and I afterward noticed the same thing in many of the principal shops. I do not recollect to have seen this any where else.

The shops of New York are numerous, and many in the grandest style. I remember especially Stewart's, where every imaginable article of clothing, either for necessity or luxury, can be procured for both ladies and gentlemen, with the exception only of shoes and jewelry. A great part of the goods in this magazine are displayed in suites of elegant rooms, the appearance of which is that of an industrial exhibition. More than 250 persons are employed in this shop.

Not less magnificent in its way is the *locale* of the confectioner Mr. Taylor, where pastry, ice, and so forth, and beverages of every possible variety, are to be obtained, as well as dinners and suppers; and at night, when it is brilliantly illuminated with gas, the place has really a superb appearance.

The printing-office of the "Tribune," the most widely circulated paper in the United States, occupies a whole house of four stories, and employs 293 persons. This paper sells 35,000 of the daily, and 150,000 of the weekly edition. It is printed with the cylinder press of Mr. Hoe, which prints four pages at the same time in less than four seconds. Mr. Hoe has also made a machine of this kind to be sent to Paris; but in England, I believe, these presses have been long in use, so that Mr. Hoe has probably only improved upon the invention. It is very common here, as indeed it is in Europe also, to hear a thing boasted of as an original invention which is in fact only an improvement on an old one.

In my visit to this printing-office I had the pleasure of becoming acquainted with Mr. Bayard Taylor, one of the gentlemen engaged on the "Tribune," who has also gained much distinction, both by his poetical talents and by his descriptions of India, Abyssinia, and other countries of the East, where he has traveled.



Digitized by Google

It is not often that a poet has the merit of being at the same time a faithful describer of matters of fact: he is apt to carry too much imagination with him on his journeys; but Mr. Taylor seems to have been aware of the danger, and has carefully avoided all exaggerations, and at the same time cast a poetical charm over all that he has touched on.

The "Novelty Iron Works" of Stillman, Allen, and Company I also visited. They are the largest in America, and not only all kinds of steam-engines are made in them, but the largest steamboats built and completely fitted up. A thousand men find employment in these works, and the lowest of the workmen receive a dollar a day, and the higher four times as much. Four hundred thousand tons of iron are worked up here every year.

Mr. Stillman was so good as to show me round these gigantic works; and I saw there a steamer lying half finished, to be called the *Metropolis*, whose burden is 3200 tons, and which will contain 1000 berths.

As for the great hotels, they are very much like those of New Orleans, the most splendid I had myself ever seen; but here, as in the steamers, the splendor often had to serve instead of real comfort and convenience. It was frequently impossible, for instance, to find so much as a corner where one could sit quietly and write a letter.

In the reception-rooms the great heavy damask curtains fall over half the windows and keep out the light, and the tables are all covered with marble slabs—cold enough, when the weather is cold, almost to turn to marble the arm resting on them. In the bedrooms you again find nothing but marble. Writing-tables there are none; and I have often seen people writing on their knees in the most uncomfortable attitudes, because they could find no suitable place. This is, indeed, paying a price for luxury and show. At the little boarding-house of Madame Teuscher, near the Niagara rapids, I found every thing I could wish for; and though there was no deficiency of elegant furniture, utility and comfort had not been forgotten.

The largest of these hotels is, I believe, the New York, which is said to contain 1000 rooms. The St. Nicholas and the Irving

Digitized by Google

House have each 400, and employ 300 servants. The whole house is heated by a steam apparatus to an agreeable and equable temperature; so that the fire-places are really superfluous, and are only retained because the Americans, like the English, are fond of a cheerful blaze on the hearth.

New York possesses several handsome theatres, in which English, French, and German dramatic performances take place, and also an Italian opera. One of the most favorite places of recreation, nevertheless, is that of the "Black Minstrels," as they are called, though they are really whites painted black, to represent negroes trying to adopt the manners of whites. On the evening when I was there ten actors appeared in black evening dress, with white waistcoats and neckcloths, seated themselves in a semicircle, and sang comic songs to the accompaniment of a tambourine or guitar. This entertainment continued for a whole hour, and then followed a kind of comedy, the wit and sense of which was to me profoundly mysterious; and after that there was some dancing. The audience, a very fashionable one, to judge by the elegance of the dresses and the number of carriages at the door, appeared perfectly well satisfied with their entertainment, and laughed prodigiously. That the fair sex here can be excited by a small matter to an astonishing degree of merriment I had noticed on board the steamer; but I was not before aware that the men were equal to them in this desirable gift.

The Castle Garden Theatre, where ballets are usually performed, pleased me particularly on account of its situation. It stands on the southeast corner of the city, on the site of an ancient battery that projects into the bay, and is connected with the place by a small bridge; and a gallery runs all around it on the outside, from which on moonlight nights you obtain a magnificent view of the surrounding neighborhood.

The number of public and private educational institutions is, as I have already mentioned, very great in the United States, and New York alone boasts a crowd of such establishments. I visited, among others, the Free College, held in a building in the Gothic style, with large lofty halls and corridors, and which is attended by the most distinguished professors. Five hundred

Digitized by Google

youths are here gratuitously instructed during six hours a day in all departments of knowledge, and even supplied with books, paper, etc., free of cost; but, before a lad can be received, he must undergo a rigid examination, and if he does not pass through it creditably, no interest or patronage is of any avail to obtain his admittance. To avoid the chance of favoritism, the professors are not allowed to know the names of the candidates under examination, nor the candidates to hear the decision till they are summoned before the council. Possibly these regulations may tend to check abuses; but human nature is every where pretty much the same, and it seems to me that, instead of receiving the rich and poor indiscriminately into this college, it would be better to reserve these five hundred places for the middle classes who can not well afford to pay for them.

In the private schools for girls—seminaries, as they call them—all manner of arts and sciences, including the Latin and Greek languages, are taught, or said to be taught. When I asked what was the use of teasing the girls with these dead languages, the reply was, that they might more easily learn the languages derived from them—Italian, French, etc.; and one might therefore suppose the ladies of America would be especial proficients in the latter; but this was very far from being the case, for I think I have in no country found fewer who were familiar with foreign languages.

This one-sided education, in which all that is most peculiarly feminine is entirely neglected, is, I think, one great cause of that uneasy longing for what they call emancipation that characterizes American women. They might begin, one would suppose, by emancipating themselves in their own houses. Domestic occupations must, after all, be attended to by somebody; and surely it had better be by the women than the men. It is not necessary that they should perform the offices of servants; but, if they do not understand how work of the domestic kind ought to be done, the servants of the house will ere long become the masters. The girls in my own country also study foreign languages, music, history, and so forth; but they find time too to make themselves acquainted with womanly duties.

Digitized by Google

I remember once going to visit a lady in New York, and, finding her from home, was informed by the servant that they were going to move, and that the mistress had gone into the country till it was over and the new house put in order.

And who in the world, I thought, is to superintend the moving? Doubtless the husband, though he had his business to attend to. I should not be surprised to hear that the ladies here required their lords and masters to teach their nursery-maids how to wash and dress the children.

It is, I imagine, because the American women are fond of emancipating themselves from the trouble of housekeeping, and the men have really sometimes too much to do, or are not inclined to perform the duties of their wives as well as their own, that married people get into the abominable custom of living in boarding-houses—a custom that draws all kinds of evil consequences after it. A young and handsome woman is thus brought into the society of people whose character is far from the best, and this must be so much the more dangerous as she has no household duties to occupy her mind, and her children are sent when only four years old to school. It is by no means uncommon even for unmarried girls who find the life in their parents' houses too quiet, or otherwise not to their taste, to leave them and go into boarding-houses. There is, however, one domestic duty, as it is but fair to mention, which is more generally fulfilled by American women than by mothers in the continental countries of Europe, namely, that of suckling their infants themselves. Except in the Slave States, this office is scarcely ever intrusted to a hired nurse, and may Heaven grant that it never may be.

In the exceptional cases, where girls have at the same time an aversion to feminine employments and a strong vocation toward some art or science, and are likely to carry it to perfection, they should be allowed to pursue it; but then they should not do so by halves, but, if they desire to become doctors and professors, renounce all thoughts of being wives also; for it is difficult, if not impossible, to perform at the same time the duties of man and woman; and let the advocates of this kind of emancipation not forget, that there is no sphere of action more beautiful and noble

Digitized by Google

than the one they have turned away from. In the hands of every mother lies one of the most precious treasures of every state. It is the mother who must inspire her child in its tenderest years with the love of duty and of virtue, and first lead it in the way by which it may become a worthy and perhaps a great and important member of the social body. A wise and thoughtful housewife, and a rational and loving mother, will, after all, remain the ideal of feminine perfection.*

There are in the United States such extraordinary numbers of poetesses, authoresses, female composers, and so forth, that, if I were to mention the names of all who have been introduced to me as such, I should fill whole pages with them. Doubtless there are among these many highly gifted; but whoever has only written a few verses or a little essay, or composed a waltz or a polka, immediately assumes the high-sounding title of a poetess, composer, etc.; thinking, I suppose, to make up for the insignificance of the work by the grandeur of the name—and names certainly do go very far in the United States.†

But, to return to the "seminaries," the charge for the education of a girl in one of the first class is 500 dollars a year (a year of ten months) for board, lodging, and instruction in the ordinary subjects of education. Music, dancing, and other "extras" make up 200 or 300 dollars more; and yet, with these high terms, the girls are not allowed to have a bed to themselves, but put to sleep with another, often a perfect stranger. This is worse than in England, where at least this reprehensible practice is mostly, among the respectable classes, confined to sisters or friends; but in Amer-

* Perhaps it may be objected to me that, in leaving my home and traveling about the world as I have done, I have in some measure emancipated myself from the duties of my sex; but I beg it may be borne in mind that I have only done so when my children were grown up and settled, and had no longer the slightest need of my care, and when I had really no longer any household duties to perform.

† I remember, when speaking with an American publisher concerning the account of my travels that I proposed to write, he asked me what the title was. I smiled, and replied I would think of that when I had written the book. He was of opinion, however, that the title was a very important matter, that the public thought very much of a title, and that a book with a good title was sure of a good reception, etc.

Digitized by Google

ica neither man, woman, nor child expects more than a share of a bed. In many families, even of opulent people, I found a maid-servant and two children, or even three children, sleeping together; and when I inquired what could be the motive for such an arrangement, I was told it was to save time. Truly, all things considered, this must be a costly mode of saving.

I attended several times the sittings of the courts of justice at New York, and the proceedings reminded me of what I had seen in my own country during the brief revolutionary period of 1848. There was a judge and jury, advocates on both sides, and a very attentive audience. One of the trials I attended was for murder, and the case was the following:

The prisoner, Dr. G——, a man, as it appeared, given up to every kind of profligate excess, had been living at the St. Nicholas Hotel, and at the same time with him a Colonel Loring and his wife. Dr. G——, who was constantly in the habit of coming home intoxicated, came in one morning at three o'clock in the usual condition, and, going into the corridor, rang most violently for his servant, and kept up this ringing so long, that at last Colonel Loring came out of his room and requested the doctor to cease ringing, reminding him also that it was quite useless, as the servants did not sleep in that part of the house, and adding, that his wife had a violent headache and could not bear the noise. But in a short time the ringing began again as violently as ever; and, as Mrs. Loring stated on the examination, her husband went once more out of his room with the intention of going himself to look for a servant, in order to put an end to the disturbance. Dr. G—— asserted that the colonel addressed some abusive expressions to him—a thing natural enough certainly, under the circumstances, and which he most richly deserved; but be that as it may, the villain ran into his room, brought a sword-stick, and with it stabbed Colonel Loring to the heart. He was carried back as a corpse to the room he had just quitted.

I have already mentioned, that in America the vice of drunkenness appears to be regarded as an excuse for all others that it may engender, and on this occasion I heard many attempts to excuse the ruffian murderer on account of his mode of life.

Digitized by Google

"He did it when he was drunk"—"Who knows what provocation Loring may have offered him?" and so forth. At the trial the worthy doctor remained as calm and apparently unconcerned as if he had been quite an innocent man. The newspapers spoke of the probability of his acquittal, as he had both money and friends; but he was condemned to seven years' imprisonment; which seven years, however, on his appealing against the sentence, were immediately reduced to four. I left New York before the affair was quite settled; but it was the general opinion that, after a few months' imprisonment, he would obtain a free pardon. It was added, though, that he would have to leave New York, as he would be constantly liable to insults from the populace.

I have heard it boasted of in America that the populace have this sense of justice, and will make their opinion felt; but how comes it that a people knowing what justice is, and loving it, should endure this shameful indulgence to crime, and should not take care to choose honorable and incorruptible men for judges and jurymen? The power to make such a choice can surely not be wanting in so free a country as the United States.

---

## CHAPTER XXII.

The Environs of New York.—Public Institutions.—Blackwell's and Randall's Islands.—The Five Points.—Journey to Boston.—The Letter of Introduction.—Public Dinner at Massachusetts.—Society of Mechanicians.—Orphan House.—Prisons, etc.—Cambridge.—Lowell.—Return to New York.—The Election.—Departure from the United States.

I took advantage of my stay at New York to make repeated visits to the environs, as well as an excursion to the seat of Mr. Bryant on Long Island, and another to the residence of the celebrated writer, Washington Irving.

The immediate environs of the city are formed by Brooklyn, Williamsburg, and Hoboken, which may, in fact, be regarded as parts of New York, for they are only separated from it by the river. Steamboats are constantly crossing between the two, and

Digitized by Google

many people live in these suburbs who come into New York daily for their business. Rather further, on the bay lies Staten Island. This bay is made the most of by the Americans, who compare it to those of Naples and Constantinople; but no one else would think of such a comparison. It is, nevertheless, very fine; but its breadth is too great, or the chains of hills relatively too low. Viewed from the city, these hills appear much more insignificant than they really are: from Staten Island the city itself looks like a mere heap of stones, and of the ships you see nothing more than the forest of masts.

On Staten Island itself there are some fine prospects, and some beautiful country seats; but unluckily all the ground is inclosed by wooden palings, and you can no longer walk through groves and meadows, but must keep to the dusty high-road.

Greenwood, six miles from New York, is the most magnificent cemetery I have ever seen, not only in the United States, but, as far as I know, in the whole world. The richest, softest grass is shaded by the most majestic trees, with silver springs and basins sparkling between their foliage; the weeping willows are some of the finest in the world—indeed, these trees seem particularly to flourish in the Northern States of the Union. From the high ground you get a most charming prospect of the city and its environs; and, on the whole, I would myself greatly prefer a residence here among the dead to one in the noisy city.

Without a ticket you can not gain admission to this place of rest, and on Sundays it is entirely closed; so that from this, the most beautiful spot in New York, the working classes are virtually excluded, as they can visit it on no other day.

High Bridge, ten miles from New York, is the place where the great water-works have been erected, to furnish a supply to the city by means of a lofty aqueduct, which is carried across an arm of the Hudson. The place is also deserving of a visit for its fine views.

I drove thither in one of a line of omnibuses which run every half hour. This one took ostensibly twelve persons inside, but it never refused any who offered themselves; and I counted at one time fourteen grown persons and five children, of which the

Digitized by Google

youngest was certainly not less than four years old. To my astonishment, this amount of stowage was rendered possible by the girls and young women seating themselves, without any ceremony, on the knees of men quite strange to them. I would not have believed this had I not seen it. Surely this is being rather too free and easy—too unmindful of feminine dignity and delicacy!

Mr. Bryant's country seat lies close to Roslyn, on Long Island, thirty miles from New York. It afforded me great pleasure to become acquainted with this gentleman, the editor of one of the first papers here, and known not only in his own country, but in many others, as an author and original poet, as well as for his translations from many of our German ones. He was so kind as to invite me to pass some days at his house, which is easily reached by railroad or steamer; and both routes, especially the last, afford the passenger many fine views.

The house of Mr. Bryant is pleasantly situated on a gentle elevation near the sea, and with the houses of the village of Roslyn scattered around, and on all sides fresh foliage and stately willows, with trunks five feet in diameter, grouped about. There was an air of rural repose in the whole scene, as if it had been 100 miles from any great city; and it seemed the very place where the mind might recover its composure, and collect new strength to meet the storms of life. But in the society of the Bryant family, independently of the peaceful loveliness of their abode, there was so great a charm that all the rest appeared subordinate; and in Mrs. Bryant I found the most perfect model of a mistress of a family, uniting in an uncommon degree feminine grace, modesty, and *domesticity*, with strength of character and intellectual culture. Would to God that not America only, but the world, had many such housewives to show. Gladly would I have stayed for a little the ever-rolling wheels of time, while I lingered in this delightful retreat; but the few days I had to pass here flew only too swiftly away.

Washington Irving's seat lies at about the same distance from the city as Mr. Bryant's, but in another direction, namely, on the Hudson River. This great and genial writer received me with the most engaging politeness; in his tranquil, benevolent-looking

Digitized by Google

face, when in repose, I should rather have found the amiable country gentleman than the literary man of genius; but when he got into conversation his eyes flashed with all the fire of youth, and his whole countenance beamed with spiritual expression. This is one of the rare and happy cases in which nature has been equally bountiful in her endowments to head and heart.

Washington Irving is a bachelor; but he has brightened his age with the attractions of some amiable nieces, the daughters of his sister, who share with their uncle the enjoyments of his beautifully-situated villa; and even in winter he never quits his retirement.

There remained now not much for me to see in New York, except the public institutions, schools, orphan-houses, hospitals, prisons, etc.; and my good star led me first to the "Tombs," the city prison. I say my good star, because I there became acquainted with one of the best and most true-hearted of women, the matron superintendent, Mrs. Flora Foster, whose character excited my warmest sympathy; and I passed many an hour in her society, both in the Tombs and in her own house.

The building is in the Egyptian style; and I imagined that the name of the Tombs had been bestowed on it from its resemblance to the monuments of the Egyptian kings. It seems, however, that it was for another reason, namely, that at the time of its first establishment it was entirely surrounded by morasses, and so unwholesome that most of the prisoners died.

Criminals of every grade are received into this prison, and particularly drunkards who are found lying in the street. They are kept here for five days, and, on frequent repetition of the offense, are sent for six months to the House of Correction on Blackwell's Island. Persons accused of heavier offenses remain here till their trial; they have neat, airy rooms to themselves, with a bed and a chair, and receive simple, but wholesome and abundant food. They can also walk for several hours a day in the court-yard, unless the offense with which they are charged be of a very serious character, when they are kept in-doors. As long, however, as they are not convicted, they are allowed every convenience and comfort that their own purses or the attention of their friends can procure.

Digitized by Google

Among those brought here for drunkenness, I saw, to my deep sorrow, many women and young girls; and there often came, I was told, as many as thirty or forty in a day. The whole number brought during the preceding year amounted to 6000. Whoever would wish to see this vice in the full horror of its degradation should come here. How it is possible, with such examples as this before their eyes, for the people of America to treat this vice with so much misplaced indulgence, is what I can not understand.

The superintendent of the female department of the prison is, as I have said, Mrs. Foster; and assuredly if the prisoners leave it without amendment it is not her fault, for she labors with the most earnest benevolence to lead them back to the path of right. I had often occasion to see her in the exercise of her vocation, and I always observed her proceedings with the deepest interest.

The American ladies, no less than those of England and Germany, are in the habit of visiting institutions of this kind, not only to see that their appointed guardians do their duty, but also to endeavor themselves, by kind expostulation and judicious instruction, to exercise a favorable influence on the minds of the criminal of their sex, and, when their time of punishment has elapsed, to assist them to get into some way of life in which they can earn an honest living. Among the ladies whom I know who are most active in these duties of Christian charity, I may especially mention Mrs. Gibbons, wife of the H. E. I. S. Gibbons, and Miss Curtis. The fathers of these two ladies devoted to the same cause much of their fortune and the greater part of their time, and exerted themselves particularly in obtaining places in virtuous families for the grown-up orphans and reformed female offenders. The father of Mrs. Gibbons is now dead, and Mr. Curtis is above eighty years; but the two ladies continue their good works in the same spirit of true benevolence.

I went with Mrs. Foster to pay a visit to Blackwell's Island —a small spot of earth, a mile long and half a mile broad, pleasantly situated not far from New York, and in remarkably fine and healthy air. It is entirely occupied by public institutions: one for aged and infirm people, one for the insane, and one for

Digitized by Google

persons sentenced to six months' imprisonment for minor offenses.

The three buildings stand at a proper distance from each other, separated by stone walls and gardens, and are perfect palaces for size and solidity of construction. They are of freestone, and were built, I was told, by the criminals themselves.

All these establishments appeared to me admirable in their arrangements. The rooms in which the people work and stay during the day are spacious and airy; their food is good, and amply sufficient; and the greatest order and cleanliness prevail in every department. Whoever is capable of working is required to do so a certain number of hours in the day.

Among the female offenders I was struck by the appearance of a girl of eighteen or nineteen years of age, who wore her hair cut short like a man. When I inquired about her, I was told that she had served six months on board ship as a sailor, and that this constituted the offense for which she had been sent hither!

All the prisoners I saw, both men and women, behaved in an extremely orderly manner; and I heard neither whispering nor laughing among them when we entered their rooms. They were treated, however, not like criminals, with harsh words and rough tones, but as if they were known to be reformed. The ladies who came with me went up and shook hands with them, and spoke to them in the kindest manner—a method that must surely be productive of good effect.

The Hospital for the Insane I certainly think superior to Bedlam, in London. The unfortunate sufferers are not confined at night in little cells, but sleep in large airy rooms, and, though they are all of the poorer class, in good snow-white beds.

The windows are barred in such a way that it is not at all perceived, as the iron rods fit exactly to the wooden window frames. The meals are taken in common at clean, neatly-covered tables, with crockery, glasses, and knives and forks; and only those regarded as dangerous are not trusted with these things, but eat from pewter plates, and have their meat cut up for them.

Randall's Island, another quite small one, is also devoted to public institutions, mostly for children. The largest of these, the

Digitized by Google

House of Refuge, is a magnificent building, only just finished, for the reception of juvenile offenders; and there is another smaller one for orphans and forsaken children, and a hospital for the sick, especially scrofulous children and idiots.

All these institutions are admirable in their arrangements, except that in the hospital there were, it seemed to me, too few nurses; and for that reason the children were not always as well cared for as might be wished. How is it possible for one woman to attend to all the wants of twenty of these unfortunate creatures? The salaries of these nurses, also, I consider too low.

In the House of Refuge children are received from the age of ten years, and kept here a longer or shorter time, according to the progress of their reformation. Sometimes they obtain their liberty again after three months, and sometimes they are detained till they are of full age, which with girls is at eighteen, with the other sex at twenty-one years of age. When they leave this institution there are always efforts made to procure for them suitable situations in farm-houses.

Besides the Orphan-house on Randall's Island there are in New York two others, one for colored children and another for whites, the latter in the very heart of the city, at a place called "Five Points," one of the very worst neighborhoods in it, a place through which no well-dressed person can venture to pass in the evening without the escort of a policeman. Robberies, murders, and all kinds of crimes are here planned; and it is in the midst of this hell upon earth that the Missionary Society have erected a Refuge for Orphans. One division of it is used as a penitentiary for the reception of women of bad character who manifest a desire of reformation. They are supplied with work and receive weekly wages, one half of which they are required to pay for their board and lodging, and the other they keep for themselves.

In the school instruction given to the orphans other children not in the institution are allowed to take part, and the success that has attended these efforts is said to be most encouraging. Many even of the most apparently depraved parents will send their children to the school, and many a youthful sinner has by its means been brought back to rectitude.

Digitized by Google

In the asylum for colored children they are received from the second to the twelfth year; and then situations are found for them with farmers or artisans, or as servants with trustworthy families. Strangely enough, the school instruction is given in one large common hall, where the children sit altogether without any partitions between them. They are, indeed, divided into classes, but the noise is tremendous. The teachers* scream their questions, and the whole class together screams the answer, but whether a right or a wrong one I for my part found it impossible, for the hubbub, to make out; and this very injudicious method of making the whole class answer at once I found adopted not only in this but in other public schools.

It is a very easy thing to fill the office of a female teacher or professor in the American schools—not excepting the "seminaries" for the higher classes—for the books of instruction are so arranged that they have simply to read aloud a portion from them, and they have done all that is required.

In the district of "Five Points" there are some rooms fitted up for the accommodation of the boys who live by selling newspapers, which are well warmed and lighted, with good beds; and elementary instruction is also provided, all for the very small payment of forty-two cents, or rather more than twenty-pence, a week.

The Deaf and Dumb Asylum, under the guidance of the director Mr. Peet, has a very high character, and the pupils are sometimes so far advanced in the various branches of knowledge taught that they seem to have not less, but more, than the ordinary allowance of five senses. In arithmetic and in writing on themes they particularly distinguished themselves. Some even spoke a few words—a thing I remember to have noticed in a similar institution in Vienna.

Mr. Peet the elder was absent when I visited the asylum, but it was shown to me with the greatest readiness by his son, who, though a mere youth, understood already as well how to treat

* In the American schools these are mostly of the feminine gender, even in the lower schools for boys. In the United States every possible facility is afforded to women who desire to earn their own maintenance, and they are employed wherever they can be.

Digitized by Google

these unfortunate beings and gain their affection as the most mature and experienced teacher could have done. It is incontestable that the Americans are fitted for practical life at a very early age; and that is probably to be in some measure ascribed to the general custom of introducing them as soon as possible to business life. This young gentleman, I found, had already chosen his companion for life, and the bride elect was one of the pupils in the school.

I had now spent three weeks in New York, and had seen most of what, as a stranger, I could find worth seeing; I was, therefore, recommended to make excursions to some of the other cities—Boston, Philadelphia, and Washington; but, to say the truth, nothing wearies me more than visiting in succession several great cities, especially in America, where they very much resemble one another. I yielded, however, so far to the persuasions of my friends as to determine to make at least one of these visits, namely, to Boston, the "Athens" of the United States.

I set off on the 10th of October, and went sixty-five miles up the East River, by the large steamer *Vanderbilt*, to the railway. This trip up the river is agreeable at first, from the views of the cities of New York and Brooklyn, and various groups of hills; but afterward the shores become flat and monotonous.

I could not help noticing what a convenient plan was adopted with the goods and travelers' luggage in this vessel, and in transferring them to the railroad. The packages were all placed at once in small wagons, marked for the various stations, and on the arrival of the steamer the horses were standing ready, and there was nothing to do but to push the wagons off the deck of the steamer, take them to the railroad, and hook them on to the train. The change was made with the utmost expedition, yet in the most quiet and orderly manner. In practical matters of this kind the Americans are admirable, and every other nation might go to school to them.

It was two o'clock in the morning when we had to leave the boat and enter on the railroad; but we did the remaining 120 miles and arrived in Boston in four hours.

I alighted at a boarding-house, but no sooner had Dr. Hoffen-

Digitized by Google

dahl (a German) heard of my coming than he insisted on my becoming his guest, though I had brought no letter to him. To him and the other families of Boston who were so good as to relieve me from the unpleasant hotel life I return my most hearty thanks.

The city of Boston, with a population of 150,000, lies on three hills, and the streets are all planted with beautiful avenues of trees, and, compared with New York, may be regarded as perfectly clean. In the principal streets of business—Washington and Hanover streets—the bustle is considerable, though not overpowering; and a park in the middle of the town, with trees, and water, and many seats, affords a most pleasant walk, as well as an admirable play-ground for the children. The public buildings, built of freestone, are fine, and white, as they always are in the cities of the United States. In the way of museums, public galleries, and so forth, there is not much worth seeing; but the Literary Athenæum contains a small collection of statues, busts, and oil pictures, and a considerable library.

The celebrated naturalist, Dr. Warren, possesses a collection of rare antediluvian fossils, which he was good enough to show me; and, among other things, a perfect skeleton of the mastodon found in North America, and said to be the largest hitherto discovered.

The Bunker Hill Monument—a most remarkable one for the history of the United States—is a simple obelisk of gray stone, standing on a hill in the middle of the town. It was erected to the memory of those who fell in that heroic battle which was fought in the first War of Freedom (1774), which, as is well known, commenced here. This monument is undoubtedly the finest ornament of the city, and the pride of the country. You can ascend to the summit of it, though it is somewhat of a labor; but you will be rewarded by the fine view you will obtain of the city and the country round it.

I had the good fortune while in Boston to make the acquaintance of Mr. Rever Barnard, who showed me the greatest attention, accompanied me personally every where, and, when his time allowed of it, used to come in the morning to bring me.

I had, indeed, brought from New York a letter of introduction to one of the first commercial houses in the city, with the assur-



Digitized by Google

ance that it would procure for me the most friendly attentions. But, when I delivered my missive, the gentleman to whom it was addressed received me in the coldest manner, which may perhaps be accounted for from my being very simply dressed and coming on foot.

He took an immense time to read the few lines of the letter. Very likely he was considering the while what sort of reception to give me; and he inquired *what I wanted*, at length, as if he thought I had come to ask alms of him.

I replied in the same tone, "I want nothing. This letter to you was given me without my asking for it, and I thought myself obliged to deliver it." When he saw that I did not mean to ask him for any thing (apparently he could not quite satisfy himself on that point from the letter), he said that, if I required any *information*, he would be happy to afford it me; and therewith our colloquy ended, and I never saw or heard any thing more of him.

Here was a specimen of the *Plutocracy*, not of Boston alone, but of all the world over. Their pride and arrogance are far more insupportable than that of the real aristocratic class, who generally have at least the grace of deportment that is often wanting to the former. In Boston these purse-proud people are said to hold together more than any where else; they scarcely associate with any but their own class, marry among themselves, and even live almost all together in one street, *videlicet*, Beacon Street. And yet I could excuse these people sooner than their worshipers; for how soon would pride, either of birth or money, descend from its pedestal, were there no crawling parasites to do it honor.

I had come to Boston, as I have said, on the 11th of October, at six o'clock in the morning; on the same day I was presented to the mayor, Dr. Smith, and in the evening, at his invitation, went to a grand dinner of the Massachusetts Mechanical Institute, which takes place once in every three years at Faneuil Hall—a place of no less historical interest than the Bunker Hill Monument; for here the first meetings were held, the first important resolutions taken; from here the American forces mounted to their first battle; and hence this memorable hall bears the title of the "Cradle of Freedom."

Digitized by Google

Thinking with profound veneration of this by-gone time, I entered this hall, and found it brilliantly illuminated and tastefully decorated for the banquet. There was a band of musicians in the gallery, and the table was laid for 800 guests; but, though the viands were of the greatest variety, there was no wine or spirituous drink, and the only beverages were water, tea, and coffee. The State of Massachusetts belongs to the Temperance Union.

The dinner lasted for about an hour; after which there were speeches for two hours, and the mayor showed me the greatest attention, and made only too flattering mention of me to the company, to whom he introduced me. At his request I stood up, and was greeted with loud applause; and I never regretted more than at that moment my very slight acquaintance with the English language, as it prevented my expressing my thanks for this very friendly reception.

Between the speeches there were songs, hymns, etc., not forgetting the favorite national air of "Yankee Doodle;" and the company broke up about eleven o'clock.

The public institutions of Boston are conducted in the most exemplary manner. That for the blind, one of the most remarkable, was unfortunately closed, as it was the vacation time; but I had nevertheless the pleasure of becoming acquainted with the director, Mr. Howe, who has gained so high a reputation by his mode of management.

Not far from this establishment is another for idiots; and truly wonderful is the illustration here afforded of the power of educational training. All these poor creatures were clean in their dress and orderly in their deportment, and many of them could read, a few could write, and some even had some notion of geography.

I was particularly struck by the appearance of two sisters, whom, from the excessive smallness of their heads, as well as from the expression of their faces, I should have considered devoid of any spark of intelligence; but I found that they had been taught to read a little, could tell the days of the week, and distinguish colors. There was a most beautiful fair-haired little girl of six years old, in whose brilliant blue eyes one could certainly not perceive

Digitized by Google

the deficiency of reason, yet hitherto it had not been found possible to teach her any thing; she was, I observed, in everlasting restless motion.

As long as these unfortunate creatures remain in this benevolent institution they are not, perhaps, so much to be pitied; but when they are thrown out on the wide world, in which they have no part, into the society from which they are entirely cut off, their fate must be a mournful one; and it is found, alas! that they generally attain to a considerable age—perhaps because no care, no passion troubles their repose.

The General Hospital of Massachusetts I consider in all respects one of the most excellent that I have seen in the United States, and I should be almost inclined to place it in the same rank with those of Surabaya and Samarang, in Java. Higher praise I could not give it.

The prison of Boston is also a magnificent building, which, with its fine cupola, has the appearance of a very handsome church. The interior forms a long and lofty hall, with a narrow building on each side, divided into three stories entirely occupied by cells, with grated doors and windows opening upon a gallery that runs all round the building. The whole looks very much like an iron cage.

The prisoners get light and air enough from the hall, and have also the amusement of seeing what is going on there, but with each other they can hold no intercourse. The jailer sits below in the hall, whence he can overlook the whole of the cells at a glance.

I went into the kitchen to see the distribution of the food, which is extremely good. The prisoners have meat, with good soup, five days in the week, and the other two days fish. A pound of meat, with three large potatoes and a large piece of bread, is the allowance for dinner; a pound of bread, with coffee, for breakfast; and in the evening bread and tea. I should not be surprised if the minor offenses were sometimes committed for the sake of being sent here, since there is this abundance of good food and no work to be done.

The Hospital for the Insane consists of three buildings, each with its separate beautiful garden, and two of which are appro-

Digitized by Google

priated to the opulent classes—eight gentlemen and eight ladies. Each patient has two splendidly-furnished rooms, a bath-room, and a separate attendant; and for all this, including medical advice, the charge is only twenty dollars a week.

The third building contains lodgings with humbler accommodations for three dollars, and also many gratuitous ones.

Of the schools that I visited in Boston I may say nearly the same as I have already said of those of New York—they may be regarded as models of their kind; and I was particularly glad to find that the colored girls and boys were so well taught, that they can be afterward employed as teachers.

In the largest of the People's Schools, which has above 600 pupils, and is under the direction of Mr. Barnard, I for the first time saw the girls instructed in feminine hand-works, plain needle-work, embroidery, etc.; and this judicious innovation is, I believe, to be ascribed to Mrs. Barnard, who has the superintendence of the girl's school. During the day the schools are attended by children; but three or four times a week, during the two hours from seven till nine, it is open for young people whose education has been neglected in their childhood. Mr. Barnard is so esteemed and beloved by his pupils, that they not only greet him joyfully when he enters the school, but run eagerly to meet him whenever they see him, as I had many opportunities of noticing during my walks in the town.

I found, thanks to the kindness of my indefatigable friend, an opportunity of making two excursions from Boston—one to Cambridge, and the other to Lowell.

The first, which is about four miles from the city, is the largest and most important university in the United States. The number of students this year amounted to 900, of whom 700 were supplied with board and lodging. It is quite a little colony, and consists of many houses lying in gardens and meadows, some of which are occupied by lecture-halls, others used as dwelling-houses for the students, and every professor has a small one to himself. The library contains 80,000 volumes, and, like the university, is the most considerable in the United States. Among other things, I was shown two manuscript Bibles, one of the ninth, the other

Digitized by Google

of the fourteenth century, and a MS. copy of a Greek work of Hippocrates, so closely and exactly copied from the original, that it is scarcely possible to distinguish one from the other. It is said that £1500 have been offered for this specimen of caligraphical skill.

At this university I became acquainted with the very celebrated naturalist, M. Agassiz, who, before he left his native country of Switzerland, ascended all the most remarkable mountains and glaciers, Mont Blanc among them; and the meeting was so much the more agreeable to me, as I had been, on my first voyage round the world in 1847, most kindly received by a near relation of his at Canton, in China.

M. Agassiz is occupied at Cambridge, in addition to his professorial duties, with collecting objects of natural history; and he is said to have one of the richest collections of insects and butterflies in the United States. Unfortunately I could not see them, as they were all packed up to be carried to another house.

Lowell, the best-known manufacturing town in the United States, lying twenty-five miles from Boston, has a population of 33,000 persons. Hence come all the finest carpets, calicoes, and printed goods made in the country. There are eleven factories, which, at the time I visited it, employed 8476 girls, 4507 men, and a capital of 14,000,000 of dollars.

The girls almost all live in boarding-houses attached to the factories, and in which, as well as in the factories themselves, the most judicious vigilance is exercised concerning their conduct. At these establishments they pay for good board and lodging only five dollars a month. Those who refuse to live in these houses have to submit to a slight weekly deduction of twenty-five cents from their salaries—a little tax, which is meant to balance any objection they might have to the superintendence to which they are subject in the boarding-houses.

The conduct of these young women is said to be, on the whole, so exemplary, that highly respectable parents do not hesitate to send their daughters to work in the factories. This circumstance was so new to me with respect to factory workwomen, and so interesting, that I paid comparatively little attention to the machinery,

Digitized by Google

though it has unquestionably been brought to a high degree of perfection; if I had been more attentive, I know far too little of such things to venture to describe them, and I would always rather confess my ignorance than merely write out of other books.

I returned to New York on the 19th of October, and remained there till the 10th of November. Three days before my departure the elections for various important municipal and other offices took place, and it was feared that on this occasion there would be some stormy scenes, and possibly even battles, as the parties were violently opposed to each other, the real point at issue being the introduction or rejection of the temperance law.

I walked about the town during the greater part of the day, and especially in the "Five Points" in the Sixth Ward, in order to observe the voters, and it did not appear to me that their aspect was very tranquilizing.

Fortunately, however, the affair passed off more quietly than had been expected, and particularly in the neighborhoods above mentioned, which have usually in such cases been the scenes of tremendous riots, insomuch that the latter has acquired the honorable appellation of the "Bloody Sixth." The cause of this unusually pacific behavior was, in all probability, the general expectation of the very contrary, for no one liked to leave his house without efficient protection. Each party shrank from commencing active hostilities, and the day consequently passed without any further mischief than one man being killed and several severely wounded in Williamsburg.

On the 10th of November I left New York in the splendid steamer *Pacific* for Liverpool.

I had now seen the country which I had so long ardently desired to visit, and which, though less rich in natural beauty than those of the southern hemisphere, is incomparably more so in the energetic industry of its inhabitants, and interesting to all by its peculiar political constitution.

I found many things different from what I had expected, many things that were other than what they ought to be, and by no means in accordance with the principles of freedom and equali-

Digitized by Google

ty, which are the fundamental pillars of American institutions. Slavery in some States—the exclusion of free negroes and colored people from society, and from political and civil existence in others—the cruel law by which fugitive slaves are hunted and caught like wild beasts, and which even commands all to whom they may fly for refuge to deliver them up to their pursuers—the inexcusable indulgence of judges and jurymen toward white criminals, who, as it is constantly declared by the American papers, if they have money or friends, may always hope to escape with very trifling punishment, or none at all; and, lastly, the puritanical observance of the Sunday, which denies to those chained all the week to their work the privilege of cheerful and innocent recreation. On the rich it falls very lightly, for those who have six Sundays in the week can, of course, very easily submit to such a privation.

But, with all these defects and short-comings, it is impossible for a candid observer to deny that (the Slave States excepted) the good results of the institutions and laws of this great country do not merely balance, but immeasurably outweigh, the evils accompanying them. The United States stand alone in the world, and well indeed would it be for humanity if others were formed after their model.

Would that the great ones of the earth, who regard themselves as so indispensable a part of the social fabric, would come here and see that nations can do, not merely as well, but incomparably better, without them, and that a swarm of highly-paid official personages, a court absorbing millions of money, and immense and costly armies, are really not absolutely necessary to a people's welfare. Most justly are the Americans proud of the country which is free from these unnatural burdens, and where every man (with the exceptions above stated) may vindicate his claim to the position to which the capacity given him by God may entitle him.

Digitized by Google

## CHAPTER XXIII.

Arrival in Liverpool.—Voyage to St. Michael's.—Punta del Gada.—Singular antique Custom.—Villa Franca.—The Ilheo.—The Bathing-place Furnas.—The Hot Springs.—Departure from St. Michael's.—Entrance into the Tagus.—Lisbon.—Return to England.—Conclusion.

THROUGH the kind services of the venerable Mr. Curtis, of New York, the very acceptable compliment of a free ticket for the passage to Liverpool (a voyage of 3200 miles) was offered me for any of the vessels of the American line of Messrs. Collins and Co.

The American companies I found in this respect incomparably more liberal than the English, for on no English vessel, either sailer or steamer, was I ever offered the smallest passage free of charge; and I beg once more to return the former my sincere thanks for the friendly help which, with that of the no less courteous Dutchmen, enabled me to extend my travels far beyond the limits I had originally contemplated. After a rapid passage of ten days and a half we arrived quite safely in Liverpool, and Captain Nye very politely accompanied me himself to the Adelphi Hotel (where the proprietor declined receiving any payment from me), and on the following morning took me to the railway station. He was one of those persons whom it is as painful to part from after a short acquaintance as if they were long-tried friends.

In London I was cordially welcomed by Mr. Waterhouse, the keeper of the Mineralogical Department of the British Museum, where he resides; and I spent some weeks in his amiable family endeavoring to recover from the effects of the obstinate fever. It had attacked me once more on the voyage, and I had had recourse to the American remedy of brandy, red pepper, and sugar, and, as I have before said, with the best effect, as it never visited me again.

My rambles were, however, not yet at an end, for, before returning to my native country, I desired to pay a visit to one of my sons, who was settled at St. Michael's, one of the Azores Islands. For a long time I could not make out how I was to get there;



Digitized by Google

but at length it appeared I might take a passage in the Royal Blue Jacket, one of the small fruit schooners, about two hundred of which go every year from England to St. Michael's for oranges. These vessels are of course not in the least adapted for passengers, and the master, Mr. Livingstone, told me himself that he could offer me no convenient accommodation, and could give me no other berth than that in which his cook then slept. But what was to be done? To St. Michael's I would go, and I therefore made up my mind to the inconvenience. The passage lasted unluckily twenty days, and during all that time I could not once undress myself. In the hole in which I slept it was impossible to move, and what with the tremendous rolling of the little craft in the almost constantly stormy sea, the coal smoke from the stove, and the suffocating atmosphere of the close little cabin, which, on account of the bad weather, had to be kept constantly closed, I really thought sometimes I should never reach St. Michael's alive.

These things, however, I have no right to complain of; I might have foreseen, at all events, their probability; but I think I have some ground of complaint against the owner or part-owner of the vessel, Mr. Chessel, of Bristol. I had agreed with the master and the agent of this Mr. Chessel, a Mr. Burnett, to pay three pounds for my passage without board; but when, on the day we were to sail, I came on board with my luggage, the skipper told me, with some embarrassment, that I must go again to the agent's office. I did so, and found there Mr. Chessel himself, who, in a pretty rough tone, informed me that I could not have the passage under five pounds. I told him that the agreement was already made, and my luggage on board; but he said that did not matter, I might pay the five pounds, or bring my luggage back again.

I might certainly have gone before a magistrate and have endeavored to compel him to keep to his agreement, but time pressed; the ship was ready to sail, and I could not do other than submit to the extortion.

As I had only the three pounds with me, I told Mr. Chessel that I would pay the remainder to the captain on board; but the noble-minded man—judging me, I suppose, by himself—declined to take my word, and came on board himself to bring his two pounds. I

Digitized by Google

am glad to say I have not met with many Mr. Chessels in the course of my travels.

. On the 31st of December we came at length in sight of the pleasant island of St. Michael's, and I was beginning to indulge the hope of spending my New-year's eve with my son, whom I had not seen for six years, when the wind shifted to an unfavorable quarter, and compelled us to drive hither and thither, and at last, at nightfall, to go out to sea again. The next day we again got near the land, and, when we saw the boat of the medical officer coming toward us, we thought there was now nothing to prevent our landing. But how painfully undeceived were we by the dismal tidings that we must first submit to some days' quarantine, on account of the cholera having been in England, though it had long since ceased. After this it was very satisfactory, though somewhat puzzling, to see the doctor come on board again the very next day and inform us that the quarantine was at an end, and we were free. I afterward learned that a little before our arrival, and on the very same day, a ship had come from Lisbon that brought to the Board of Health the official order to do away with the quarantine, and, as all letters and newspapers had been delivered at ten o'clock in the morning, the official dispatches had certainly not been left out. Whether the doctor could in mere carelessness have neglected to open them, or that he had any reason for not mentioning the contents, one can not presume to say; but his silence, taken in connection with the fact that every visit to a ship brings him a fee of four or five dollars, and that in our case he had two visits to pay, one to put on the quarantine and another to take it off again, does certainly leave room for conjecture. Considering that the roads are extremely unsafe, that there is no harbor, and that in this winter time storms sometimes arise suddenly, and last for weeks together, driving all ships off the island, we might have paid rather a heavy price for putting this fee into the doctor's pocket; but what surprised me most in the affair was that nobody, not even the English consul, called him to any account.

The island of St. Michael's, one of the Azores,* is extremely

* The Azores group consists of nine islands, of which St. Michael's is the

Digitized by Google

pretty, and possesses an abundance of hills and mountains covered with fresh verdure, and thrown about with graceful irregularity. At the first glance you see that it is of volcanic origin; the shape of the mountains, the dark sea-shore, often entirely of black lava, afford sufficient evidence of this. But no smoking crater is to be found here any longer—the volcanoes have long since raged themselves out—and the lava has become so hard that it is almost converted into stone, and is every where covered so richly with vegetable soil, that the most luxuriant corn-fields wave and fragrant orange groves blossom on its surface.

The length of the island is fifty-eight miles, by a breadth of ten or twelve; its population about 90,000; its trade, which is more considerable than from its extent might be anticipated, chiefly consists in the export of oranges, of which it sends out yearly from 120,000 to 140,000 chests, each, on an average, containing 800, which would give the enormous amount of 100,000,000 oranges. Two hundred ships usually arrive here from England between the months of November and March, and go back laden with this fruit; for, with the exception of the cargo of one ship that goes to Hamburg, and two or three to the United States, all the oranges exported go to England. The second considerable article of export is Indian corn, as well as other kinds of grain. On the whole, about 450 ships visit this island every year, and carry away produce to the value of 500 *contos da Reis*, or £90,000 sterling.

Notwithstanding this extensive commerce the people are extremely poor—a fact chiefly to be accounted for from the peasants not being proprietors, but only farmers of their lands, and holding them not for their lifetime, but on leases of but a few years.

Of the town of Punta del Gada, which, including the immediate environs, has about 16,000 inhabitants, there is not much to be said. The style of building is the European; the houses mostly insignificant-looking, with small balconies and preposterously large chimneys—a thing I could not well understand, as the kitchen fire

largest. They were discovered and taken possession of by the Portuguese in 1446, and are usually reckoned to Africa.

Digitized by Google

is the only one kept in the house. Other fire-places I found, to my sorrow, there were none; although the winter months, from November to March, are bleak, rainy, and stormy.

I was unlucky enough, too, to meet with an uncommonly severe winter, and really suffered very much from the cold; for, though there was no snow or ice, the temperature was very close to the freezing point, there were most cutting gales, and the pleasant days were few and far between.

Even in the beginning of May the warmth was not more than in my own country; but that the climate is not always so severe is sufficiently evident from oranges, and many other fruits even of tropical regions, coming to perfection. Bananas, too, flourish here; the custard-apple not quite so well, as it is rather hard and tasteless; but pine-apples succeed in glass-houses without any artificial heating, and attain to an extraordinary size. One sent me by a Portuguese lady (the wife of Dr. Agostiuko Mochado) exceeded any that I had ever seen in India; but it was not equally sweet. European vegetables, such as peas, cabbage, turnips, etc., do not need any particular care.

The inhabitants of the Azores, who are descended from the Portuguese, have fine dark eyes and hair; and, contrary to what is the case in any other country that I am acquainted with, the lower classes are handsomer than the higher. The costume of the latter is entirely French; but the people make some variation, at least in the head-dress, for the men wear a stiff cloth cap with a far-projecting, curiously-cut brim, and a piece of cloth or velvet, eight or ten inches broad, hanging down all round, which protects the neck from sun and rain. The head-dress of the women is still more grotesque—a kind of hood of blue cloth, ten inches broad and certainly a foot and a half long, which, by means of strong whalebones, is made to assume the form of a gigantic cock's-comb. In addition to this ingenious contrivance, they wear over their European dresses a long, heavy cloth cloak reaching to their feet, and do not put it off even in the greatest heat. In this absurd and tasteless costume a mother would hardly know her own daughter; for the great cock's-comb into which the head is inserted projects so far forward that the face is scarcely to be seen

Digitized by Google

at all, and the mantles are all exactly alike. No woman of the lower class, however, would be seen in the streets without a hood and a mantle; every penny is scraped together to purchase one; and whoever is not so fortunate as to be able to procure one of these elegant and convenient articles borrows one of a friend, or hires one for money.

No less strange is the custom here, that no girl or young woman is ever to go out alone. A maid-servant will not go alone across the street on a message, much less to buy or fetch any thing; and in every house a man-servant must be kept to go on errands and make purchases. I really used to pity the poor girls, for, unless they have some ancient relative who will take pity on them and occasionally take them out, they are fairly imprisoned, and sometimes do not leave the house for a year together, not even to go to church on a Sunday.

About forty years ago, I am told, if a lady wished even to pay a ceremonious visit to another, she performed it in the following way: she sent a servant the day before, to say that on such a day she would, at a certain hour, drive past in her carriage; and, accordingly, at the appointed time she came, in great state and full dressed, but with the curtains of her carriage closely drawn, and stopped opposite the house of the lady to be visited, who, on her side, was seated at her window, also attired in her best, and also with her curtains closed. When the carriage stopped, the curtains were drawn aside, the two ladies performed salutations, and then the carriage drove on—the visit being concluded.

At that time the ladies of St. Michael's had such a dread of the other sex, that if, on arriving at a friend's house, they found that a man, even a relation, was with her, they would not come in, or the hostess would request her masculine visitor to retire. At balls—for though no public ball was ever given, there were sometimes entertainments of this kind at private houses—things were managed in a very comical manner. The female guests took no part in the dancing, but sat with the ladies of the house in an adjoining room, and, moreover, in the dark, that the gentlemen might not see them; while the cavaliers danced with the maid-

Digitized by Google

servants of the family, and others of the same class who had been invited for the purpose.

I staid some months in St. Michael's, and, besides walks in the environs, made an excursion to the bathing-place of Furnas, about twenty-seven miles from Punta del Gada, and renowned for its hot springs. The people of fashion of the island go there for some weeks or months every year, but, as is usual with such places, more for recreation than for the sake of the waters.

We performed the little journey, as is customary here, on ass-back, and took our way along the sea-shore by Villa Franca, which lay fifteen miles off. This little town is as charmingly situated as Punta del Gada; and we passed the night in it, at the house of a Mr. Gago, where we found all kindly made ready for our reception. On the following morning we rowed in an open boat to the tiny island of Ilheo, which is hardly three hundred yards off. It consists of nothing more than a rocky girdle inclosing a basin, with an opening in the rocks just large enough to admit one small vessel; and it is quite evident that it has been a small volcano which has burned itself out and then fallen in. At a very trifling cost this miniature bay could be made into a splendid dock for the repair of vessels; but no one here has any idea of these things.

Toward noon we continued our journey, and reached Furnas in good time, after a pleasant ride. About a mile from it there is a pretty lake, surrounded by beautiful mountains, and at the northern end of which hot springs bubble up out of the ground; but we did not go to see them, as it just then began to rain.

Furnas itself lies in a most delightful valley, imbosomed in mountains rising one above another; and beautiful woods, luxuriant corn-fields, and fresh green pastures, cover both hill and dale. It reminded me vividly of some I had seen in Carinthia and the Tyrol. Clouds of steam rising from the earth at a short distance announce the whereabout of the hot springs, the *Caldeiras;* and every stranger hastens eagerly to behold a phenomenon that the whole population of St. Michael's speaks of with mingled rapture and terror.

My own expectations were, nevertheless, not very highly raised,

Digitized by Google

knowing that I had seen in Iceland the finest thing of the kind to be met with in the world; but, perhaps for this very reason, I found them very striking. One of the springs boils up with violence to a height of from four to six feet; another, somewhat less; and a third, not more than ordinary boiling water. The most remarkable of all is the mud-spring, *Pedro Botelho*, as it is called; it is environed in a picturesque manner with dark rocks, amidst which its noise is echoed and re-echoed to a frightful din; and, as a large cliff hangs right over it and prevents the perpendicular ascent, the force beneath throws out the boiling mud all round it to a distance of twelve or fifteen feet. There are also in the neighborhood great numbers of insignificant little springs, some of which even boil up in the midst of cold brooks. Many of these springs contain iron, and one is decidedly acid (*aqua ajedco*).

On a well-chosen spot of this lovely valley, the Viscount de Praia, one of the largest landed proprietors in the island, has built himself a house and laid out a garden. Neither were quite finished when I was there, but every window of the house will command a magnificent view; and the gardens, which are in grand style, with basins, dark groves of trees, and blooming parterres of flowers, bore witness to the taste of the owner.

At Furnas we made a party to visit the summit of a mountain about 2000 feet above the sea-level; and where we saw others towering far above us, and among them the Pico de Vara of 4000 feet. At our feet lay the lovely valley of Furnas, with its *Caldeiras*, the lake, and other valleys with pleasant villages; and on both sides of the island the vast, immeasurable ocean.

On the south side we could distinguish the island of Santa Maria, about forty miles off. On our return to Punta del Gada, we went along the northern coast, by Ribiera Grande, where the road was better than on the way by which we had come, though not so rich or various in the prospects it afforded.

The Carnival-time passed at St. Miguel with no other notice than that in the last three days, as in Brazil, the silly custom prevails of throwing water at each other. During this time, instead of going out in search of amusement, you are obliged to lock yourself in your room, and even then, if you venture to open your

Digitized by Google

window, you are very likely to receive a sudden shower-bath from one of your neighbors; or, if the position of the window allows of it, a similar salute from the street. The people blow out the insides of eggs, or make mock-oranges, lemons, etc., of wax, and then, filling them with water, pelt each other with them, or pour whole pitchersful from their windows on the passers-by. No women are to be seen in the streets, and the few men who venture out endeavor to protect themselves with umbrellas. All this does not seem overpoweringly facetious, at least to a stranger.

The fruit-ships had all left for England by the end of March; and, as I had lingered at St. Michael's till the middle of May, I had no choice left, if I wished to leave the island, but to go by the way of Lisbon; although my intention was to go to London.

I sailed accordingly by a little Portuguese vessel of 110 tons, the Michaelense, and to my great surprise found myself as comfortably accommodated as I should have been in many a steamer. The berths were high and roomy, the food abundant and well prepared, the attendance good, and the table neatly served. This was the first Portuguese vessel by which I had ever sailed; but if all resemble it, I can certainly recommend them to travelers with a good conscience.

The distance from St. Michael's to Lisbon is 720 miles, and this we did in eight days, seeing no land till we neared the Portuguese coast. The only incident I remember as interrupting the complete monotony of the voyage was the floating past of the carcass of a dead whale, about which hundreds of birds of prey were hovering.

On the 28th of May we ran into the Tagus, which is, at the mouth, only to be distinguished from the sea by its color. The city of Lisbon lies about six miles up the stream; but vessels usually come to anchor opposite a central point of the town, nearly three miles further. It took us seven or eight hours to do this nine miles; but the way was so beautiful that I did not at all regret the loss of time. The river here spreads to a majestic breadth, and is covered with vessels of all sizes, with steamers rushing about among them; the shore is formed by fine hills, of which the only defect is want of wood. At the entrance of the

Digitized by Google

Tagus, Fort St. Julian is seen on one side, with the beautifully-formed mountain of Serra da Cintra rising behind it, at no great distance, and on the other shore a light-house, surrounded by a battery (Torre da Bugio), close to the sea.

Gliding past picturesque villages and small forts, you come to Belem, where the river loses something of its breadth, and bathes the walls of a magnificent tower, in the Gothic and Moorish styles, furnishing a superb memorial of the old time; then, while on the southern bank villages still alternate with half-decayed castles and forts, on the northern the city of Lisbon spreads itself out before you, not only covering the strip of plain between the river and the hills, but covering the hills themselves. Opposite the centre of the town the river opens to such a width that it is like a spacious bay, on whose distant shore you see villages and groves, with mountains rising behind them. I sat for hours at the window of my hotel, which was close to the river, gazing on the lovely panoramic picture.

The arrival in Lisbon is attended by one considerable annoyance in the extortion and pestering of petty officials. As soon as we reached Belem the health officers came on board, then the custom-house officers, then the ship police, then the harbor-master, then officers to examine our passports, etc., till there really seemed to be no end to them, and, though we came from a Portuguese possession, we were subject to as rigid and curious an examination as if we had come from the moon. For the passports, of course, there was hard cash to be paid, and the custom-house authorities are so severe that you are not allowed to take the smallest carpet-bag with you. Considering how proud we are of European progress, it seems strange to find a European government thus endeavoring to throw all possible hinderances in the way of traveling.

Of the city of Lisbon I saw very little, though I spent twelve days in it, for I was so very unwell as to be forced to keep my room the greater part of the time. Scarcely was I able to drag myself up a few of the hilly streets that form one of the most peculiar features of this city, in order to obtain better views of the river, the town, and its environs; but when I did, I saw that it

Digitized by Google

extended over and beyond the line of hills. The churches have no fine domes or towers; nor is there any thing remarkable in the style of architecture of the houses, but here and there, on hills in the middle of the city, lie picturesque masses of ruins of palaces and churches, destroyed in the tremendous earthquake of 1755, which, as is well known, laid the greater part of Lisbon in ruins, and in which thousands of the inhabitants perished. Splendid parterres of flowers adorn the public gardens, and those in the lower town have also most beautiful and venerable trees. The Portuguese appear, in general, to be great lovers of flowers, as I had already occasion to notice at St. Michael's; and here these lovely messengers of spring met me in crowds, even in places where I should never have expected to see them, as, for instance, in the court-yard of the custom-house at the landing-place.

My illness increased during the latter days of my stay, so that I was forced to remain in bed, and renounce even the drive to Serra de Cintra, so renowned for its picturesque character and luxuriant vegetation, and the summer residence of the royal family, etc. I only left my room to ship myself on board the steamer Iberia for Southampton.

This steamer, unluckily, did not belong to an American company, and, though I paid £10 for my passage, I had much worse accommodation than in the little Portuguese sailing vessel, where I came about the same distance for £3 10s. My berth was in a little dark, gloomy cabin, where were stowed eleven women besides myself, and four children; and my son, though he paid the first price, had to sleep in the second cabin. We left Lisbon on the 9th, and got to Southampton on the 14th of June, and I came on the same day by the railroad to London, where I was once more cordially welcomed by the kind family of Waterhouse, and took up my abode with them in the British Museum. And herewith ended happily my Second Journey Round the World.

Should I any where have spoken too strongly with respect to the manners and customs of countries through which I have passed, or have taken up erroneous views concerning them, I can only beg for the indulgent consideration of my readers, and repeat what I said in the first book of travels I ever published, that I am

Digitized by Google

by no means to be counted among the fortunately gifted of my sex, but that I am a most simple and unpretending person, and can claim as a writer no merit whatever beyond that of describing truly and without exaggeration what I have seen and experienced.

THE END.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

THIS BOOK IS DUE ON THE LAST DATE
STAMPED BELOW

BOOKS REQUESTED BY ANOTHER BORROWER
ARE SUBJECT TO IMMEDIATE RECALL

UCD LIBRARY

U DUE FEB 15 1992
DU FEB 16 1992 REC'D

LIBRARY, UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA, DAVIS

Book Slip–Series 458

Digitized by Google

92123
Pfeiffer, I.R. G440
A lady's second jour- P4
Pfeiffer -
G440
P4
92123
3 1175 00280 0624



Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google